



CHAOTIC SWORD GOD

BOOK 15

Xin Xing Xiao Yao

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Chaotic Sword God

(混沌剑神)

by

Xin Xing Xiao Yao

(心星逍遥)

Synopsis

Jian Chen, the publicly recognized number one expert of the Jianghu. His skill with the sword went beyond perfection and was undefeatable in battle, After a battle with the exceptional expert Dugu Qiubai who had gone missing over a hundred years ago, Jian Chen succumbed to his injuries and died.

After death, Jian Chen's spirit was transmigrated into a completely foreign world. Following an extremely fast growth, his enemies piled up one after another before becoming gravely injured once more. On the gates of death, his spirit had mutated, and from that moment henceforth, he would tread on a completely different path of the art of the sword to become the sword god of his generation.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Pipipingu @ [Gravity Tales](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1401: Another Saint Emperor

Jian Chen left by himself after bidding farewell to Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao. He shot through the sky as a stream of light on the Zi Ying Sword.

Jian Chen could not help but think through the information he had learned from Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao on the way back. He had never thought that there would have been an ancient era even before the ancient times, an era erased from history, an era where many Saint Emperors and Origin realm experts were slain mercilessly. Jian Chen found it rather chilling.

And that seal in outer space, which prevented all Saint Emperors from reaching the Origin realm, was surrounded in mysteries as well. He did not know who the mysterious expert was. Could it be like what he had guessed, that the mysteries expert was protector Shui of the arctic Ice Goddess Hall? If that was the case, why did she place the seal there?

Was it because she was seeking refuge? Or was she guarding some great treasure? Or were there any other intentions?

And why were the Winged Tiger God from the ancient times and the sea goddess able to ignore the seal and reach the Origin realm? Were they really natural spirits like Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao had guessed?

If that really was the case, then no one could have reached the Origin realm from their own efforts since ancient times, aside from the war god Aergyns.

"I agreed with my sister before that I'd visit her a year later in the Ice Goddess Hall. It's already been a year, but I still haven't followed up on my end of the promise. I'll go pay a visit as soon as I deal with the urgent matters at hand. Let's see if I can discover anything, and senior Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu are still trapped in the north. I must find some way to free them this time I

go,” Jian Chen thought to himself. The three of them had been trapped in the Ice Goddess Hall because of him. If he did not free them, he would end up riddled with guilt, unable to forgive himself.

Jian Chen did not return to Flame City and, instead, went to the Changyang clan in Lore City.

Jian Chen’s name had spread across the continent ever since the battle against the World of Forsaken Saints. All the experts claimed him to be the reincarnation of Mo Tianyun. He had taken up the position as the greatest human expert in some sense. His return immediately threw Lore City into a mess. Virtually all the people in the city surged in the direction of the Changyang clan. Countless people wanted to catch a glimpse of the greatest human expert’s glory.

Just how great was the status as the greatest human expert? Even Saint Kings did not have the right to see him on ordinary days, so to the people of Lore City who dwelled on the lowest levels of the Tian Yuan Continent, he was like a god. Many people were willing to die an early death just to catch a glimpse of him.

The city lord of Lore City immediately reacted. He mobilized all the guards and troops in the city to ensure peace, labeling the area ten kilometers around the Changyang clan as a forbidden zone. At the same time, all the guards of the clan were mobilized, forming a second wall around the clan.

At the same time, this matter reached the ears of the king very soon. The king immediately put down all the matters at hand and quickly flew out of the imperial palace with the assistance of a Heaven Saint Master.

Besides him, all the monarchs in the neighboring kingdoms had given up their luxurious carriages and directly requested their Heaven Saint Masters to carry them through the air with rich gifts. They made their way to Lore City as quickly as they could.

Not only had Jian Chen's arrival at the Changyang clan alert everyone in the surroundings, but it had also thrown the Changyang clan into a mess as well. All the Zu branch Saint Rulers who stayed in the back courtyards of the clan lowered their statuses and came to welcome him. Their leaders, to no surprise, were Changyang Zu Xiao, Changyang Zu Yunxiao, and Changyang Zu Yeyun.

The patriarch of the clan, Changyang Ba, immediately ordered people to prepare a large banquet. He invited his good friends as the whole clan began to celebrate. At the same time, he designated the day as a yearly celebration for the clan.

After that, when the king of the Gesun Kingdom arrived, he immediately passed on orders to designate the day as a national holiday as well.

This day was the first time the young master of the Changyang clan had returned home after becoming the greatest human expert. This day held significant importance for both the kingdom and the clan.

Jian Chen did not appear a lot during the celebrations. He left his parents and uncle Chang to handle everything. He secretly passed on messages to search for Huang Tianba, Yang Ling, and so on, requesting them to return to the Changyang clan immediately. At the same time, he got others to contact Jiede Tai, who had already returned to his own clan, and the Imperial Protectors of the Qinhuang Kingdom.

The celebrations of the clan lasted for seven whole days. Within that period of time, the people who had come to visit included quite a few Saint Rulers, Saint Kings, and even the grand elder of Mercenary City had come. The entire kingdom had celebrated.

This was the first time in history that the Gesun Kingdom had ever had such a lively and grand celebration.

Seven days later, all the guests left one by one. Huang Tianba,

Yang Ling, and Jiede Tai had all arrived in the Changyang clan while the four Imperial Protectors of the Qinhuang Kingdom had hurried over from Flame City as soon as they received the news. They had been waiting in the Changyang clan for quite some time now.

The next day, Jian Chen, Changyang Ba, uncle Chang, the king, Huang Tianba, Yang Ling, Jiede Tai, the four Imperial Protectors from the Qinghuang Kingdom, and every single person of the Zu branch left the city and arrived in a nearby forest.

The disaster of the continent was still not over yet. The threat of the World of Forsaken Saints still lingered, and next time, they would certainly send far more than just five hundred Saint Emperors once the tunnel stabilized. There would definitely be Origin realm experts present as well.

As a result, Jian Chen needed to use the resources he had during this upcoming period of time to raise the overall power of the Tian Yuan Continent. He needed to prepare for the next time the foreign world invaded.

He had obtained a large amount of heavenly resources from the Xuanhuang Microcosm, but there was not enough to be considered an endless amount. He needed to raise the strength of the people around him first, even if he had to waste a little before considering other people.

Although the people around him would not all take part in the battle against the foreign world, the next battle would definitely be even more intense. Without enough strength, just the shockwaves from the fight would be enough to claim their lives.

As a result, Jian Chen was not expecting them to make any major contributions to the upcoming battle by raising their strength right now. He only hoped for them to survive.

Everyone sat on the floor within the forest. Jian Chen used the highest grade Comprehension Tea and Violet Cloud Peaches he had

on him to raise their strength. The people present were either his family, friends, or someone who had helped him in the past. As a result, he did not hold back at all, sharing the best he had with them.

Among them, the king of the Gesun Kingdom was the weakest. He was only an Earth Saint Master, but the Violet Cloud Peaches did not have any restrictions. Even ordinary people could consume them.

Two days later, the rainbow clouds descended. Huang Tianba and Yang Ling broke through first. One was a peak Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler and the other was a peak Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master, so they were extremely close to the next realm of cultivation. As a result, they both broke through to Saint King and Saint Ruler after consuming the immortal peaches and the tea.

On the third day, an extremely tremendous pressure suddenly appeared. It caused the surrounding space to tremble and almost collapse while the energy of the world began to churn. In the sky, a layer of nine-colored clouds quickly appeared. They glowed with an extremely bright light as they enveloped the entire continent.

Changyang Zu Xiao had broken through the barrier of Saint King and had become a Saint Emperor.

Although the origin energy in the current world had vanished and the laws of the world were a mess due to the Yinyang Saint Rock, it did not mean that reaching Saint Emperor was impossible, just extremely difficult. Changyang Zu Xiao was already a Saint King at Great Perfection and only required a single step to reach Saint Emperor. The fifth grade peaches and tea just happened to provide him with enough to overcome these two problems, allowing him to breakthrough successfully in just three short days.



Chapter 1402: Founding Ancestor of the Pure Heart Pavilion (One)

Someone else had become a Saint Emperor on the Tian Yuan Continent after Tian Jian and Houston, which immediately caused a great disturbance. Many Saint Kings were attracted over once again, despite the long distance.

Soon, several dozen human Saint Kings had gathered. All of them hovered high in the sky as they watched from afar. Eventually even some Saint Kings from the Sea race, the magical beasts, and the Hundred Races had come.

“What a dense gathering of energy. This pure energy of the world is extremely similar to the phenomenon that occurred near Flame City a few days ago. If I’ve guessed correctly, sovereign Jian Chen should be here,” a human expert sighed in surprise.

“This place may be obscured by the mist-like energy of the world, but what’s happening inside still can’t escape my senses. I can clearly feel that there’s more than one person cultivating in there. Other than the one who has just become a Saint Emperor, there’s many other presences,” said a blue-robed old man. He was a member of the Sea race. He was enveloped by a faint layer of blue light, blocking out the sunlight.

“How is it sovereign Jian Chen again? Just how does sovereign Jian Chen get them to break through so easily. Does he have some heaven-defying treasure?” A magical beast said with some obvious envy. His cultivation to Saint King could be described as arduous, yet now, any person who had ties with Jian Chen could skip several thousand years worth of cultivation in just a few days. A few people felt envious because of this.

However, even if he had guessed that Jian Chen really did possess some great treasure, he would never fancy any ill thoughts. Jian Chen was now a supreme expert. He was an existence that could

look down on all of them. He was no longer the Saint King from before.

“The people who follow Jian Chen sure are blessed,” a lot of people thought. Jian Chen had allowed people to become Saint Kings and Saint Emperors time and time again. It left them green with envy and made them wish that they were in the mist instead.

Several days later, the forest calmed down. Not only had Changyang Zu Xiao become a Saint Emperor, but Changyang Zu Yunxiao had successfully broken through as well. Among the three Saint Kings of the Zu branch, only Changyang Zu Yeyun remained a Saint King, but she had gone from the First Heavenly Layer to Great Perfection. She was close to becoming a Saint Emperor as well.

Besides her, Huang Tianba also reached the Great Perfection of Saint King, attaining a similar level to Changyang Zu Yeyun. Huang Tianba was ravished with joy. His excitement had already peaked.

Yang Ling, the guard with ordinary talent who had once protected Jian Chen in the City of God, had benefited greatly as well. Not only had his aptitude for cultivation increased, but he had finally smashed through the bottleneck he had been stuck at for many years, reaching his dream level of cultivation, Saint Ruler. He did not stop there either. His strength skyrocketed with the help of the peach and tea, making another major breakthrough in the end. He reached Saint King and stopped at the Second Heavenly Layer.

The four Imperial Protectors of the Qinhuang Kingdom had all become Saint Kings as well, ranging from the Fifth Heavenly Layer to the Eighth Heavenly Layer.

“I thank sovereign Jian Chen for your gift. Our wish of many years has finally become true, and we’ve all reached an unimaginable level of cultivation,” the four Imperial Protectors

gratefully bowed to Jian Chen.

Their breakthroughs were significant to the Qinghuang Kingdom. After the battle against the World of Forsaken Saints, the strength of the three great empires had fallen. They had lost their strongest experts. The Qinghuang Kingdom had originally belonged to the Holy Empire as subsidiaries, but with their breakthroughs, the Qinghuang Kingdom had suddenly become the strongest kingdom on the continent.

Although the kingdom's heritage and overall power was nowhere close to the three empires that had existed for countless years, they were unable to match up to the Qinghuang Kingdom in terms of Saint Kings.

Changyang Ba, uncle Chang, and the Saint Rulers from the Zu branch all became Saint Kings as well. Only the king of the Gesun Kingdom fell behind. He had reached the Ninth Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler in the end. All the Saint Rulers of the Zu branch broke into tears. They thanked Jian Chen with runny noses. They were tempted to kneel down in gratitude.

The disturbance from this group breakthrough was not as great as the one in Flame City, but it still gave birth to two Saint Emperors and almost twenty Saint Kings. It made all the Saint Kings who had come to watch green with envy.

A portion of the people had even become hot-headed inside. They wanted to kneel down before Jian Chen and plead, begging him for a chance to become greater.

They were all Saint Kings and had been stuck like that for many years now. Becoming a Saint Emperor possessed a fatal attraction to them.

There were plenty of them who had reached the later stages of their lives. They did not have much time left. The only way for them to continue living was to become a Saint Emperor.

Suddenly, Jian Chen's eyes narrowed. He turned his head to one direction. The space there distorted and a golden giant appeared out of nowhere.

To no surprise, that giant was Tie Ta. Tie Ta did not use a Space Gate and had instead arrived using one of his innate secret techniques. He had suddenly appeared before Jian Chen by crossing a vast distance, like he had teleported.

“The war god of the Hundred Races!”

Tie Ta's arrival immediately caused the experts in the surroundings to cry out. Their eyes were filled with fear and dread, with the magical beasts affected the most. They responded even more violently.

Jian Chen discovered quite a difference in Tie Ta this time. It was a change in presence. If Tie Ta had been a country bumpkin before, the current Tie Ta was like a ruler. He possessed a certain prestige.

“Jian Chen, can you give me some? I want to help out the Hundred Races as well,” Tie Ta asked rather awkwardly.

Jian Chen obviously knew what Tie Ta wanted. He chuckled, “Tie Ta, I had planned on delivering some to you a few days later; I didn't think you'd come personally.” Jian Chen took out a Space Ring and tossed it to Tie Ta without any hesitation. The Space Ring was filled with over a hundred Violet Cloud Peaches, ten pieces of fifth grade Comprehension Tea Leaves, and several dozen pieces of first grade Comprehension Tea Leaves. There was even a lot of divine water of the world and water from the Springs of Life for making tea. It possessed everything he needed.

Of course, not all the Violet Cloud Peaches in there were of the fifth grade. Jian Chen had only found three fifth grade Violet Immortal Peach trees in the Xuanhuang Microcosm in total. The others were all of lower grades.

He had used up over a hundred fifth grade Violet Cloud Peaches within the past few days, almost half of everything he had. As a result, only a tenth of all the peaches he had given Tie Ta were of the fifth grade. The rest were either of the third or fourth grades.

Jian Chen had obtained even fewer pieces of Comprehension Tea Leaves. When he had made tea to increase the strength of this group, he had only used four or five pieces together.

Tie Ta took the Space Ring. He knew how to prepare the items inside, so he did not ask any questions.

Before he left, Tie Ta said to Jian Chen, "I've gone to the War God Hall. It's a very special place and will be extremely beneficial for me. I cultivate several times faster than usual in there and it can help me comprehend the Mysteries of War. Jian Chen, the magical beasts have a Beast God Hall as well. I wonder if it has the same effects as the War God Hall, but according to what I know, it's not a simple divine hall. You should take Xiao Bai there when you have the time."

"I will," Jian Chen responded. He had heard that the ninety-ninth floor of the Beast God Hall possessed the legacy of the previous Winged Tiger God and only those with the same bloodline could enter it. All he could do back then was sigh in wonder since he had lacked the ability to go there.

In the miniature world of the Pure Heart Pavilion, a tall altar stood in the forbidden grounds. A snow-white duster silently lay on the altar. It gave off a tremendous presence.

This was the ancestral weapon of the Pure Heart Pavilion. It had always been stored there, yet today, the duster suddenly began to emit a hazy white light despite not making any abnormal movements over the past million years. The next moment, the light suddenly became extremely intense, illuminating the surroundings. A terrifying ripple of energy shot from it, causing the surrounding space and the miniature world to tremble.

Swish! Afterward, the jade-white duster shot off, disappearing into the miniature world.

The pavilion master, who was currently tending to her wounds, suddenly changed in expression within a secret room. She immediately charged out and chased after the duster with lightning-like speed. Behind her, two more Saint Kings surged over from different directions, pursuing the duster with the pavilion master.

Changyang Hu was wearing simple robes when he emerged from the divine hall of the Pure Heart Pavilion. He stared in the direction the duster had disappeared off to. The sun, moon and stars seemed to rotate in his eyes.

“I think I see glory. I think I see celebration, an prosperous era!” Changyang Hu mumbled a while later.

Chapter 1403: Founding Ancestor of the Pure Heart Pavilion (Two)

Seven-colored rainbow clouds loomed over an ancient forest on the Tian Yuan Continent. They illuminated the surroundings with seven colors, spanning a million kilometers.

The clouds represented someone breaking through from Saint Ruler to Saint King and were sensed by many people. It definitely would have been an extremely great matter for someone to become a Saint King in the past and would have attracted many experts on the continent to watch. However, after nine-colored rainbow clouds had appeared time and time again and had enveloped the entire continent, various experts and even some ordinary people had grown used to the clouds. They had become a common occurrence. As a result, the appearance of the clouds did not attract too much attention.

This was because this single layer of rainbow clouds seemed just far too insignificant compared to the several dozen layers of rainbow clouds or even the nine-colored rainbow clouds that had appeared.

A person currently sat within a cave deep within a forest. Energy pulsed around him, causing the cave to tremble and quite a few rocks to come loose.

He was the person undergoing the breakthrough. He had just overcome the bottleneck at the Ninth Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler and successfully became a Saint King.

However, before the surroundings could stabilize right after he had broken through, a streak of light shot over from the distance at an unbelievable speed. It stopped above the cave in the end and let out a dazzling but gentle white light. Terrifying pulses of energy emanated from it, filling the entire forest and causing the space there to tremble.

At that moment, the forest, which was constantly filled with the roars of beasts, fell silent. Everything descended into a deathly silence.

Only now was the item that had been obscured by white light visible. It was actually a jade-white duster.

The duster was not actually made from white jade. It only seemed like it was.

The jade-white duster hung in the air while its gentle white light filled the surroundings. The world seemed to have become much brighter. After arriving, a powerful energy surged out of the duster and headed down toward the ground.

The young man, who only seemed to be in his thirties, remained seated beneath the duster before slowly floating into the air. He was the person who had just broken through.

What was unbelievable was that the young man's cave was clearly constructed from rock. A thick stone slab isolated him from the sun, yet he seemed like he had fused with the surrounding rock right now. Not only had he left no mark on the rocks, but he seemed to have fused with them, moving freely through them.

The young man floated beneath the jade-white duster. Suddenly, the duster erupted with an extremely powerful energy, which surrounded the young man, though it brought him no harm.

From afar, the young man seemed to be encased in a huge cocoon.

Soon, a Space Gate ripped open several dozen kilometers away. The pavilion master of the Pure Heart Pavilion emerged there along with the other Saint Kings. They had reached that location after tailing the Emperor Armament.

However, when they all saw their ancestral weapon, they all became stunned.

“Pavilion master, what is happening?” One of the Saint Kings

asked in shock.

The pavilion master shook her head. Her eyes were fixated on the jade-white duster. None of them could answer that question. Their ancient archives didn't possessed any record of the Emperor Armament breaking free from their control.

The three of them did not act recklessly. Instead, they waited silently in the distance, because an invisible force from the jade-white duster was currently preventing them from advancing any further.

The jade-white duster used its own energy to lock up an entire region of space and even Saint Emperors would find it difficult to break.

The wait lasted several days, and only after those several days did the energy from the duster slowly disperse. The young man guarded by the jade-white duster slowly opened his eyes as well. At that moment, the world seemed to darken slightly.

The pavilion master and two other Saint Kings felt dumbfounded. Shock filled their faces. They felt like they had seen a vast universe in the eyes of the young man. They could not help but be absorbed by it, almost losing themselves.

The three of them immediately felt astounded. The person before them had just reached Saint King. He was not as powerful as them, but his eyes made them feel like he was much stronger than them. This filled them with disbelief.

At the same time up north, on the same mountain as before, Guihai Yidao and Yang Lie were staring deep into the sea. However, at that moment, their faces changed, and they suddenly turned in the direction of the duster. An odd light filled their eyes, and in a single movement, the two of them vanished.

The pavilion master appeared otherworldly and divine as always. She clasped her hands gracefully and smiled, "From today on, the

Tian Yuan Continent has gained another Saint King. This is a joyous occasion. May I ask what your name is?”

The young man said nothing. He did not even glance at the three people from the Pure Heart Pavilion and instead grabbed the jade-white duster in the air in a single motion. He rubbed it gently in his hands as reminiscence filled his eyes.

The jade-white duster was extremely gentle. Despite the unbelievably powerful energy hidden within it, it seemed just like a little lamb right now.

The eyes of the three Saint Kings almost popped out of their heads. The jade-white duster had always been enshrined in the forbidden grounds of the Pure Heart Pavilion. People visited it frequently. It was basically a consecrated object of the sect. It was extremely powerful, yet it was currently being wielded by him. The three of them found this difficult to accept.

At the same time, the jade-white duster possessed endless might. On any random day, even if they just wanted to use it a little, they needed supreme strength combined with secret techniques to wield it. Yet, the weapon was easily wielded by someone who was not even part of the Pure Heart Pavilion in such an easier manner. Moreover, he wasn't suffering from a backlash either. This shocked them greatly.

“The Wolf King of Greed, Feng Yixiao, was once my name, but from now on, he does not exist on the Tian Yuan Continent. There is only Feng Xiaotian!” The young man suddenly replied. He spoke very gently, but his voice seemed to be filled with an endless charm.

“Sir Feng Xiaotian, please return the ancestral weapon of our Pure Heart Pavilion,” the pavilion master calmly requested. She could not stand how the consecrated item of her sect was being tarnished by an outsider's hands. After all, it was their ancestral weapon that they had kept enshrined for many years.

Feng Xiaotian straightened his back while his entire presence suddenly changed. It had become divine. At that moment, he became dignified and awe-inspiring, as if he had transcended the world and stood above all life.

“I am your founding ancestor.” Feng Xiaotian sternly responded. His voice was filled with an undeniable prestige.

“Sir, that’s not a joke you can make,” a Saint King replied with a heavy voice. He seemed slightly angered that someone would claim that.

At this moment, a Space Gate suddenly ripped open. Guihai Yidao and Yang Lie arrived together. When they saw Feng Xiaotian, they both broke into laughter, “Feng Xiaotian, I never thought that you’d awaken after the two of us. So much for being a disciple of a large sect!”

A strange light appeared in Feng Xiaotian’s eyes. He said, “The two of you have really surpassed my expectations for the two of you t awaken before me.”

Chapter 1404: Meeting Qing Xiao Again

Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao did not purposefully conceal their presences, so the three Saint Kings from the Pure Heart Pavilion could sense them clearly, which immediately took them by surprise. To their senses, Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao's presences were as vast as the sea. They were boundless, making them impossible to fathom. The path lord of carnal desires and the three Saint Emperors of the Beast God Continent could not make them feel this way.

“Saint Emperors!”

Similar thoughts crossed the heads of the three Saint Kings from the Pure Heart Pavilion. Not only had they determined that Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao were Saint Emperors, but they had also noticed that they were even more powerful than the three Saint Emperors of the Beast God Continent and the path lord of carnal desires. However, the Saint Kings soon became filled with suspicion, because the birth of a Saint Emperor on the Tian Yuan Continent was accompanied by nine-colored rainbow clouds. Even experts far from the continent would still be able to sense them.

However, they knew all of the Saint Emperors that had recently appeared on the Tian Yuan Continent. They knew every expert that had broken through. The three of them were completely clueless as to when Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao had become Saint Emperors. They were just far too abnormal.

The pavilion master looked at Yang Lie. She had seen Changyang Zu Yunkong in the past before and actually discovered that this person and Changyang Zu Yunkong looked exactly the same. The only difference was the presence they radiated, which made them seem like two different people.

“Feng Xiaotian, the seal still exists. You come from a large clan, so the abilities you know are far greater than anything we can

fathom. Do you have any ideas on how to deal with it?” Guihai Yidao asked.

Feng Xiaotian immediately became stern. He looked into the depths of outer space and helplessly shook his head.

“Even you are helpless against it. Looks like we can only place our hopes on my great-grandson,” Yang Lie gently sighed.

“Great-grandson?” Feng Xiaotian was surprised. He looked at Yang Lie, confused.

Yang Lie’s face became filled with obvious pride as soon as he mentioned his great-grandson. He said, “Feng Xiaotian, you probably don’t know that I have a descendent with extremely impressive talent. Even in the Saints’ World, his talent would rank at the very top. In less than a hundred years, he has cultivated to a level of strength no weaker than the Origin realm.”

“I have to say that Jian Chen’s talent really is extremely terrifying. He walks a path that is different than the hard-beaten trail, yet he still demonstrates such speeds and he doesn’t seem to need origin energy to reach the Origin realm, so he won’t be restricted by this formation. Jian Chen might really be our only hope right now,” Guihai Yidao praised as well. He felt admiration from the bottom of his heart toward Jian Chen.

An odd expression appeared on Feng Xiaotian’s face, “Jian Chen? The captain of the Flame Mercenaries?”

“Correct. My great-grandson is indeed the captain of the Flame Mercenaries. Feng Xiaotian, I never thought that my great-grandson would be so well-known that even you would have heard of him,” chuckled Yang Lie.

Feng Xiaotian’s expression immediately became odd. He bitterly smiled, “Heard of? I’ve even seen him in person.”

“What! What’s this all about?” Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao were overcome with surprise.

“I have once met your great-grandson outside of Flame City. If it were not for the fact that someone begged for mercy, this life would have been taken by your great-grandson,” Feng Xiaotian forced a smile.

Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao were surprised by his words. They looked at one another and shock filled their eyes. They never would have thought that Feng Xiaotian had actually come into conflict with Jian Chen in the past.

However, Feng Xiaotian’s eyes suddenly narrowed before the two of them could say anything else. He said, “Speaking of which, that Changyang Hu seems to have entered the realm of Great Liberation.” Feng Xiaotian arrived before the three Saint Kings of the Pure Heart Pavilion and urgently asked, “You should know about the realm of Great Liberation. Have you accepted Changyang Hu as a disciple of the Pure Heart Pavilion?” Feng Xiaotian’s voice was filled with a sense of urgency. He cared about this matter very much.

Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao both became stunned when they saw how desperate Feng Xiaotian behaved. They had already spent quite some time with Feng Xiaotian in the past. Their impression of him was that he was always at ease and incorruptible. He had severed his desires and emotions, having transcended mortal affairs. He had never behaved so desperately and urgently before.

“Changyang Hu has already been accepted into the sect. He’s currently cultivating there,” replied the pavilion master. The three Saint Kings had already become rather uncertain of Feng Xiaotian’s identity. It was just far too shocking for him to be their founding ancestor, but there was no possible way to explain how Feng Xiaotian was able to wield their Emperor Armament so easily.

More importantly, the three of them could sense a unique presence that would only appear on a disciple of the Pure Heart Pavilion radiating from him.

“Hahahahaha. Good! Very good! Fantastic!” Feng Xiaotian laughed aloud. He said to Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao, “I must immediately return to the Pure Heart Pavilion, so let’s catch up some other time!” With that, Feng Xiaotian ripped open space with his duster and left.

Feng Xiaotian silently appeared in the miniature world of the Pure Heart Pavilion. He did not catch anyone’s attention with his arrival. He was the one who had originally carved out this miniature world, so no one was more familiar with it than him.

Currently, Changyang Hu sat on a gray rock with his eyes closed. He seemed to have fused with the world and seemed to be resonating with the universe. A mysterious energy seemed to call to him from afar.

Feng Xiaotian appeared silently before Changyang Hu, but as soon as he had arrived, Changyang Hu slowly opened his eyes and stared calmly at Feng Xiaotian, as if he had sensed his arrival.

“As I expected. My strength far exceeds yours, but I still can’t hide from your senses if I come in close contact with you.” Feng Xiaotian stared at Changyang Hu with shining eyes, as if he was examining some rare treasure.

Before he had awakened his memories, he did not understand the path of cultivation Changyang Hu had embarked on. He had even tried to persuade Changyang Hu to turn back out of good intentions. However, it was different now. He had awakened his memories and knew a lot more. He understood extremely well what comprehending the realm of Great Liberation meant.

“So it’s senior Feng Yixiao. I may have vaguely sensed, within the past few days, that someone I once knew would come looking for me. I didn’t think it would be you,” Changyang Hu recognized Feng Yixiao in a single glance and became a little surprised.

“What! You sensed that I would come looking for you beforehand?” Feng Xiaotian felt like he had been struck by a bolt

from the blue when he heard what Changyang Hu had said. Just how powerful was Changyang Hu? Just how powerful was he? Changyang Hu could actually sense that he would come looking for him. This was just unbelievable.

...

The Zhuya Kingdom was originally a kingdom only slightly more powerful than the Gesun Kingdom. They were over a hundred thousand kilometers away, but in the recent years, their status had skyrocketed. They had become a medium-sized kingdom only second to the eight great kingdoms.

This was all because one of their Imperial Protectors had broken through to Saint Ruler.

The Zhuya Kingdom had five powerful clans besides that. All these clans possessed Heaven Saint Masters while the strongest was the Tianqin clan. A fifth Heaven Saint Master had even appeared in their clan, making them the most powerful organization aside from the royal family.

The overall power of the Zhuya Kingdom was elevated to a whole new level with the support of so many Heaven Saint Masters and a Saint Ruler.

Not only was Walaurent City one of the largest cities within the Zhuya Kingdom, it was also the origins of the most powerful clan in the kingdom, the Tianqin clan.

Chapter 1405: Returning to the Qinhuang Kingdom

The Tianqin clan reigned supreme within Walaurent City. Without any exaggeration, the entire city was under their control and countless people were honored to become servants of the clan.

On any other day, the Tianqin clan would appear like a slumbering primordial beast, quiet but filled with dignity. However, the Tianqin clan was filled with joy today. Even several kilometers away, the cheers and noise from the clan was still audible.

The reason was because the clan had received an extremely impressive guest. The arrival of the guest had even made many of the senior members of the clan weak in the knees, causing them to tremble. The clan used everything they had to receive him, treating him courteously and in reverence.

To no surprise, the guest was Jian Chen. He had come to the Tianqin clan to meet Qin Xiao.

All the senior members of the clan were startled by Jian Chen's personal arrival. Although Jian Chen had come to their clans more than once in the past, his status now was incomparable to his past status, so his arrival was just like a dream to all the people in the clan. They were all ravished with joy.

When Jian Chen met Qin Xiao again, Qin Xiao had become a much more steady-minded person and more mature. He had already been married and was a father. His wife was a princess of the Zhuya Kingdom and had given birth to a son half a year ago.

Jian Chen could not help but sigh and become filled with mixed emotions when he saw the couple carrying their infant son, because he thought of his own child, Shangguan Aojian.

Jian Chen and Qin Xiao conversed in a pavilion within a garden.

Although it had only been a few short years since they had last seen each other, a lot had happened since then. The two of them behaved like brothers who had just been reunited after being separated for several years, so they had an endless amount of things to discuss. They kept talking even after several hours.

“Jian Chen, back when I first met you, our strength was similar, yet now, you’ve already become a sovereign of the continent. I’ve even heard the rumor that you are Mo Tianyun from the ancient times. I really feel joy for you and I feel honored to have a friend like you...”

“Jian Chen, I know you’ve suffered greatly in the past. Many enemies hunted you down, and while I really did want to help you, I could not. I was useless. My strength was not even a ten-thousandth of yours. The other reason was that your enemies only became stronger and stronger. My father worried that I would end up causing a disaster that would end the clan, so he even put me under house arrest in the past. I could not even leave even if I wanted to...”

Qin Xiao’s voice was filled with self-blame and guilt. Back then, he had entered the gathering of mercenaries with Jian Chen at Mercenary City. Jian Chen had saved him from danger time and time again, constantly pulling him back from the jaws of death. However, he was unable to do anything when Jian Chen experienced danger himself. He had been locked at home waiting for any news of Jian Chen.

Jian Chen patted Qin Xiao’s shoulder to comfort him. He had never taken these matters to heart. The enemies he had offended were either hermit clans, ancient clans, or the ten protector clans of the continent. Any single one of them could annihilate the Tianqin clan with a flick of their finger. What Qin Xiao’s father, the patriarch of the clan, had done was correct, stopping Qin Xiao from taking part in these matters. Otherwise, once his enemies came looking from the Tianqin clan, the clan’s name would

probably no longer be present in this city.

After all, even Flame City had changed owners in the past, having been taken over by the Extinguishing Alliance for some time. If it were not for the fact that the Saint Kings of the protector Changyang clan had appeared in the end and taken away the people most important to Jian Chen, the outcome would have been unfathomable.

Jian Chen took the infant from Qin Xiao's wife. The infant was white and chubby, making him seem extremely adorable. He lay in Jian Chen's hands and stared at Jian Chen with his large, bright eyes.

Jian Chen touched the child's face before pulling out a fist-sized amount of divine water of the world from his Space Ring. He fed it to the child to purify his body.

The effects of the divine water were extremely powerful. Not only could the water alter the physique of people and allow cripples to become cultivation geniuses, but it was also extremely beneficial to the soul as well.

As Qin Xiao's child was being fed the divine water, his physique was being purified. His talent would be extremely impressive once he grew up, and he would become a dazzling star on the continent.

After returning the child back to Qin Xiao's wife, he flew out of the clan with Qin Xiao.

Soon after Jian Chen left, the news that the greatest expert of the continent had visited the Tianqin clan spread across the entire kingdom. The news continued further on, beyond the boundaries of the kingdom, without slowing down at all, shocking countless people and catching the attention of many more.

Unknowingly, Jian Chen's visit to the Tianqin clan had greatly increased their status. Even the imperial family of the Zhuya Kingdom began to curry favor from the clan.

Several days later, seven-colored rainbow clouds suddenly descended, enveloping a surrounding radius of a million kilometers, making many Saint Rulers envious. However, these rainbow clouds had appeared just far too frequently recently, so it was now a common sight. As a result, very few people went to check out who had become a Saint King, but most people were not as curious as they had been in the past.

Deep within a mountain range several tens of thousand kilometers away, Qin Xiao stood on a cliff as a tremendous presence permeated his surroundings. He seemed rather dazed but also excited.

He really found it difficult to believe that Jian Chen had actually helped him become a Saint King in just a few short days, allowing him to stand at the very apex of the continent.

Qin Xiao knew what it meant to the Tianqin clan now that he had become a Saint King.

The Tianqin clan had already become the leading clan of the five most powerful clans in the Zhuya Kingdom, but they only had five Heaven Saint Masters in total. They did not even have a Saint Ruler, but now, they had gained a Saint King.

After successfully helping Qin Xiao become Saint King, Jian Chen did not return to the Tianqin clan. He said a few things to Qin Xiao before leaving the mountains.

His next stop was the Qinhuang Kingdom, one of the eight great kingdoms on the continent. Jian Chen always grateful for the help the kingdom had provided. If he had not become an Imperial Protector of the kingdom, which allowed him to lead the elite troops through a Space Gate to save the Gesun Kingdom, the Gesun Kingdom probably would have been wiped out by the alliance of the four kingdoms long ago. He would not have known if the Changyang clan would have still existed.

Although the four Imperial Protectors of the kingdom had made

an exception for Jian Chen and had allowed him to become the fifth Imperial Protector because of his talent in attempt to pull him to their side, Jian Chen was still unable to forget the assistance the kingdom had provided. He had already helped all the Imperial Protectors of the kingdom become Saint Kings and had returned his debt, but Jian Chen still had another important friend in the kingdom, the third prince, Qin Ji.

Aside from Qin Ji, there was also the leaders of the Eastern Deity Swords, Qin Wujian and his two sons, along with Dongyi Junbai, Qing Shaofan, and the other Imperial Advisors that had followed him to the Gesun Kingdom.

Chapter 1406: The Fourth Class 9 Magical Beast

Jian Chen's arrival naturally shocked the imperial palace of the Qinhuang Kingdom. The four Imperial Protectors, who had just returned from the Gesun Kingdom, along with the king and a large number of lords and subjects, came out to welcome him. The welcoming ceremony was extremely grand. Aside from the four Imperial Protectors, everyone else revered him.

Jian Chen, the king, and the four Imperial Protectors greeted each other and asked about each other's well-being. Then Jian Chen approached the main topic, "Your majesty, may I ask if the third prince, Qin Ji, is in the palace?"

Even though Jian Chen was only a junior around the same age as his son, the king responded extremely politely, "Imperial Protector, my third son is currently out hunting. I'll send people to call him back right now."

"There's no need for your majesty to be so polite. We've known each other for quite some time. Back then, didn't I trouble you several times? If it were not for your majesty's assistance, it would not have been possible for me to bring five hundred thousand soldiers from the Qinhuang Kingdom to the Gesun Kingdom through a Space Gate so successfully. Speaking of which, I am indebted to you majesty, and I have never forget my debts." Jian Chen gently smiled.

The king finally relaxed. He knew that the worry he felt earlier was unnecessary. Jian Chen's status was very different than before, but he was still the same person. He was not like those other experts who possessed ridiculous pride and viewed their dignity with the utmost importance.

The king smiled freely. He immediately stopped restraining himself and began conversing with Jian Chen like a good friend.

There were five Qin Heaven Palaces within the imperial palace of the Qinhuang Kingdom. They were the most consecrated places in the kingdom, because they were the residences prepared for their five esteemed Imperial Protectors. It was also where they cultivated in peace.

Jian Chen immediately settled down in his own palace as he waited for Qin Ji to return.

When he had increased the strength of the four Imperial Protectors, he could have told them to bring Qin Ji with them, but that was not what he chose to do because Qin Ji was one of his best friends. He planned to visit the Qinhuang Kingdom personally to see him as well as the Imperial Advisors who had assisted him and the father and sons at the head of the Eastern Deity Swords.

In the afternoon of the same day, Qin Ji received the news of Jian Chen's arrival and hurried back. When he saw Jian Chen, he was filled with wonder. No one could have imagined that this brother, who had fought beside him in the gathering of mercenaries, would reach the very apex of the continent, far exceeding himself.

Qin Ji did not change much despite the many years that had passed since they last met. Other than becoming even more mature and steady-minded, he now possessed a sense of prestige that was cultivated from being a member of the royal family. However, he was in a similar to Qin Xiao now. He had become a father as well, having married the treasured daughter of a powerful clan within the kingdom. His child was already three years old.

After Qin Xiao's return, Xiao Tian, Tian Luo, Qing Shaofan, Dongyi Junbai, and Cao Keqin, the five Imperial Protectors who had gone with Jian Chen to the Gesun Kingdom, all gathered in the Qin Heaven Palace to see Jian Chen. The three generals of the Eastern Deity Swords, Qin Wuming, Qin Wujian, and Qin Wujian had all received Jian Chen's invitation as well and gathered in the palace.

Jian Chen hosted a banquet in his Qin Heaven Palace, receiving these guests with wonderful liquor. They all toasted to each other before downing a glass. Jian Chen discussed everything that had happened in the past with them, without appearing like the strongest human expert at all.

After a period of time at the table with Jian Chen, they all understood Jian Chen's temperament one by one. They had all started off the evening being cautious before gradually letting loose.

"Imperial Protector, I knew even back then that you would become a great person on the continent. In the end, after only these few years, you've become the strongest person on the continent. You have my praise and admiration.

"This Imperial Protector has supreme talent, an unprecedented prodigy. On the Tian Yuan Continent, you're known as the reincarnation of Mo Tianyun. I may not know whether that's true or not, but I do believe that you will surpass Mo Tianyun sooner or later and become the greatest sovereign throughout history."

...

After becoming slightly tipsy, there was nothing this group would not talk about. Jian Chen's guests had forgotten that they were in a Qin Heaven Palace, one of the most dignified and consecrated places in the kingdom. On any other day, they would not even gain the privilege of entering a Qin Heaven Palace as Imperial Advisors.

Unknowingly, the sun had set in the west and night descended, filling the entire world with darkness. Deep into the night, Jian Chen took the group of them out of the imperial palace and found a quiet place to increase their strength.

Several days later, including Qin Ji, they all become Saint Kings. Every single one of them was ravished with joy. Before he left, Jian Chen gave some divine water of the world to Qin Ji as a little gift

for his son.

“This is just unbelievable. Imperial Protector Jian Chen has actually allowed all of us to break through to Saint King in just a few short days...”

“The Imperial Protector really is extraordinary. We’re only subordinates to him, yet he has never forgotten the things we did for him in the past. He gave us such precious heavenly resources without holding back at all...”

The Imperial Advisors, Qin Wuming and so on, all sighed emotionally after Jian Chen left. They stood silently as they gazed in the direction that Jian Chen had left in. They did not leave even after quite a while.

Jian Chen flew toward the ocean on the Zi Ying Sword as a stream of light after his trip to the Qinhuang Kingdom. He had met with Qin Xiao and Qin Ji, and they had both become fathers, which touched Jian Chen’s heart. He thought of Shangguan Aojian who was on the distant Three Saint Island. It had been several years since he had last seen Shangguan Aojian. He was not a good father, nor did he have any idea how Shangguan Aojian was doing.

At this moment, Jian Chen’s face changed. He immediately stopped the Zi Ying Sword and a golden light shot from the center of his forehead. It was a tiny golden tower.

With a golden flash, the gold-robed, golden-haired Nubis emerged. He remained in a seated position with his eyes closed as he glowed with a golden light. Terrifying pulses of energy surged from him, causing the surrounding space to tremble.

“Nubis has actually broken through!” Jian Chen was overjoyed. A fourth Class 9 Magical Beast was about to appear.

Nubis caused a great disturbance as he broke through to Saint Emperor. His dazzling golden light illuminated the night sky, dying the surroundings golden. Above him, a wave of essence

surged high into the sky, condensing into a golden snake as it broke through the clouds. The phenomenon caused the clouds to violently surge while flickering lights appeared between the clouds.

Chapter 1407: Shangguan Aojian's Transformation (One)

The space trembled violently as terrifying waves of energy, visible to the eye, rolled away. They expanded in all directions with Nubis at the center, shattering the space around him and causing it to alternate between darkness and a golden color.

A terrifying, tremendous pressure filled every inch of the surroundings. The space seemed to be crushed under the pressure, as if it had become even tougher now.

In the sky, the golden snake that had taken form from Nubis' essence moved through the clouds. It absorbed the energy in the surroundings, causing the energy in the region above the ocean to surge toward him.

The snake seemed like a bottomless hole. It devoured the energy of the world endlessly, but at the same time, it became even more dazzling and resplendent, illuminating the surroundings even more.

Jian Chen watched Nubis break through from afar. The disturbance from Nubis' breakthrough was far greater than any other expert's. He understood that his breakthrough this time would be a very important metamorphosis.

Nubis was a beast of antiquity. He could evolve unlike humans. If he devoured the essence of his clansmen, of other Golden-Striped Silver Snakes, his own essence would become even more powerful and pure, even leading to unknown changes in the future. Nubis had only consumed the heavenly resources collected in the Xuanhuang Microcosm for his breakthrough this time. Ignoring their value and scarcity, just the heavenly resources themselves possessed Xuanhuang Qi, something that was filled with wondrous uses.

The Xuanhuang Qi could not be absorbed by anyone, but the heavenly resources that had been soaked in it would become even more powerful and reach an even higher grade. After consuming the heavenly resources, Nubis had clearly benefited, allowing his essence to undergo a metamorphosis.

The glistening essence absorbed a large amount of energy and was finally satisfied. After that, it shot through the sky as a golden streak of light, disappearing into the top of Nubis' head with another flash of light.

Nubis' vital energies immediately underwent an overwhelming change after the return of his essence. His bearing became dignified while he gave off a tremendous pressure unknowingly. Compared to before, he now possessed the faint bearing of a ruler.

Nubis' breakthrough caused a huge disturbance, but it finished much faster than breakthroughs of humans. He had completed the process in a very short amount of time.

The golden light on Nubis gradually vanished and so did the light that illuminated the surroundings. Only a blanket of nine-colored rainbow clouds filled the sky.

Jian Chen arrived before Nubis and said, "Nubis, congratulations on becoming a Saint Emperor, the fourth Class 9 Magical Beast."

Nubis' face was filled with obvious excitement and joy. He felt the seemingly-endless amount of energy within him and could not help but laugh at the sky. He said, "I never thought that there would be a day when I, the great Nubis, would become a Class 9 Magical Beast. It's been over a hundred thousand years since a Class 9 Magical Beast has appeared for the Golden-Striped Silver Snakes. In this period of time, I am the only one who has reached Class 9."

Nubis wildly yelled as he let himself go. Back when he was still a Saint Ruler, his greatest dream had been to become a Class 9 Magical Beast. He had not even considered the 9th Class since the

ancient times were long gone. It was extremely rare for Class 9 Magical Beasts to appear. As a result, Nubis only treated the 8th Class as his target, devoting his life to achieving it. Now, not only had he become a Saint King in an extremely short amount of time with Jian Chen's help, but he had even stepped into the realm of Saint Emperors at an unbelievable speed. He felt like he was in a dream.

“Jian Chen, following you was the greatest decision I have ever made in my life. I believe that if I continue to follow you, I will be able to surpass my seniors without much time passing and reach Class 10,” Nubis chuckled aloud. He was overjoyed.

Jian Chen smiled slightly, “Nubis, don't worry. I believe your wish will become true soon enough. You might even go far beyond that.”

“Hahaha!” Nubis laughed from the bottom of his heart. An odd light flickered through his eyes because he had just remembered about the Beast God Continent. There were also Golden-Striped Silver Snakes there.

The Golden-Striped Silver Snakes were beasts of antiquities and a powerful species but also an extremely brutal one. They did not have many clansmen at all, and using the description of mythical would be apt. As soon as they came across another clansmen, there would definitely be a slaughter. They would try to devour each others hidden essence in order to transform or evolve.

This was the same thought that Nubis currently had.

“Jian Chen, I'll be visiting the Beast God Continent first. I'll be back very soon,” Nubis was rather eager. Back then, he was not strong enough, so the Beast God Continent had always been a forbidden place to him. With his understanding, the old snake on the continent had reached Class 8 long ago, so he was nowhere close to being that old snake's opponent when he was just a Saint Ruler. He always hid in the outskirts of the Cross Mountains on the

Tian Yuan Continent and cultivated in peace, rarely appearing outside at all so he could avoid being found.

However, he had become a Saint Emperor now. That old snake would no longer pose any threat to him. Once he devoured the hidden essence of that old snake, his own essence would become even more powerful.

“I’ll be going to Three Saint Island. Come look for me there once you return,” said Jian Chen.

“Three Saint Island,” an odd gleam of light flashed through his eyes before he agreed straightforwardly. He said, “Alright, I’ll immediately come look for you on Three Saint Island after I deal with that old snake on the Beast God Continent. Hmph, back then, that goddamn island mistress or something like that had scared me into hiding every time I saw her with her soul attacks. Now that I’ve become a Saint Emperor, my soul has become greater. Her zither won’t harm me at all. When the time comes, I’ll show her what’s good and get back my dignity.”

An odd expression immediately filled Jian Chen’s face when he heard that. He chuckled aloud, “I just happen to be planning on spending some days on the island. I’ll be waiting for you there.”

Jian Chen and Nubis separated. One made his way for Three Saint Island while the other headed to the Beast God Continent.

Chapter 1408: Shangguan Aojian's Transformation (Two)

The endless blue ocean was calm at daybreak. The surface of the ocean seemed just like a neat blue blanket where it connected with the sky.

A huge red disc began to slowly rise from the horizon. It radiated with a warm, golden sunlight, dyeing the blue sea a golden hue. The light was resplendent and dazzling.

A small island stood all by itself in the vast, endless sea, far from the Tian Yuan Continent. A few simple fishermen entered and exited the harbor on the island on their fishing boats, which were created from wood and metal. They were making preparations for a day out at sea.

Close to the island stood a three-hundred-meter-tall stone tablet. The tablet seemed to have formed naturally, not even constructed from individual pieces of rock. On the tablet were three majestic words, 'Three Saint Island.'

This was the Three Saint Island where the Heavenly Enchantress stayed. There was a small city on the island, which was completely occupied by the native fishermen of the island. They made a living from fishing when they were not cultivating. Overall, they were not powerful at all. Aside from the saintesses of the mountain, there were no Saint Rulers.

The saintesses that stayed on the mountain possessed an extremely reversed status on the island. They were like gods to the fishermen, consecrated and divine. The people of the island would often bow toward the mountain out of sincerity.

At this moment, a figure silently appeared on the edge of the island. He seemed to have fused with the surrounding space, making it difficult for someone to discover his assistance. The

weaker people would not notice him even if they glanced at him.

The person was not very old. He wore white robes and only seemed to be in his twenties. He was handsome, elegant, and possessed an extraordinary bearing. His face was resolute and stern from having gone through thick and thin. However, the most eye-catching thing about him were the two swords on his back. One of them glowed with a faint violet light while the other glowed with a faint azure light.

The two swords were not in scabbards, nor were they tied to him by any rope or string. They seemed to be stuck to the young man's back, preventing them from falling off.

To no surprise, this person was Jian Chen. He floated high up in the air as he gazed down. He stared at the huge stone tablet for a while. The island had a tablet the first time he had come here, but the one right now was larger than before. Clearly, it had been replaced.

"In just the blink of an eye, I've been away from Xiao Bao for several years already. I wonder how he has cultivated the Chaotic Body," Jian Chen thought. His longing for his son became even more intense after arriving above the island. He concealed his presence as he flew toward the mountain in the distance.

Jian Chen did not use the senses of his soul. He was both excited and in high spirits. He wanted to use his eyes to see his son first.

A ten-meter-tall gray boulder stood silently on the edge of a cliff on the mountain. A boy who seemed only around ten sat on the rock with his eyes closed. He circulated the energy of the world. Beneath the boulder was a cliff face several thousands of meters tall. The boy was more courageous than any ordinary person. He was young, but he sat there steadily, without any fear.

A visible stream of white air surged with his breathing near his mouth and nose. Extremely pure energy of the world condensed around him, entering and exiting his pores with the rhythm of his

breathing.

Every breath the boy took would resonate with the energy of the world in a certain range. All his pores were open as he accepted the purification from the energy, cleansing every impurity within him and leaving behind what he was born with.

A woman in a purple dress stood behind the boy. She carried a zither and her beauty seemed to even overshadow many goddesses. She gave off an otherworldly feeling, making her seem like a fairy from heaven.

She was the Heavenly Enchantress, but her strength had already far exceeded Saint Ruler. She looked at the boy with gentle affection. In reality, she stood near the boy every time he cultivated, fixated on the boy, unless she was not present on the island. She seemed to fear that the boy would come across some danger.

At this moment, the Heavenly Enchantress' face changed. She suddenly turned in a certain direction and the gentleness in her eyes quickly disappeared. It was replaced with coldness, making her seem like an unapproachable glacier.

At the same time, the cultivating boy suddenly opened his eyes as well. His eyes lit up while he stared into the distance with joy. He exclaimed, "Daddy, daddy, daddy's here." The boy was extremely excited, standing up on the rock in a single movement. He stood on the rock as he pointed into the distance, jumping up and down as he cried out. He was overly excited, causing his little face to become flushed.

Jian Chen slowly flew over from afar. He did not move fast at all. He just smiled as he approached the island.

"Daddy, you've finally come back. I've missed you so much. I think of you everyday."

Jian Chen landed on the ground and Xiao Bao leaped off the

boulder. His small body possessed extraordinary agility, and he glided several dozen meters before hitting the ground. He then clung onto Jian Chen's waist.

Xiao Bao had grown quite a bit. He was a meter and a half tall, already taller than Jian Chen's waist.

Jian Chen hugged Xiao Bao. He was so excited that he became speechless. The cold-blooded him also had a soft side.

"Why have you come?" The Heavenly Enchantress kept her eyes on Jian Chen as she impolitely inquired. She did not seem to welcome Jian Chen from her gaze.

Jian Chen looked at the Heavenly Enchantress and warmly smiled, "Xiao Bao's my child too. As his father, of course I came to see him."

Pausing a little, Jian Chen continued, "I know I owe Xiao Bao a lot for all the years I have been gone. I haven't taken up the role of a father. I'm not a responsible one, but I will make up for what I have done as much as I can. Xiao Bao is my second chance at life!"

"Master, have guests come to our island?"

"Which island master or sect master has come to visit? There sure are a lot of people who have come to visit you within the past few days."

At this moment, Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue's voices rang out. They currently made their way over with Qin Qin.

Chapter 1409: Shangguan Aojian's Transformation (Three)

“Ah! Master... Jian Chen is here as well.” The three ladies discovered Jian Chen as soon as they glanced over. They were surprised. However, the gazes they used to look at Jian Chen became mixed. Even calling him by his name sounded rather awkward.

Jian Chen had exposed his relationship with Xiao Bao the last time he had come to the island, allowing the three of them to learn that Xiao Bao was the son of their master.

This took the three of them by shock and disbelief. Even now, they did not know how to refer to Jian Chen.

Did they have to refer to him as master Jian Chen, like in the past, and treat him as any other guest, or did they have to call him master-in-law?

However, the three of them still did not know that Jian Chen was no longer the same person they had once new. He had not changed in appearance or temperament, but his strength had undergone an overwhelming change. He had become the greatest human expert and was known as the second Mo Tianyun by everyone. Some even even called him an incarnation of Mo Tianyun.

“It’s been quite some time. Xiao Qian, Xiao Yue, you look even better than before,” Jian Chen greeted the two of them with a smile before turning his eyes to the young lady of the Tianqin clan, Qin Qin. He said, “Miss Qin Qin, you’ve already left home for close to ten years. Ten years is not a short amount of time to your family. Your family members miss you dearly. If you have the time, you should go back and visit them.” Jian Chen had passed this on for Qin Xiao. When he had caught up with Qin Xiao back in the Tianqin clan a few days ago, he had learned that Qin Xiao had thought about his sister for many years now. Unfortunately, his

low strength had prevented him from traveling very far, so he could only keep that thought on hold.

Even though Qin Xiao had become a Saint King now and had gained the ability to use Space Gates so that he could visit any place on the continent, Jian Chen had forgotten to tell Qin Xiao the location of the island. It would be extremely difficult for a Saint King to search for a tiny island in the vast ocean without knowing its precise location.

The ocean was could be found in all four cardinal directions as well, and it was far vaster than the continent.

The faze Qin Qin was using to look at Jian Chen with became extremely mixed the moment she saw him. Her thoughts were a complete mess. Only when she heard Jian Chen mention her family did she manage to gather some thoughts together. She said with some reminiscence and sorrow, “Master Jian Chen, is my father and everyone else well?”

“They are very well. The Tianqin clan is like the midday sun right now. They have already become the leading clan of the five great clans in the Zhuya Kingdom, only second to the imperial family. And right now, the Tianqin clan’s name has probably already spread across quite a bit of the continent, being ranked as one of the most powerful clans on the continent...” Jian Chen discussed the current situation of the Tianqin clan and told her everything he knew, including how Qin Xiao had become a father. However, he did not mention that Qin Xiao had become a Saint King.

Qin Qin missed her family, but she was clearly preoccupied. She did not pay attention to the news that the Tianqin clan’s name had become renowned across the continent. She fell silent after learning that her family was fine. She glanced past Jian Chen and Xiao Bao in a slight daze and remained quiet.

The Heavenly Enchantress glanced at Qin Qin before saying to

Jian Chen, “You’ve seen Xiao Bao, so it’s time for you to leave.” The Heavenly Enchantress’ voice was cold. She directly told Jian Chen to leave, finding his presence unwelcome.

Jian Chen produced a dry cough. Just when he wanted to say something, Xiao Bao clung onto him tightly and said instead, “No, no, I don’t want daddy to go. Daddy isn’t allowed to go. Mummy, I don’t want daddy to go.”

“Xiao Bao, listen!” The Heavenly Enchantress sternly demanded in a deep voice. However, the gaze she directed at Xiao Bao still bore the presence of affection.

“No, no, I don’t want to. I want daddy. I want daddy to stay with me. Daddy hasn’t come to visit me in a long time. I miss daddy. I want daddy to stay here with me and mummy.” Xiao Bao, who always listened to the Heavenly Enchantress, had actually turned his back on the Heavenly Enchantress without any hesitation at that moment, as if his father, who he had not seen for many years, was much more important than his mother, who stayed by his side and loved him at all this time.

The Heavenly Enchantress’ chest rose and fell slightly, clearly angered. At the same time, she felt helpless inside. Including today, Xiao Bao had only met Jian Chen three times in total ever since he had been born. Each meeting did not last very long either, but Jian Chen seemed to hold an extremely important position in Xiao Bao’s heart. Xiao Bao’s feelings for Jian Chen had not become diluted with time.

“You leave first!” The Heavenly Enchantress waved her hand and dismissed Xiao Qian, Xiao Yue, and Qin Qin.

Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue looked at each other before backing off with Qin Qin. They all left together.

After they departed, Jian Chen carefully examined Xiao Bao. He focused on Xiao Bao’s strength and discovered that his body was extremely tough even though he had not reached the first layer

yet. He had built a solid foundation for cultivating Chaotic Force.

“This time, I will spend a few days on Three Saint Island and specifically guide Xiao Bao with his cultivation. Xiao Bao possesses the Innate Chaotic Body. He cultivates Chaotic Force and walks a cultivation path different from the norm. You do not understand this path, but it just happens to be the one that I’ve taken as well,” Jian Chen explained.

This time, the Heavenly Enchantress did not say anything. She stared at Xiao Bao before drifting away after quite some hesitation. She vanished off to the other side of the mountain.

“Oh, yay! Daddy’s finally spending time with me!” Xiao Bao cheered when he heard that Jian Chen would be staying for some time.

After that, Jian Chen casually carved out a cave in the mountain to serve as a place where the two of them could stay.

The cave was not very big, but it was very wide. Jian Chen placed a large number of luminous pearls in the dim cave. Every single one of them let out a gentle light, making it seem like daytime in the cave.

In the cave, Xiao Bao sat down and began to cultivate under Jian Chen’s guidance. The two swords on Jian Chen’s back shone with a faint glow. The light from the swords vaguely condensed into a young man and woman. They paid close attention to Xiao Bao as he cultivated.

Beside Xiao Bao were a lot of peeled skins and other useless waste that came from heavenly resources.

Although Xiao Bao possessed the rare Innate Chaotic Body, which possessed endless potential and guaranteed a glorious future, there was a heavy price behind such glory. That price was the tremendous requirement of energy for cultivation, which would greatly exceed any person’s imagination. The normal Chaotic Body

was like that and the Innate Chaotic Body did not make an exception.

Because Chaotic Force was just too powerful, the amount of energy of the world on the Tian Yuan Continent required to form a single strand of pure Chaotic Force probably could not even be described as tremendous. As a result, a vast requirement of low-level energy like the energy of the world would be needed to create the Chaotic Body.

The Chaotic Force cultivated by Xiao Bao's Innate Chaotic Body would not be true Chaotic Force either. True Chaotic Force could be divided into Yin and Yang and could create an entire world. It could also destroy a universe and throw laws into chaos. It was powerful and terrifying.

Only this was true Chaotic Force. According to the sword spirits, no one had ever cultivated it successfully.

Even though Xiao Bao possessed the Innate Chaotic Body, the Chaotic Force cultivated by him would be much weaker than true Chaotic Force. It would need to be strengthened and transformed step by step.

Chapter 1410: Shangguan Aojian's Transformation (Four)

Even though that was the case, the Innate Chaotic Body still possessed huge advantages over the normal Chaotic Body. First of all, its growth speed was much quicker.

Secondly, the Chaotic Force used by the Innate Chaotic Body was much purer and more powerful than the normal Chaotic Body. Thus, the Innate Chaotic Body would dominate the normal Chaotic Body if they were on the same level. The Innate Chaotic Body reigned supreme when the levels were the same.

Lastly and more importantly, the future achievements of the Innate Chaotic Body were incomparable to the normal Chaotic Body. Cultivators of the normal Chaotic Body had never reached the ultimate realm of cultivation and probably never would, but that was not necessarily the case for someone with the Innate Chaotic Body.

The Innate Chaotic Body was a perfect, natural creation while the other one was sculpted by external forces. The sculpted body was coarse and flawed with a limited future. It would be extremely difficult to reach a supreme realm of cultivation with it.

Jian Chen sat before Xiao Bao and remained fixated on him. Xiao Bao was currently devouring heavenly resources to forge his Chaotic Body. Although he had always devoured the heavenly resources and monster cores that Jian Chen had left for him to forge his body, he had still not reached completion. After all, the energy needed to be refined into Chaotic Force. Then the Chaotic Force would fuse into his organs and his flesh and blood, allowing his body to strengthen altogether.

After absorbing the Chaotic Force he had refined, Xiao Bao's body began to shine with a hazy glow. His body seemed to have become enchanted, becoming abnormally powerful and almost

immune to weapons.

The cultivation steps of the Innate Chaotic Body was somewhat different than Jian Chen's normal Chaotic Body, but there was one aspect that was completely the same, which was the first step: forging the body.

Several hours later, Xiao Bao roused from his cultivation. He beamed with joy, "Daddy, I can feel that I'm almost done forging my body. It's like it's almost full."

"Keep cultivating. You may possess the Innate Chaotic Body, but you still haven't properly begun cultivating it. Only after forging your body can you cultivate Chaotic Force, and only when you can use Chaotic Force in battle have you truly begun the cultivation process. The sword spirits just happen to be here today, so you can ask them if you come across any problems or difficulties," said Jian Chen. Although he loved Xiao Bao dearly as well, he was extremely strict in regard to his cultivation.

Jian Chen had understood the importance of strength long ago after having experienced slaughter time and time again on the Tian Yuan Continent. It was very difficult to last very long without great strength.

It was impossible for him to be around Xiao Bao at all times. They would end up separating sooner or later, and at that time, all the dangers Xiao Bao would face would have to be resolved and dealt with by his own strength.

Allowing Xiao Bao to do what he wished right now would be equivalent to cutting off his future, cutting him off from his future glory.

Xiao Bao nodded and pulled out around a dozen thousand-year-old or ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resources from his Space Ring. He began cultivating once again after devouring a few of them.

In the blink of an eye, Xiao Bao had already been cultivating in the cave for several days. During those days, he had consumed a large amount of heavenly resources and high class monster cores. Only a small fraction of what Jian Chen had originally given him remained.

On this day, Xiao Bao's Chaotic Body was completely forged. The Chaotic Force he refined was no longer used to strengthen his body and instead slowly moved through his body like streams. It never stopped moving, as if it had become a second type of blood for Xiao Bao.

"With your body as the furnace and your soul as the flame, use the power of the world to start the furnace, and once it is complete, use it to refine the medicine. The medicine remains in the furnace, nourishing the furnace. The furnace refines the medicine, and the medicine keeps the fire blazing. Father, have I properly gained the Chaotic Body now?" As soon as the medicinal effects were absorbed, Xiao Bao opened his eyes and beamed with excitement.

"Keep going, don't stop. Using the medicine to keep the fire blazing is only an important start!" Jian Chen said nothing. It was Zi Ying's stern voice instead. His eyes were filled with excitement. Today, he was about to personally witness an owner of the Innate Chaotic Body properly step upon the path of cultivation and succeed under his guidance.

Xiao Bao immediately dismissed his thoughts. This time, he devoured all the heavenly resources in a single breath while holding two Class 8 Monster Cores in his hands.

Vast energy leaked out after devouring so many heavenly resources. The energy immediately caused Xiao Bao's body to swell and bulge in size. If it had been any other person, they probably would have exploded long ago and died, but Xiao Bao's Chaotic Body was already extremely powerful. It was equivalent to Jian Chen's Chaotic Body at the first layer. With just his body, he could

emerge unscathed from the direct attack of a Third Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. Although the energy in the heavenly resources was powerful, it was not enough to cause Xiao Bao's body to explode.

Xiao Bao began to refine the energy with all his effort, causing his bulging body to gradually recover its original shape. During this period of refinement, Xiao Bao took a total of two days. After that time, the Chaotic Force within him had changed from small streams into a river, which circulated through every part of his body. It did not gather in his dantian, leaving it empty even now.

At the same time, a faint gas would float out and fuse into his soul with every revolution of the Chaotic Force. His soul was currently undergoing a quantitative increase.

To refine the medicine with the furnace and to have the medicine keeps the fire blazing, Chaotic Force was the medicine while the fire was the soul. As the Chaotic Force circulated within his body, it nourished his soul as well, making it become even more powerful.

While cultivating Chaotic Force, Xiao Bao was cultivating his Chaotic Body and his soul as well. The three of them remained in balance throughout the whole time.

Only the Innate Chaotic Body could achieve this. Jian Chen was only able to cultivate two of them together.

Xiao Bao's soul had not condensed before and still lingered throughout his body, but at this very moment, under the nourishment of the Chaotic Force, his soul was strengthening at an unbelievable pace. It had gradually morphed and condensed.

A free, condensed soul was the symbol of a Saint Ruler on the Tian Yuan Continent. Only those who had reached Saint Ruler could condense their soul. They would never die unless their souls were wiped out.

TL Note: If you remember from quite a while back, when Jian

Chen first fought against a Saint Ruler and tried to kill him, I introduced something called an origin soul. That was just a literal translation of a common occurrence of souls in Chinese novels. A normal soul is bound to the body and will die with the body, as seen with Heaven Saint Masters. When they are freed and able to move independent of the body, they are the souls of a Saint Ruler. In other novels, this stage may be called Nascent Soul. The Chinese characters for soul in Heaven Saint Masters and Saint Rulers are different, but they both mean soul from an English point of view, kind of like something you can't really translate. As a result, I will keep both of them as soul, but I will describe one of them as 'condensed' (since you condense it from your body) when there is a need to identify the two 'types' of souls, so 'condensed' will be used instead of origin soul since assigning names makes things more complicated than they need to be.

The moment Xiao Bao condensed his soul, Jian Chen narrowed his eyes. He discovered that Xiao Bao's soul was unique. Everyone else's soul was white, but his, his was extremely odd. It was chaotic. It did not seem to possess any color, but it also seemed to bear all the colors in the world as it shone with dazzling light.

Chapter 1411: Nubis' Scheme

“Xiao Bao’s soul is different than mine, but I feel like his soul is much more powerful than an ordinary person. Even mine cannot compare to his,” Jian Chen thought. Jian Chen wondered if it was one of the differences between the Innate Chaotic Body and the normal Chaotic Body.

The normal Chaotic Body cultivated Chaotic Force as well, but there were many aspects that could not compare to the Innate Chaotic Body. The normal Chaotic Body’s only advantage was that there were quite a few people who could practice it. There had always been practitioners of the normal Chaotic Body in the Immortal’s World.

The normal Chaotic Body only required Chaotic Force to modify and morph it. The Innate Chaotic Body rarely ever appeared at all.

Although the creation of a normal Chaotic Body seemed easy, there were not many people who could succeed. There were countless prodigies who wasted themselves on this path of cultivation because not everyone could use Chaotic Force to modify themselves.

Jian Chen had learned all this from the sword spirits.

“The medicine keeps the flame blazing. Daddy, I’ve done it. Have I properly stepped onto the path of cultivation?” Xiao Bao roused from his cultivation and his eyes immediately lit up. His face was filled with excitement.

Jian Chen finally smiled when he saw how excited Xiao Bao was. His face was filled with relief. Xiao Bao had truly embarked on cultivating the Chaotic Body. His strength was equivalent the first layer of Jian Chen’s Chaotic Body, allowing him to fight Saint Rulers.

At the same time, he had condensed his soul. A condensed soul

was the representation of a Saint Ruler. Even though he walked a different path of cultivation and did not comprehend the mysteries of the world, his true strength was even slightly stronger than when Jian Chen was at the first layer.

This was all because of his Innate Chaotic Body!

Xiao Bao had not even reached ten years old yet. If the the news that he possessed the strength of a Saint Ruler was broadcasted, it would definitely shake the entire world.

This was because many people had only just begun cultivating at this age. They were working hard on condensing their Saint Weapons to become a Saint.

The Heavenly Enchantress entered the cave. She did not even glance at Jian Chen, placing all her attention on Xiao Bao. A sliver of joy flashed through her eyes when she sensed how Xiao Bao's presence had become countless times more powerful than before, but the joy was hidden very soon.

Jian Chen knew that the Heavenly Enchantress had always been secretly watching over Xiao Bao, because she could not stop worrying about him. She showed her love for Xiao Bao very rarely, but it came from the bottom of her heart.

Jian Chen removed a large amount of heavenly resources, the ones he had obtained from the Xuanhuang Microcosm, and Class 8 and 9 Xuanhuang Beast energy crystals. He gave them all to Xiao Bao so that he could continue cultivating.

Jian Chen was dissatisfied with Xiao Bao's strength at the level of Saint Ruler. He did not know when the World of Forsaken Saints would attack again, but there was one thing he was certain about. The next time they attacked, the combatants from the foreign world would definitely be even more terrifying. The battlefield might even engulf the entire planet, and Saint Emperors may not be able to protect themselves. As a result, Jian Chen needed to do everything his could to increase Xiao Bao's strength in the time he

had in an effort to make him even stronger.

Jian Chen then took out some divine water of the world, a fifth grade Violet Cloud Peach, and some Comprehension Tea Leaves and gave them to the Heavenly Enchantress. He then explained their usages to her.

The Heavenly Enchantress walked another path of cultivation. She didn't need to comprehend the mysteries of the world on the Tian Yuan Continent, but her Way of the Zither was also a type of law, one of the myriad of ways, so these items would obviously benefit her.

The Heavenly Enchantress hesitated to accept Jian Chen's items. She did not take them immediately. If Jian Chen was giving them to her to keep for Xiao Bao, she would not hesitate to take them. She believed that he was only supposed to give Xiao Bao things. However, it was a whole different matter if he was giving them to her to use.

"The spatial tunnel was not stable last time the foreign world attacked, so no Origin realm experts came. Only a clone of their leader, the Spiritking, had come. However, the tunnel will become extremely stable the next time they attack. There will be Origin realm experts. If you are not powerful enough, how will you protect Xiao Bao? Do you want to see Xiao Bao fall before you without being able to do anything?" Jian Chen explained.

A struggle unfolded within the Heavenly Enchantress' eyes when she heard his words, but she silently agreed with him in the end. She accepted Jian Chen's items because she understood the power of the foreign world very well. She understood that the next time they attacked, it would definitely be like a storm and the entire world become the battlefield. Nowhere would be safe, so the only way to survive was to be powerful enough.

The Beast God Continent was a land no smaller than the Tian Yuan Continent. Ninety percent of its surface was covered in lush

forests while enormous ancient mountain ranges stood in large clusters, almost occupying the entire continent. There was rarely any flat land.

The Beast God Continent was an extremely suitable habitat for the magical beasts. It was a like heaven to them. Not only did the continent have far more mountain ranges than on the Tian Yuan Continent, but the energy of the world there was denser as well. They would be able to cultivate at greater speeds.

The Beast God Continent also had cities and tribes that represented the rulers of certain regions. Class 7 Magical Beasts in human form would shoot through the sky from time to time.

Within an ancient mountain range, a young man in golden clothes lay lazily on a three-meter-long branch. He was in a daze as he stared at the sky in exhaustion.

“Sigh, the Beast God Continent is just far too vast. Even after becoming a Saint Emperor, it’s not easy to find a specific person. I’ve already been here for several days, yet I haven’t heard any news of that old snake. Where the hell is he hiding?” The young man murmured. To no surprise, this young man was Nubis, and he had just broken through.

“Was there only that snake that had been slain by the grand elder of Mercenary City on the Beast God Continent?” Nubis furrowed his brows in thought before shaking his head again, “Impossible, the sources of my information are reliable. There should be another, even more powerful snake on the Beast God Continent, but I’ve found nothing regarding him even after several days of searching. Has that old snake been keeping a low profile, meaning he’s not well-known? Or is it that no one knows where that old snake is?”

Nubis suddenly slapped his knee after a moment of silence. He immediately sat up and said, “Since I can’t find that old snake, I can only draw him out. Hmph, I refuse to believe that I can’t find

you.”

Nubis was immediately encased by a dazzling golden light. His presence rapidly weakened as he bathed in the light, dropping from Saint Emperor to Saint King very quickly. It did not just stop there, dropping to even lower levels, before stopping at the level of a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler in the end.

Afterward, Nubis transformed into a golden, several-thousand-meter-long snake that was only the thickness of a tree in a single movement. He took to the sky, and from afar, he seemed like a golden ribbon.

Chapter 1412: Cloud-scattering City

Nubis flew through the sky as a several-thousand-meter-long snake. As a Class 9 Magical Beast, he had obviously comprehended the mysteries of the world at a high level. His body became blurry as he completely fused with the surrounding space, hurrying along with the use of Spatial Force. He moved extremely quickly, shooting across the sky and disappearing into the horizon.

“As a Golden-Striped Silver Snake, there will be a duel of life-and-death as soon as I meet another clansmen. Although there have been a few Golden-Striped Silver Snakes across history, all of them have experienced a death match whenever they come across a clansmen, as seen in my inherited memories. The victor will dominate and devour the essence of the loser, allowing the victor to evolve and become even stronger. There are extremely few Golden-Striped Silver Snakes in the world, so I refuse to believe that the old snake won’t be interested once I broadcast my identity. He’ll definitely come looking for me, and as soon as he appears, I’ll be able to devour him and strengthen my essence,” thought Nubis. He felt proud of himself for being able to think of this. He did not take the old snake’s strength to heart at all.

Ten thousand kilometers away from Nubis, a city stood silently within a mountain range. It seemed to have been built on a mountain. Its top had been sliced off, and it was surrounded by countless other mountains.

The city possessed a simple design. It only had a ring of low city walls, which were pitch-black and built from a rare type of earth found on the Beast God Continent. The rare type of earth was even tougher than rock. A powerful ripple of energy emanated from within the city walls, clearly channeled into the walls by a powerful magical beast, reinforcing the walls to become several times tougher than steel.

Only Class 7 Magical Beasts and above possessed this ability.

Two words were carved on a slant on the city walls, 'Cloud-scattering.' They represented the name of the city, which was Cloud-scattering City.

The city was quite well-known in a radius of a million kilometers because the city possessed two powerful Class 7 Magical Beasts. One of them had reached the peak of Class 7, equivalent to the Ninth Heavenly Layer of a Saint Ruler.

The Beast God Continent was no less brutal than the Tian Yuan Continent. Slaughter between the members of the same race were present everywhere, because it was a process for fast growth. They could either devour the monster cores of others to strengthen themselves or eat their flesh, hoping for the rare chance that a mutation would occur within their body.

Once a mutation occurred, they would immediately undergo a rebirth, mutating from their very source. It was similar process to when a human with average talent became a prodigy at cultivation.

And these mutations did not only mean one would undergo a metamorphosis. It meant that their battle prowess could become even greater.

This was why it was very difficult to find a safe place on the Beast God Continent. If one was not strong enough, one would be hunted down even when cultivating and would die due to the slightest carelessness. Those who were strong could take up territory and claim to be its ruler, but even when that happened, they needed to be aware of even more powerful magical beasts who would come and fight them.

The cities and tribes on the continent were the safehouses of many magical beasts. Every city or tribe possessed powerful magical beasts. They would create rules and order, banding together into organizations. As long as people became a member of these organizations or paid valuable heavenly resources to gain the

right to stay there, they would be able to cultivate in peace without worrying about being attacked by others.

Cloud-scattering City was as prosperous as any other day. A large amount of magical beasts moved in and out. All of them remained in beast form, ranging between Class 3 and Class 6 in strength. Large beasts stood over ten meters tall while smaller ones were only a meter or two. There were many various species.

Magical Beasts developed intelligence far quicker on the Beast God Continent than on the Tian Yuan Continent. As long as they had reached Class 2, they would have gained a lot of intelligence already, so regardless of strength, all the magical beasts behaved in an orderly fashion once they entered the city. They completely erased the viciousness they normally bore.

At this moment, a golden streak of light hurried over from the distance before stopping above the city in the end. It was a very long but thin snake.

The snake was Nubis. He hovered above the city as he coldly gazed down. His gaze was filled with a cold-blooded ruthlessness.

He opened his mouth and immediately sprayed out a dense, venomous substance. It rapidly engulfed the city below as a rolling cloud.

The venom was extremely potent. It wafted through the air, and in a short moment, all the vegetation in the surrounding ten kilometers withered at an unbelievable speed before turning to dust, dispersing in the incoming wind.

The venomous gas descended on the city. Regardless how powerful the magical beasts were, the ones who came in contact with it collapsed on the ground, powerless as black blood oozed from their mouths. They did not even have the power to flee.

All the magical beasts in the city became stunned with the sudden occurrence. They all turned their heads to where the gas

had wafted over from as disbelief filled their faces.

The city was watched over by two Class 7 Magical Beasts, and one of them had even reached the peak, only a single step away from Class 8. The city had become a famed organization in the surrounding region of a million kilometers because of the two of them. There had never been someone who dared to provoke them throughout history. They had no idea just which ignorant person had come to cause trouble.

However, when the magical beasts saw the groups that had collapsed onto the ground, powerless, as the venomous gas drifted over, they immediately fled for their lives. They left as quickly as they could.

They did not care about whether the city could stop the invader. They needed to protect their lives first.

In a single moment, the orderly city fell into a mess. All the magical beasts fled for their lives. Many of them showed fear when they witnessed how terrifying the gas was.

At the same time, two tremendous presences radiated from beneath the city. The two most powerful experts in the city had emerged. Two burly old men had silently appeared in the air. They both gave off a powerful presence. The two of them were both Saint Rulers.

They were the two experts who watched over the city!

Chapter 1413: The Fall of a City

The two human-form Class 7 Magical Beasts of Cloud-scattering City had been cultivating in seclusion deep underground. They immediately roused from their cultivation when they sensed something had happened to the city. They left their underground location in a single moment and silently appeared in the sky.

Class 7 Magical Beasts were equivalent to Saint Rulers on the Tian Yuan Continent. Even on the Beast God Continent, they were experts who could dominate an entire region, so the two Class 7 Magical Beasts were like the protector gods of the city. Many frightened magical beasts calmed down when they saw the two of them appear.

The strongest magical beasts in the city were only Class 6, so they admired and trusted the Class 7 Magical Beasts from the bottom of their hearts. Even though they could sense that the golden snake who had produced the venomous gas was not weak, the snake had not assumed a human form, so many of them believed that the snake was not Class 7. They assumed that its venom was just potent.

As a result, a few magical beasts stopped fleeing when the two Class 7 Magical Beasts appeared. They stopped in the distance to watch, believing that the two Class 7 experts would be able to easily slay their opponent.

“A beast of antiquity, a Golden-Striped Silver Snake!” The two Class 7 Magical Beasts’ eyes became fixated on the huge golden snake. Their eyes narrowed by an undetectable amount while they softly exclaimed at the same time.

Beasts of antiquity possessed extraordinary statuses on the continent. They often represented great potential and incomparable strength. No one was their opponent while on the same level of cultivation, and they even possessed the power to

challenge those stronger than themselves.

There were countless magical beasts on the Beast God Continent, but beasts of antiquity were almost mythical existences. Without any exception, every appearance of a beast of antiquity would shake the continent. This was because these magical beasts would definitely be able to reach Class 8 if they matured successfully, having even a tiny chance at reaching Class 9. They were invincible among their own level of cultivation and only other beasts of antiquity could pose a threat to them.

However, the eyes of the two old men became filled with greed. The gazes they used on the huge snake underwent consequent changes, looking at the snake as though it was not a venomous Golden-Striped Silver Snake but a huge treasure.

“If I slay this Golden-Striped Silver Snake and consume its flesh, drink its blood, and devour its monster core, there’ll be an extremely great chance at mutating, so I can become even more powerful. It will lead to an even greater future for me.” At this moment, similar thoughts crossed the heads of both magical beasts. Their breathing became much more rugged as soon as they considered that before them was a good chance at mutating.

Without saying much, the two magical beasts struck out together. Their eyes burned with desire, wanting to kill the Golden-Striped Silver Snake in the shortest amount of time possible.

The two old men silently appeared before the snake, and with a thought, they used Spatial Force to freeze the space there in a single moment to immobilize the snake. Afterward, their hands turned into claws, which swept across the snake’s head in a single flash. They tried to kill the snake in the simplest most efficient way possible.

The snake was obviously Nubis. Nubis did not let out any of his presence and had appeared in his original form, which was why

the two Class 7 Magical Beasts had failed to see his strength that had been suppressed to the Ninth Heavenly Layer. They treated him as a Class 6 Magical Beast.

Nubis sneered at them. With a slight tremor of his long body, the frozen space immediately shattered, unable to stop him at all. Afterward, his long body suddenly moved. He traveled extremely quickly, tightly wrapping around the weaker Class 7 Magical Beast in a single golden flash before he could react. Afterward, he opened his mouth and bit the other magical beast. With a crack, the magical beast's arm was bitten off by Nubis.

The peak Class 7 Magical Beast produced a grunt of pain. His face immediately paled as he retreated with lightning-like speed while in disbelief. His gaze toward Nubis was filled with shock.

The blood where his missing limb rapidly blackened. Not only had Nubis bitten off his arm, he had injected his body with venom. The venom caused the magical beast to helplessly tremble.

“Y-you’re not Class 6, but Class 7 and at the peak of Class 7!” The magical beast cried out. Only now did he suddenly understand that the snake before him was not as weak as he had imagined. His strength was something he could not handle.

Nubis smiled. He did not assume a human form, but he spoke human tongue, “You’re right. I, the great Nubis, have stopped being Class 6 Magical Beast long ago, but you learned that too late unfortunately.”

The peak Class 7 Magical Beast's face changed drastically. Without any hesitation, he suppressed the venom within him, abandoned the city he had invested several years in and began to flee.

Nubis did not pursue him. He stared coldly and ruthlessly at the other magical beast that he had wrapped around and his body tightened suddenly. Twisting like a meat-grinder, the Class 7 Magical Beast was forcefully squashed to death, his bones

obliterated.

Bang! Suddenly, the magical beast's head exploded and his soul emerged. He fearfully flew off into the distance in a flash.

However, a golden light flashed before he could escape far. Nubis' tail cut through the air from afar, catching up to the fleeing soul in a single moment. Being struck, the soul immediately dispersed, killing the expert completely.

The venomous gas had already engulfed a small portion of the city. It expanded even further under the slight breeze, and in the distance, all the magical beasts stood there stunned as they gazed at the sky. Shock filled all their eyes. The two powerful Class 7 Magical Beasts had actually been beaten into retreat so quickly. One of them fled while the other one had died, astounding all the magical beasts in the city.

Suddenly, a roar filled with fear rang out. A three-meter-long, cat-like magical beast covered in scales had cried out and fled into the distance as quickly as it could.

All the other magical beasts in the city returned to their senses. All of them fled for their lives, pushing their speed to their limits. A series of heavy footsteps rang out from below.

"From today on, this city no longer exists. This place will become a part of my vast territory. Remember my name! I am the beast of antiquity, the Golden-Striped Silver Snake, the great Nubis!" Nubis did not hunt all of them down and instead laughed aloud in the sky. He remained in his snake form and did not turn into a human.

"A beast of antiquity, it's actually a beast of antiquity..."

Chapter 1414: Luring the Snake out of its Hole

“He is the great Nubis. The great Nubis has destroyed Cloud-scattering City. This is now his territory...”

At that moment, all the fleeing magical beasts memorized Nubis' name.

In the blink of an eye, the city fell into a dead silence. The entire city was engulfed by the poisonous gas, leaving a large number of magical beasts collapsed on the ground.

Nubis looked at the fleeing magical beasts and secretly hesitated. He murmured to himself, “It doesn't seem to be enough. Wiping out a city doesn't seem to be enough to broadcast my great name across the entire continent. Looks like I need to keep going at it.” With that, Nubis suddenly opened his mouth and sucked. The gas across the entire city immediately surged violently, having all been sucked back into Nubis' mouth. In just a few seconds, no traces of the gas were left at all. Only the vegetation that had been reduced to dust and a few shriveled trees remained, as if they were silently narrating what had just happened.

Nubis left. Soon after he had left the area, a few magical beasts on the ground gently trembled before standing up with great difficulty. Without any exception, they were all Class 6 Magical Beasts.

More and more magical beasts gradually stood up. Although they had all stood up with great difficulty, they were not dead.

Nubis had become a Saint Emperor, so he had mastered control over his own venom. He was able to use it as he pleased. The venom from before seemed potent, turning the vegetation to dust in a single moment and even withering ancient trees, yet the venom did not kill any magical beasts in the city. It had just

knocked them unconscious.

The magical beasts did not stay in the city after waking up. They glanced at the sky in lingering fear. Although they could not see Nubis anymore, their fear for him had already overwhelmed them. They all left the city one by one.

The city became a true ghost town, without any presence of life at all.

Very soon, the magical beasts that had fled spread the news of what had happened, throwing the surrounding region of several tens of thousand kilometers in great shock. The news gradually spread further as well. The fall of a city guarded by Class 7 Magical Beasts was quite a significant matter within the surrounding radius of a million kilometers.

Nubis' infamy gradually spread as well.

Nubis did not pay too much attention to the shock he had caused in Cloud-scattering City, because he believed that destroying a city guarded by just Class 7 Magical Beasts would not be enough to shake the continent. It would not be enough to draw out the snake that was hiding in an unknown location, so he turned his eyes to a powerful organization protected by a Class 8 Magical Beast.

There were no longer a lot of Class 8 Magical Beasts left on the continent. Most of them had died in the battle against the World of Forsaken Saints. Only a small number had survived.

The Firefinch tribe was a great organization even with the entire continent in perspective. The Firefinch clan owned a lot of territory.

The Firefinch clan was originally a nameless clan on the continent and had only begun to rise in the past millennia. They began to stand out on the continent because of three mutated firefinches had appeared together in a single generation. Two of them had reached Class 8 over a thousand years ago, immediately

making the clan a peak-level organization on the continent. The remaining mutated firefinch had reached the peak of Class 7 and was close to Class 8 as well.

More recently, the tribe had been engulfed by heavy sorrow because one of their protectors had fallen in the battle against the foreign world on the Tian Yuan Continent. They had even failed to retrieve his corpse, which was an extremely heavy hit to the tribe.

As the clansmen still dwelled in great grief, a golden ribbon suddenly shot over from far away. It moved extremely quickly, arriving above the tribe in the blink of an eye.

Up close, the golden ribbon was a huge snake several thousand meters long, but it was only as thick as a tree. It was Nubis in his beast form.

“I’ve finally found a Class 8 Magical Beast after so much searching!” Nubis exhaled high up in the air. In order to find a Class 8 Magical Beast, he had crossed countless mountains and forests, traveling a great distance along the way. He had finally found one here after great difficulty.

Of course, the several organizations with Class 7 Magical Beasts he came across along the way all suffered disasters. However, Nubis held back. He only killed Class 7 Magical Beasts when the organization possessed two or more. He would always let one flee and would broadcast his identity as a Golden-Striped Silver Snake, as if he worried that the magical beasts that fled did not know what he was.

Nubis erased his presence, which prevented the Class 7 Magical Beasts in the tribe to discover his existence. However, the Class 8 Magical Beast had discovered Nubis the first moment he had arrived.

The space before Nubis gently rippled and a burly, middle-aged man with long, red hair silently appeared. His skin was crimson and even his eyes were red.

“A beast of antiquity, a Golden-Striped Silver Snake!” The middle-aged man was the only Class 8 Magical Beast left in the Firefinch clan. He recognized Nubis with a single glance and a gleam of surprise flashed through his eyes, along with a smear of joy.

Nubis glanced over the man with his cold, merciless eyes before turning around and fleeing without any hesitation at all. He flew into the distance extremely quickly, as if he had taken off in desperate flight.

The middle-aged man sneered and mumbled, “Beasts of antiquity are extremely rare. There aren’t many even across the entire continent, while the one before me just happens to be a Golden-Striped Silver Snake. They’re a unique species. They have intense hatred for their own clansmen and will never give up fighting unless one of them dies if they ever meet. There’s no need to worry about any experts supporting him. This beast of antiquity just happens to be weak. I can kill him with a flip of my hand. Even though I’ve already reached Class 8, devouring a beast of antiquity still has great benefits, and even if I have no use for the essence that can only be devoured by their other clansmen, I can offer it up to that lord!”

The middle-aged man immediately pursued the snake. With his strength as a Class 8 Magical Beast, catching up to Nubis was naturally a piece of cake. The distance between the two of them shrank very soon.

Nubis did not panic at all when he saw the middle-aged man grow closer and closer to him. Instead, he sneered and thought, “You can catch up to me, the great Nubis, only because I want to complete my scheme. So what if I have to be pursued by you for a while to draw out that old snake? I can’t reveal the strength of the 8th Class and scare that old snake. Only with strength of the 7th Class will that old snake come kill me without any hesitation at all.”

Chapter 1415: The Old Snake Appears

The Class 8 expert of the firefinches pursued Nubis as he fled. The two of them both used Spatial Force, so they moved extremely quickly. Their figures flashed through space as faint blurs, disappearing in the horizon in the blink of an eye.

The Class 8 firefinch had already reached the level of Saint Kings on the Tian Yuan Continent. He possessed a great mastery over space through his comprehension of the mysteries of the world. Both his control over Spatial Force and the energy within him was incomparable to a peak Class 7 Magical Beast, but today, he found it extremely difficult to catch up to the peak Class 7 Silver Striped Rainbow Snake in front of him.

Although the Golden-Striped Silver Snake moved at speeds much slower than him, whenever he pulled up to the snake, the snake would shine with golden light and his speed would immediately skyrocket, reaching an believable level. It would pull far ahead in just the blink of an eye, preventing the Class 8 expert from catching up no matter how much he tried.

He had tried to freeze the space around the snake numerous times in an attempt to immobilize Nubis, but to his surprise, the snake was like a slippery worm, where even frozen space could not trap it. With a squirming motion, the snake would easily break free of the frozen space and continue on without slowing down at all.

He had considered using Space Gates, but Space Gates were only a convenience for traveling and not for pursuing a specific target. The target could change direction beforehand when it sensed the ripples in space and run off. By the time he had emerged from the Space Gate, the target might have already disappeared into the horizon, so Space Gates were ineffective for chasing people down.

When Nubis glowed with golden light again and exploded with speed, pulling far away from the firefinch, the Class 8 expert

finally became angry. His face became extremely dark. He felt ashamed that it was so difficult to catch up to a peak Class 7 Magical Beast. He was an expert at Class 8 and felt that his dignity as a Class 8 Magical Beast had been severely trampled over.

“Hmph, you sure are worthy of being a Golden-Striped Silver Snake. Your fleeing secret technique really is very powerful, where I am unable to catch up to you in a short amount of time. However, you must consume a lot of energy when you use this type of secret technique. It’s impossible for you to last very long, so I’d like to see just how much further you can flee,” the Class 8 firefinch grumbled inside with gritted teeth.

Nubis seemed like he was in a desperate flight, but through his eyes, he was completely relaxed. He did not view the Class 8 expert behind him with any importance. Instead, he was even in the mood to admire the scenery around him as he fled.

He suppressed his strength to the peak of Class 7, but he was still a Class 9 Magical Beast after all. How could a mere Class 8 Magical Beast catch up to him?

An hour later, Nubis passed by a large tribe and came to a halt. He gazed down and his eyes immediately lit up. He opened his mouth and spat out a dense cloud of venomous gas before continuing on without even looking back.

Behind him, the Class 8 firefinch whistled through the air with his tremendous presence. He did not stop at all, charging after Nubis.

At the same time, a furious, ground-shaking roar rang out from the large tribe below. The ground cracked open and a huge bear over thirty meters in height climbed out. It was covered with spotless, snow-white fur, standing there like a small mountain.

The bear stood in Nubis’ venomous gas and looked at the groups of clansmen who had collapsed. His eyes immediately reddened, and he roared at the sky. He turned into a white stream of light

and pursued Nubis. His body underwent a transformation as well, changing from a huge, white bear into a four-meter-tall, burly man in just a few seconds. He radiated with a tremendous presence since he was also a Class 8 Magical Beast.

In just the blink of an eye, Nubis had fled for two days and the Class 8 Magical Beasts pursuing him had increased from two to five. He had only come across these magical beasts after running across quite a fraction of the continent and he managed to offend all of them. However, without any exception, they were unable to catch up to Nubis no matter what they did.

Nubis did not fight against the magical beasts and instead lead them all over the continent. Wherever he passed by, he would shock all the magical beasts and cause a great disturbance. The news of five Class 8 Magical Beasts pursuing a single Golden-Striped Silver Snake spread rapidly as well, crossing the entire continent very soon.

If Nubis only assumed his original form and exposed himself on the continent, it would lead to a commotion as well, but it would not be as great as five Class 8 Magical Beasts pursuing a single Class 7 Magical Beast,

This was because Class 8 Magical Beasts themselves were moving centers of attention. They would catch the eyes of people no matter where they went, let alone five of them trying to hunt down a Class 7 Magical Beast that was not as powerful as them.

Let alone now, this had never happened in the history of the continent. It would still be reasonable if there were several peak Class 7 Magical Beasts pursuing a heavily-injured Class 8, but the other way around was just far too unbelievable.

In a swamp covered with poisonous gas over ten million kilometers away from Nubis, a gold-robed old man currently sat in a dank, dark cave as he cultivated. The old man's skin shone with a faint, golden color. Although his appearance was not particularly

eye-catching, he had a dignified bearing, clearly groomed from being of high status.

Suddenly, the old man slowly opened his eyes. He stared outside with his deep eyes. His gaze seemed to be able to pierce the obstruction of the rocks, allowing him to see the distant Beast God Hall. His eyebrows furrowed with some worry.

“I wonder if the battle between the Beast God Continent and the World of Forsaken Saints has ended and how the battle ended. I may have vaguely sensed the return of many Class 8 Magical Beasts over the past few days, but there are just far too few compared to the number that had left.”

“Back when the peng emperor called on all the Class 8 Magical Beasts in his territory to defend the Tian Yuan Continent from the invasion of the World of Forsaken Saints, he swore to put his life on the line to protect our world, but according to what I know, the World of Forsaken Saints is just far too powerful. They might not achieve victory even if the four races work together. I may be at the peak of Class 8, but even I am not completely confident I could survive this battle. As a result, I chose to leave my nest and hide in this obscure place by myself, escaping from the peng emperor’s summoning. I wonder if the peng emperor has returned or not and if he has discovered that I deserted the battle against the foreign world. If he finds out and looks into it...”

The old man thought inside. He felt very uneasy, because he was one of the people specifically named by the peng emperor for the battle against the foreign world. However, he worried that he would die, so he had not participated.

At this moment, a small, skinny old man appeared silently outside the cave like a ghost. He said with a hunched back, “Ancestor, it’s rumored that a peak Class 7 Golden-Striped Silver Snake has appeared on the Beast God Continent and is currently being pursued by five Class 8 experts!”

The old man in the cave immediately flickered with golden light when he heard that. He suddenly stood up and arrived outside the cave excitedly. He stared at the small old man fixedly with a venomous gaze and hurriedly asked, “Are you sure? A peak Class 7 Golden-Striped Silver Snake has appeared outside?”

“Ancestor, that was what I heard, but I did not confirm the rumor. However, I’ve already sent people to investigate the truth of this matter and believe that they will report back very soon,” the skinny old man politely replied. However, as soon as he finished speaking, his face suddenly changed. He removed an ancient piece of jade from his Space Ring, and with a flash, a piece of information was delivered through the jade.

“Ancestor, the people I’ve sent have already investigated this rumor completely. The matter is completely true,” the skinny old man immediately confirmed. His voice bore a sliver of joy.

The golden-robed old man was overjoyed. He chuckled aloud, “Good! Good! Good! Heaven must be on my side. I never thought that a Golden-Striped Silver Snake would appear at a time like this and that it would be at the peak of Class 7. I’ve been stuck at the peak of Class 8 for many years now, only requiring a single step to reach Class 9. If I devour the essence of that little snake, I might end up breaking through to Class 9. At that time, would there still be any need for me to fear the peng emperor and hide here?”

Chapter 1416: You're Actually Class 9!

The gold-robed old man was extremely ecstatic. His eyes burned with desire as an urgent eagerness welled up within him. This was the attraction of the 9th Class.

Once he reached Class 9, he would be like the Saint Emperors on the Tian Yuan Continent. He would stand above countless people. Even across the entire Beast God Continent, there were only three Class 9 Magical Beasts. Every single one of them ruled an entire region of the continent and reigned supreme there.

More importantly, the gold-robed old man was almost at the end of his six-thousand-year lifespan. If he did not make a breakthrough, he would not have much time left, so the 9th Class possessed a fatal attraction to him. Not only would it allow him to become the fourth esteemed champion of the continent, but it also represented four thousand years of life as well.

After that, the gold-robed old man learned the exact location of the peak Class 7 Golden-Striped Silver Snake from the skinny old man before leaving through a Space Gate.

Over ten million kilometers away, Nubis continued to flee 'desperately' in his original form. Every time the powerful experts behind him were about to catch up, he would always flash with a golden light and explode with speed, shooting off into the distance at an unbelievable rate and immediately pulling far away from the people behind him. His jump in speed would make all the Class 8 experts clench their fists in anger, but they were without any other choices.

Along the way, Nubis would always stop temporarily and cause mayhem for any organization with a Class 8 expert he came across, as if he was afraid that there was not enough Class 8 Magical Beasts behind him. This led to an increase from the initial five that tailed him to eight.

“Why is this Golden-Striped Silver Snake so hard to deal with? He’s used his secret technique countless times along the way, but he doesn’t seem to show any signs of exhaustion at all. He’s still brimming with vigor. Does the secret technique he use not cause him any harm or exhaustion?” Similar thoughts crossed the minds of the eight Class 8 experts multiple times. The eight of them had used everything they had, every method that could immobilize people, along the way, but these abilities that could even temporarily freeze experts of the same class did not have any effect on the peak Class 7 snake at all.

The Class 7 Golden-Striped Silver Snake was just far too difficult to catch. Some of the Class 8 Magical Beasts even wanted to stop chasing him. However, whenever they thought about how the damned Nubis had used his venom to attack their clansmen without any reason, they would immediately clench their teeth again and their eyes would redden with anger. They continued their endless pursuit of Nubis.

“Once I catch him, I’ll peel his skin, eat his flesh, and drink his blood...”

“So what if he’s a beast of antiquity? If I catch him, I’ll definitely make him wish he was better off dead...”

“God dammit. This Golden-Striped Silver Snake is clearly only at the peak of Class 7, but it’s provoked all of us without any fear. This is abnormal. Does this snake have some kind of scheme? And regarding his strength, maybe he’s not the peak of Class 7 like he seems on the surface. Maybe he reached Class 8 long ago.” None of the Class 8 Magical Beasts were dim-witted. They discovered something off very soon, but they still did not give up the pursuit.

“Hahaha, now I’ve surely created a large enough disturbance. Eight Class 8 experts pursuing a peak Class 7 beast of antiquity will definitely cause quite the commotion on the Beast God Continent. It’ll spread as quickly as it can. I just wonder if that old snake has received the news,” Nubis thought. He appeared desperate, but he

did not even glance at the Class 8 Magical Beasts behind him. He moved forward without any specific direction, running wherever there was a city or a tribe, as long as there were a lot of magical beasts.”

“God dammit, if that old snake just happens to be in seclusion and hasn’t received the new, do I, the Great Nubis, have to just continue like this?” Nubis thought of a terrible possibility soon afterward. His head immediately began to ache.

But, at that moment, the space several dozen kilometers away from him began to violently distort. A Space Gate rapidly formed. Before a figure was even visible, a powerful presence leaked out, actually causing the space several hundred kilometers away to ripple. The energy of the world there seemed to stop moving.

The range of the extremely powerful presence included Nubis and the eight Class 8 Magical Beasts behind him. It immediately caused the eight of them to slow down.

A gleam of interest flashed through Nubis’ eyes. He suddenly turned his head toward the Space Gate several dozen kilometers away and purposefully slowed down.

The Class 8 Magical Beasts behind all became shocked and stopped pursuing one by one. They all stared in the direction of the Space Gate. The presence was just far too powerful. They immediately felt like they were carrying a huge mountain on their back when the presence engulfed them, causing their bodies to grow heavier. Even the space around them seemed to be pressured by the presence, causing it to feel like mud and making movements extraordinarily difficult.

“The peak of Class 8. This is an expert at the peak of Class 8!” A four-meter-tall man cried out. He became very stern. He was the huge white bear that Nubis had provoked.

As soon as he finished speaking, an old man in gold robes and golden hair slowly stepped out of the Space Gate. In his cold,

ruthless gaze, there was a condescending presence, as if he was a lord that stood in heaven and reigned above life.

However, the old man truly did possess that status on the Beast God Continent. He was a beast of antiquity and had reached the Great Perfection of Saint King. Aside from the three Class 9 experts, there was no one who could defeat him.

The moment Nubis saw the old man, he immediately became overjoyed. His eyes burned with desire, as if the old man was not a peak Class 8 expert but a glistening treasure.

At the same time, the old man caught sight of Nubis several dozen kilometers away. His eyes became filled with the same light that was filling Nubis' eyes, also becoming overjoyed with a burning desire.

The old man took a single step, and with the slight rippling of space around him, he immediately vanished. When he reappeared, he was already several dozen kilometers away, right in Nubis' way. He looked at Nubis greedily as he said in excitement, "He's right, he's right. It really is a peak Class 7 Golden-Striped Silver Snake. Thank the heavens for siding with me!"

The eight Class 8 Magical Beasts stopped quite far away. They looked at the gold-robed old man in fear and respect. Even though they were filled with hatred for Nubis and were tempted to immediately kill Nubis off since he had stopped running away, they dared not to step forward.

The Golden-Striped Silver Snake that was several thousand meters long had vanished from the sky, replaced by Nubis in human form. He had returned to being a handsome young man with golden robes and hair. He stared at the old man as his eyes burned with desire. His lips curled into an odd malevolent smile.

"Old bastard, I, the great Nubis, have finally lured you out. I never thought that your strength would be so great, having already reached the peak of Class 8 and only a step away from Class 9,"

Nubis sneered.

With that, the eight Class 8 experts in the distance all showed different expressions. They stared at Nubis in surprise. None of them had considered that Nubis had provoked them to create a disturbance and lure out this peak Class 8 expert.

The gold-robed old man sneered, “Little guy, you’ve made a miscalculation. You may have hidden your strength, posing as Class 7 despite being Class 8, but I’ve reached Class 8 long ago and now stand at the peak of the 8th Class. Before me, you don’t even have the ability to flee.”

Nubis laughed aloud and stared at the old man as if he was looking at a joke. He said, “Old bastard, who said that I, the great Nubis, need to flee? You’re the one who should be running.” A presence great enough to make the surroundings tremble radiated from Nubis as soon as he finished speaking. The presence was just far, far greater than the golden-robed old man. As soon as the presence had appeared, the region of earth below them was pressed down and cracked. Under his presence, all the vegetation and trees in the surroundings were crushed to dust.

The eight Class 8 experts revealed a much worse expression at that moment. Their gazes became filled with shock as they all paled. They all stared at Nubis, trembling, having become absolutely terrifying.

“Class 9, he’s actually Class 9. We’ve actually been hunting down a Class 9 expert this entire time,” the eight Class 8 experts lamented inside. Their hearts quivered and they seemed to feel their blood flow in the opposite direction. They had even made up their minds about death.

The old man had lost his calmness and composure from before as well. He stared at Nubis in disbelief as he cried out, “You’re actually Class 9!”

Chapter 1417: Devastation

The old man paled. Not even a shred of blood was left on his face. He was scared witless now that Nubis had displayed his presence as a Class 9 Magical Beast, because he was also a Golden-Striped Silver Snake. He knew too well what the outcome of two snakes meeting each other would be.

Without any hesitation, the old man immediately turned around and fled into the distance as quickly as he could. At the same time, he used a secret technique. He vomited a mouthful of blood and immediately became much more haggard. He paid the price of heavily injuring himself in exchange for supreme speed to flee the area. He wanted to disappear before Nubis could even react.

He did not use a Space Gate because creating one would take some time. He would be looking to die if he tried using a Space Gate to flee from a Class 9 Magical Beast.

Nubis sneered, “I, the great Nubis, have endured such a great embarrassment. I endured the pursuit of these Class 8 Magical Beasts across half of the continent only to draw you out of your nest after quite some difficulty. If you flee, wouldn’t that mean I did all that for nothing?”

Nubis did not pursue the gold-robed old man. He just sneered. Extending a finger, he immediately shot out a golden stream of light, which traveled toward the old man who had vanished into the horizon at unbelievable speed.

The golden light was only as thick as a finger. Up close, through the hazy golden light, a golden thread was visible inside. It was only as thick as a chopstick, but it hid shocking amounts of energy.

The golden thread pierced through space and disappeared. It seemed to be able to break the limitations of space and move through time, catching up with the old man in a single moment. Afterward, it expanded into a huge net, enveloping the old man.

The old man's face changed. He roared at the sky and immediately began to shine with a golden light. There was a faint layer of blood-red within it. A terrifying pulse of energy shook the surroundings, causing the space around him to tremble violently, almost shattering. He threw a punch at the sky, shattering the space while a terrifying amount of energy condensed into a huge punch, striking the huge golden net. He wanted to smash through the net.

The old man paled even more after the punch. He knew extremely well what the outcome waiting for him was as soon as he was caught by Nubis, so not only did he explode with all his strength as a Saint King at Great Perfection, he had even used a supreme secret technique by burning his own essence blood. The punch he had just thrown was at the cost of his essence blood as well.

The old man did not care about what the punch did. He continued to burn his essence blood, enduring the consequence of heavy injuries to wildly flee. He knew that it was impossible for him to be faster than a Saint Emperor with his strength at Great Perfection. Only by burning his blood to move at speeds beyond what his strength offered did he have a tiny chance of surviving.

The golden punch shattered space, causing all the space it moved through to crack. It struck the falling net with a devastating presence.

The collision of the net and punch did not result in any great boom. However, the net ended up bulging because of the punch. The old man's shocking attack at the cost of his essence blood had failed to disperse the net.

"You dare to resist the great Nubis, even as a mere Class 8 Magical Beast?" Nubis sneered from afar. A golden thread on his finger was connected to the net, and with a single thought, the net immediately began to shrink, enveloping the fist and quickly wearing away the energy within it.

At the same time, another golden thread separated from the net. With the net as its origins, it stabbed into empty space and disappeared. It moved through the void, completely ignoring the distance between it and the old man and catching up to him in a single moment.

The old man clearly sensed the golden thread pursuing him as well. His face immediately changed, becoming horrendous. However, the golden thread shot over like an arrow and did not give the old man any time to react. It stabbed into his back with a faint golden glow, piercing him and passing through his chest. Afterward, it immediately began to wrap around him again and again, tying him up like a badly-wrapped present.

At this moment, the thin golden thread had already extended several dozen kilometers away. It had crossed an entire region of space, reaching from the eastern horizon into the western. If someone stood at its center, it would have been impossible for them to see what the two ends were connected to.

In such a short moment of time, the gold man had managed to flee several dozen kilometers. While the golden thread did not actually pass through the void of space, it moved just far too quickly.

Nubis tugged his finger and the tightly-wrapped old man was immediately pulled over to him from the horizon. Nubis could not help but laugh aloud as he stared at the ashen old man, “Old bastard, can you still be arrogant now? To think that you wanted to devour the great Nubis’ essence and reach Class 9.”

“Y-you’re a Golden-Striped Silver Snake who has just reached Class 9. Experts who have just reached Class 9 may be much more powerful than me, but I am not completely helpless against them either. I’ll be able to fend off a few attacks at the very least. Have you reached Class 9 recently? Impossible. I’ve never heard of another Class 9 expert aside from the three on the Beast God Continent.”

Nubis chuckled aloud, “I may have just reached Class 9, but who would have ever thought that I had a great brother. With my brother’s help, I’m no longer any ordinary Class 9 Magical Beast, even if I’ve just reached it. How can you be my opponent with your mere peak Class 8 strength?”

Chapter 1418: The Submission of Class 8

Magical Beasts

“Impossible. This is impossible. Once you reach Class 8, each Heavenly Layer is extremely difficult to attain, and at Class 9, it’s even more difficult. Since you have only just become a Saint Emperor, it’s impossible for you to break through the First Heavenly Layer and reach a higher level of cultivation.” The gold-robed old man was in a daze. Even though he was filled with despair, he also found it very difficult to believe that Nubis’ strength had increased so quickly even after reaching Class 9 not too long ago.

Nubis smiled even wider when he saw how dejected the old man had become. He was in great spirits. He had learned long ago that there was an extremely powerful Golden-Striped Silver Snake hiding on the Beast God Continent, which was why he had always remained hidden on the outskirts of the Cross Mountains. He did not join the Gilligan clan within the mountains, primarily to avoid the threat on the Beast God Continent.

This was because he had only been a Class 7 Magical Beast before. He possessed a natural sense of dread and fear for the old snake he had only heard about on the Beast God Continent, extremely worried that the old snake would secretly make his way to the Tian Yuan Continent and deal with him. This was why Nubis had chosen to hide in the outskirts of the Cross Mountains. It was closest to Mercenary City, so he could flee into the city if the old snake really did come.

In a sense, the old snake on the Beast God Continent burdened his heart like an invisible mountain, maintaining a great psychological pressure. He even moved around carefully at all times, afraid that the news of him being a Golden-Striped Silver Snake would be learned by even more people.

Afterward, the old snake on the Beast God Continent snuck his way onto the Tian Yuan Continent when the Beast God Continent attacked and was slain by the grand elder of Mercenary City, who he obtained the corpse from.

After devouring the old snake's hidden essence, he inherited a small portion of the snake's memory. He had learned that there was actually an even more powerful old snake on the Beast God Continent, and the snake that had been killed by Tian Jian had always been controlled by the stronger, older snake.

Nubis' heart sank once he had learned this. He feared the more powerful snake even more. He had also decided that the Beast God Continent was a region he would never set foot on in his life.

Yet now, as he gazed at the snake that had once made him fear and burdened him mentally, who was laying powerlessly in his hands, he was immediately overwhelmed by an indescribably sense of delight.

He was tempted to roar out in joy in that moment.

"It's a pity that the medicine that I had spent great efforts in nurturing died on the Tian Yuan Continent, or I would have become a Saint Emperor," the gold-robed old man murmured as regret filled his face.

At this moment, the eight Class 8 Magical Beasts who had pursued Nubis before all erased their presences and began to silently back off. They wanted to escape. The eight of them were all utterly terrified, where not even a shred of blood remained on their faces. They trembled gently all over as their hearts became filled with an intense fear.

Some of them had even become filled with regret. They all cursed how Nubis was a powerful Class 9 expert, yet he had disguised himself as a Class 7 Magical Beast just to fool them, leading the eight of them to recklessly chase a Class 9 Magical Beast across half the continent. If they had known that Nubis was a Class 9 Magical

Beast, they would not have chased him even if they were a hundred times braver.

Nubis narrowed his eyes and his lips curled into a sneer. He slowly turned his head to the eight magical beasts trying to flee and said, “Little brats, you’ve chased the great Nubis for so long. Why do you plan on running off silently now?”

The eight magical beasts immediately froze when they heard Nubis. All their hearts skipped a beat and they all revealed extremely ugly faces, along with some despair.

Extending a finger, a silver thread shot out from its tip as Nubis tied up the eight of them. He chuckled aloud, “You brats, I’ll get to you after I deal with this old snake.”

Afterward, Nubis killed the gold-robed old man mercilessly and used a secret technique to devour his essence.

This was the third time Nubis had devoured the essence of another Golden-Striped Silver Snake. The one he had devoured previously possessed the strength of a Fourth Heavenly Layer Saint King. He had only been a Saint Ruler when he had devoured it and the disparity in strength had just been far too great. This was why Nubis expended an extremely lengthy period to devour all the essence but also why his strength had increased by leaps and bounds.

Now that Nubis was a Saint Emperor, devouring the essence of the old snake who was only at the Great Perfection of Saint King would not increase his power, but it would strengthen his own essence by quite a bit, bringing him great benefits.

Nubis flickered with a faint, golden light all over after draining the old snake’s essence. His strength remained the same as before, but his presence had vaguely strengthened.

Afterward, Nubis looked at the eight Class 8 Magical Beasts and snickered, “It’s your turn now. You’ve chased the great Nubis for

so long, so how should I deal with all of you?”

The hearts of the eight magical beasts tightened. Some of them immediately dropped their knees and bowed their heads.

An odd smile appeared across Nubis' face as he looked around at the eight magical beasts trapped in his silver thread. After a moment of thought, he said, “Whatever. You may have chased me halfway across the continent, but if that did not happen, it would have been impossible to draw out this old snake. Your lives may be spared, but there will still be punishment. From today on, I, the great Nubis, am your lord. Do you have any disagreements?”

Spared with their lives intact, the eight magical beasts beamed with joy. They all hurriedly exclaimed, “We thank the great Nubis for sparing our lives. From today on, we are willing to obey the great Nubis' commands.” They were extremely ecstatic. The punishment Nubis had mentioned did not seem like punishment at all in their eyes. Instead, it was a blessing that many large tribes dreamed of.

The brutality of the Beast God Continent surpassed the Tian Yuan Continent. Conflict would often occur between organizations with Class 8 Magical Beasts and the fall of clans was a common sight. Although they were protected by the three great experts of the continent, they never interfered with the conflict of others, because there were countless organizations of all different shapes and sizes in the territory they controlled. Even the destruction of a large organization would not garner too much attention.

However, Nubis was different. From their understanding, Nubis had just reached Class 9, yet he possessed strength greater than regular Class 9 Magical Beasts. He just happened to not be in control of any organizations, so if the eight of them yielded, they would become his first wave of power. They would naturally be particularly favored, allowing them to possess extraordinary statuses.

Nubis smiled in satisfaction. He waved his hand and said, “You can go. As for the clansmen back in your tribes, their lives have not been threatened. I’ve only knocked them out, so they should have awakened by now. Oh yeah, once you go back, don’t forget to raise a statue of me, the Great Nubis, in your tribes. The statue has to be made out of pure gold. Only that is suitable for my great status.”

The eight magical beasts all furiously nodded. They all raised their heads to look at Nubis carefully, burning his appearance into their minds.

After the eight of them had left, Nubis rolled up one of his wide sleeves. It immediately revealed his golden arm, and on his arm, a vague golden layer of light rotated on its surface. A special patterning covered his entire arm.

In detail, the special pattern was actually similar to scales, but they were not very similar to snake scales. They had not consolidated right now, so they were very blurry, as if they had not grown properly yet.

Chapter 1419: A Confident Nubis

Looking at the special, scale-like patterning on his arm, Nubis faintly smiled. He was rather excited as he murmured, “The essence of this old snake is even more intense than the Fourth Heavenly Layer Saint King’s I absorbed before. I feel like I’ve consumed some extremely effective medicine that has rejuvenated me, making my body undergo some extremely evident changes. My strength may still remain the same as before, but I feel like my battle prowess is even greater than before. This old snake must have devoured the essence of a few other clansmen in his life, which is why his essence is so intense.”

Nubis rolled his sleeve back down and his slightly-golden arm was immediately covered up. He looked up at the continent he had once yearned and feared for and murmured, “The Beast God Continent really is a great place. It’s a suitable habitat for magical beasts. There are definitely many more magical beasts in these lands than on the Tian Yuan Continent, but unfortunately, it’s no longer as attractive as it was to me now.

“And regarding that old snake, he must have stayed here for several millennia already. He may not have full control over every inch of land here, but with his strength, expanding his view across the entire continent shouldn’t be too difficult. Once Golden-Striped Silver Snakes appear on the continent, they definitely won’t be able to avoid his senses. Probably all the Golden-Striped Silver Snakes on this continent have already been killed by that old snake, so there’s no need for me to stay any longer either. Whatever, I’ll go look for Jian Chen on Three Saint Island.”

With that, Nubis shot off into the distance as a golden streak of light. He did not use a Space Gate and instead flew. He enjoyed the scenery along the way as he leisurely traveled toward Three Saint Island.

Once the eight Class 8 Magical Beasts returned to their clans,

they had discovered that it was indeed as Nubis had described. Their clansmen had not been harmed at all, only having been knocked out by the venomous gas he had sprayed. There was no threat to their lives whatsoever. All the clansmen who had been affected by the gas moved about energetically. Only a few weaker clansmen had not fully recovered, and their faces remained sheet-white.

However, the forests around their tribes had been reduced to dust by Nubis' venomous gas. Only a few thick, ancient trees stood where they were, having now shriveled and lost all signs of life.

However, the eight magical beasts completely ignored the destroyed vegetation around them. They were all overjoyed to see their clansmen completely fine. They all secretly thanked Nubis for his 'mercy' before immediately ordering their people to collect gold. In the end, they constructed a golden statue in the center of their tribes using a large quantity of gold.

The statue obviously depicted Nubis. He stood three hundred meters tall and had been personally carved by the Class 8 Magical Beasts, making him seem life-like.

In the blink of an eye, Jian Chen had already stayed on Three Saint Island for half a month. He spent more than half of that time beside Xiao Bao, guiding him through the cultivation process, passing on knowledge about everything, including battle skills and so on. He basically taught Xiao Bao everything he knew.

Xiao Bao was young, but he was a very sensible boy. He seemed to know that Jian Chen would be leaving soon, so he valued the time he spent with Jian Chen very much. He would take everything that Jian Chen told him to heart, diligently studying. He also worked very hard on his cultivation. Due to the vast amounts of resources available and because he did not need to comprehend the laws of the world for the lower layers of the Chaotic Body, Xiao Bao improved by leaps and bounds with every passing day. He had already reached the strength of a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler.

The divisions of the Innate Chaotic Body greatly differed from the divisions of the normal Chaotic Body. The Innate Chaotic Body only had four major realms, which were minor achievement, partial achievement, major achievement, and great perfection. It was unlike the Chaotic Body Jian Chen possessed, which required his chaotic neidan to be shattered a total of eighteen times and his strength would only increase by several cultivation levels only when each shattering occurred. As a result, it was extremely evident whenever Xiao Bao's strength increased slightly.

Jian Chen and the Heavenly Enchantress would have minor conversations from time to time as well. The topic of the conversations would always be about Xiao Bao, but his relationship with her had taken a slightly better turn as a result. Although the Heavenly Enchantress still behaved coldly toward Jian Chen, she no longer appeared unapproachable at the very least.

The Heavenly Enchantress had consumed the fifth grade Violet Cloud Peach and Comprehension Tea Leaves he had given her as well. He could clearly sense that she was even more powerful than before, but due to the fact that she followed a different path of cultivation, Jian Chen was unable to tell just what level she had reached unless they fought.

Other than that, Xiao Qian, Xiao Yue, and Qin Qin were familiar to Jian Chen as well, so they obviously received his assistance too. He gifted fifth grade Violet Cloud Peaches and Comprehension Tea Leaves to them, allowing their strength to greatly increase. Their increases of strength did not cause any seven-colored rainbow clouds, but the three of them, including Qin Qin, had all become Saint Kings. They also gained the ability to rip open Space Gates.

Normally, it would have been impossible for Qin Qin to become a Saint King, but she had absorbed slightly more energy from the immortal peaches than Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue, which was why she had reached Saint King in the end.

Soon after breaking through, Qin Qin bid farewell to Jian Chen

and the Heavenly Enchantress. She had been thinking about her family and home, so she left the island. Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue used the excuse of visiting their junior's home to leave with her. In the end, only Jian Chen, the Heavenly Enchantress, and Shangguan Aojian were left on the mountain. The mountain immediately became even more desolate even though many people did not reside on it in the first place.

The sun shone brightly and the seas were calm on this particular day. A golden streak of light shot over from the distant horizon, heading directly for Three Saint Island at an unbelievable speed.

“As a magical beast, I, the great Nubis, naturally have a weaker soul than humans. Even as a beast of antiquity, there's no changing that fact, which is why I was utterly helpless against that demoness' soul attacks, but my strength now is incomparable to the past. I am no longer that puny Class 7 Magical Beast. I'll definitely trample all over this demoness and pay her back for what happened in the past.” Nubis flew through the sky as he evilly smiled.

“Back when I was only Class 7, that demoness was only a Saint Ruler as well. Now that I've reached Class 9, equivalent to the Saint Emperors on the Tian Yuan Continent, it's impossible for that demoness to increase her strength as quickly as me. She might even still be at the same level as before. Her zither music won't be able to pose any threat to me at all. I wonder what her face will look like when she witnesses my strength. She'll definitely be very shocked. Hahaha...” Thinking up to there, Nubis could not help but laugh aloud. In his life, there had only been two people he had felt fear for. The first one was the old snake from the Beast God Continent while the other was obviously the Heavenly Enchantress.

Back when he had visited the island for the first time with Jian Chen, he had been scared away by the Heavenly Enchantress, not daring to set foot on the island again because the Heavenly

Enchantress' zither was just too terrifying. It made him feel like his body and soul had almost been taken by the music, leading to him forming an intense fear for the Heavenly Enchantress.

But now, with his increase in strength, this fear had vanished.

Chapter 1420: The Heavenly Enchantress' Strength

Nubis did not use a Space Gate, but he still flew very quickly. He fused with the surrounding space as he tore through the air while radiating a dazzling, golden light. He looked like a comet. He moved extremely quickly and silently toward the island.

When Nubis arrived a hundred kilometers away from the island, Jian Chen and Heavenly Enchantress sensed his arrival. Both of them gazed into the distance.

The Heavenly Enchantress' gaze was cold. She maintained a neutral expression with only some surprise flickering through her eyes.

Jian Chen faintly smiled instead. He glanced at Xiao Bao, who was cultivating in front of him, before standing up and making his way out.

With Nubis' speed, he crossed a hundred kilometers in a single moment. He appeared as a golden streak of light on the horizon very soon, approaching the island at an unbelievable speed. He soon descended to the island.

At this moment, Jian Chen took a step and traversed several hundred meters, appearing before Nubis. He examined him closely and said, "Your presence is quite stronger than before. You must have benefitted quite a lot from your trip to the Beast God Continent."

Nubis sniggered and proudly said, "Of course. When I, the great Nubis, personally set out, there's nothing that's impossible. This trip to the Beast God Continent has been extremely significant to me. I feel that my bloodline has become even purer after devouring that old snake's essence. Although there's no obvious mutation yet, I'm one step closer to the next mutation."

As soon as he finished speaking, Nubis seemed to realize something. He immediately looked at Jian Chen with a strange gaze and asked, “Jian Chen, what’s so important about Three Saint Island to cause you to stay so long on this tiny island? Has that demoness really caught your eye? Oh yeah, where is that demoness?” Nubis looked around and failed to find any traces of the Heavenly Enchantress. However, he jerked soon after and became filled with shock. He exclaimed, “What have I discovered!? A kid who’s not even ten actually has the strength of a Saint Ruler! I-is this real?” Before he could finish speaking, Nubis quickly flew toward the cave where Shangguan Aojian was cultivating as a blur.

Although Shangguan Aojian’s cave was several kilometers away, hidden by a winding path up the mountain, Nubis was still a Saint Emperor. There was nothing on the entire island that could be kept hidden from him. Unless someone was far more powerful than him, he would be able to sense them.

Jian Chen wanted to stop Nubis when he set off to where Shangguan Aojian was, but Jian Chen hesitated. He thought about how Shangguan Aojian’s identity could not remain hidden forever. In the end, he did not stop Nubis, only followed behind him.

Nubis moved very quickly, arriving outside Shangguan Aojian’s cave in the blink of an eye. Just when he wanted to enter, a purple figure blocked him in a flash, moving far faster than he did before. The Heavenly Enchantress in her purple dress and with her zither had suddenly appeared at the entrance of the cave, blocking Nubis’ way.

“Leave here immediately!” The Heavenly Enchantress coldly ordered Nubis away with her back facing him. Her curvy figure seemed very slender, but as she stood there, it seemed like no one could get past her. At that moment, her body seemed to have become a wall that had locked out the entire world, separating the interior of the cave from the exterior.

A gleam of light flashed through Nubis’ eyes. Although he could

sense that the Heavenly Enchantress' strength was slightly different than before, he could not see her exact strength. However, with his understanding, even if the Heavenly Enchantress had increased in strength, the increase would be very limited, not enough to threaten himself. As a result, he did not worry at all and loudly said, "Demoness, looks like your strength has increased by quite a bit from before. I, the great Nubis, have become slightly careless, which was why you managed to sneak before me. I may have feared you deeply in the past, but you're as weak as an ant to me now. If you're smart, move and don't block the way. I want to see that little guy inside."

The Heavenly Enchantress' gaze immediately grew cold when she heard Nubis refer to her as 'demoness.' A sliver of anger seemed to flicker through her eyes as she coldly responded without even looking back, "Three Saint Island does not welcome you. Leave immediately or..."

Before she could finish what she was saying, Nubis interrupted her. He sniggered, "Or what? You're going to attack me mercilessly? Come, come. I'll take all your attacks. I sure do want to see what you can do."

Jian Chen had also arrived by now. He stood in the distance as he watched. He did not go up to interfere and only looked at Nubis in sympathy. The Heavenly Enchantress had already ingested a fifth grade Violet Cloud Peach. Even Jian Chen was unsure how powerful she had become, but he was certain that she was far more than what Nubis could handle.

"Jian Chen, haven't you held feelings for this demoness for quite some time now? Don't worry, I'll help you with them. I'll capture this demoness right now and get her to accompany you in bed," Nubis loudly informed Jian Chen. He paid no attention to the faint killing intent that had appeared in the Heavenly Enchantress' eyes.

What Nubis said near the end seemed to have crossed the Heavenly Enchantress' bottom line.

Ding!

Almost at the same time Nubis had finished speaking, the Heavenly Enchantress struck a string. There was only a single note, but it seemed like a thunderous explosion when Nubis heard it. His body and soul trembled.

Nubis' face drastically changed. He stared at the Heavenly Enchantress as disbelief flooded his face. He was now a Saint Emperor; even though his soul could not be compared to the souls of human Saint Emperors, it was far more powerful, without any doubt, than his soul when he was still at Class 7. Yet right now, he had discovered that he still found it very difficult to resist the soul attacks of the Heavenly Enchantress even with his strengthened soul.

"Once I get you, I'd like to see how you play the zither!" Nubis made up his mind. Extending a finger, a strand of golden thread shot out with lightning-like speed, weaving into a net that loomed over the Heavenly Enchantress.

The Heavenly Enchantress' face was icy-cold. Her eyes seemed to flicker with darkness, enough to cause people to shiver. With just a single hand, she strummed the strings of her zither. The music she created was extremely pleasant, but it also seemed to be as deep as the sound of war drums. The sound seemed to change. As she struck every note, visible sound waves spread into the surroundings.

As soon as Nubis' net came into contact with the sound waves, it met a great resistance, unable to move any further after spreading out. It was even pushed back by the sound waves.

Nubis was thrown into absolute shock by that. The current situation was nowhere near the outcome he had expected. He had never thought that he would be at a disadvantage against the Heavenly Enchantress.

However, before Nubis could react, the Heavenly Enchantress'

playing posture changed. She played seven strings simultaneously, immediately producing seven pleasant but deep sounds. A sound wave formed with every string, kicking up ripples in the surrounding space.

When Nubis heard the seven notes, he violently jerked and immediately paled.

The seven notes seemed to explode in his head like thunder. When the fourth note exploded, he could not help but stagger back uncontrollably.

The fifth note made Nubis grunt. He became injured and had already staggered several dozen meters back.

The sixth note caused a stream of blood to flow from the corner of Nubis' lips and caused him to stagger to several hundred meters away.

The seventh note caused Nubis to throw up blood. His body trembled as his eyesight became blurry. He found it rather difficult to stay standing.

The Heavenly Enchantress' gaze remained icy-cold. Nubis had crossed her bottom line, so she clearly did not plan on letting him go so easily. She had already placed a finger on an eighth string and was about to strum it.

Jian Chen's face changed. He knew that the Heavenly Enchantress was very powerful, but he had never expected her strength to be so great. Nubis suffered a complete defeat with his strength as a Saint Emperor, which took him by complete surprise. Seeing how the Heavenly Enchantress still did not plan on letting Nubis go, he immediately cried out, "Stop, don't harm Nubis anymore!"

Jian Chen arrived before Nubis in a flash and supported him when he almost fell.

Chapter 1421: Visiting the Beast God Hall

“Since he’s humiliated me, he needs to pay the price. I won’t harm his life, but I definitely can’t let him off so easily,” the Heavenly Enchantress coldly replied. Her white hand struck her zither, and the zither immediately shot toward Jian Chen with a powerful pulse of energy.

As the zither shot out, it smashed through space, forming a pitch-black crack along its trajectory, which hung there like a black line. The strike had actually reached the level of Saint Emperors and was far more powerful than an attack from a regular Saint Emperor.

Even though the Heavenly Enchantress was best at using the music of the zither to fend off her opponents, her strength did not lie solely with the musical instrument. Even without her zither, she still possessed an extremely terrifying level of strength.

Jian Chen was stern. He dared not receive the Heavenly Enchantress’ attack carelessly. Even though he now possessed the strength to fight Receival experts, he needed to use the Azulet swords to do that. Without the swords, his strength would suffer. However, Jian Chen clearly did no need to use his swords against the zither that flew toward him.

A gleam of light flickered through Jian Chen’s eyes and Chaotic Force circulated within him. At the same time, a layer of dazzling white light condensed from the surroundings, enveloping him completely. Jian Chen was going to use the protection of the light from the Way of the Sword to handle an attack from the Heavenly Enchantress to avoid using the two swords.

When Jian Chen had completed his preparations, the zither arrived with tremendous energy. Jian Chen struck out with his right palm, which collided with the zither.

Bang!

The two collided and immediately erupted with a heavy sound. The two of them possessed great control over their power, so they prevented energy from shooting out and destroying the mountain, but the ground still cracked as the entire mountain shook gently.

The toughness of the Heavenly Enchantress' zither was just shocking. Jian Chen felt like his hand had struck extremely tough steel. The great force numbed his entire right hand and also made him retreat uncontrollably.

The zither came to a halt, having been stopped by Jian Chen. However, it did not return to the Heavenly Enchantress and instead remained in the air.

At this moment, Jian Chen caught the smell of a certain fragrance. The Heavenly Enchantress had appeared before Nubis with a purple flash, striking his chest with a gentle palm.

Her true intentions were only to teach Nubis a lesson. She had attacked Jian Chen with her zither only to keep him busy.

Nubis's soul had still yet to recover from the zither music. He stood there in a daze. His mind was still in a mess. As a result, he did not put up any defenses to protect himself from the Heavenly Enchantress' palm strike.

Being struck, his entire body was thrown far away, only falling out of the air several hundred meters away. He then rolled off a cliff, suffering a horrible outcome.

Jian Chen gently sighed as he watched Nubis roll down the mountain. He was filled with a sense of helplessness. Nubis could offend anyone he wanted except her, yet he just had to choose the Heavenly Enchantress, whose strength Jian Chen did not know, to offend. Nubis was just making trouble for himself.

Jian Chen did not go and help Nubis. He allowed him to roll down the mountain, crashing into rocks and rolling through bushes. With his body as a Class 9 Magical Beast, the collisions

would not be able to harm him at all. It would just reduce him to a complete mess and hurt his pride as a Saint Emperor.

However, Jian Chen became shocked by the strength that the Heavenly Enchantress had displayed. He believed that this was not all she had.

The Heavenly Enchantress left, carrying her zither with a sunken face and leaving Jian Chen standing where he was.

Nubis returned to his senses at the bottom of the mountain. He only suffered scratches, but his confidence had been shattered. He stood there in dejection as fear flooded the depths of his eyes.

He had even made up his mind about death as he gazed at the line of flat bushes where he rolled down the mountain.

“She’s a demoness, a demoness I say! A terrifying demoness!” Nubis no longer stayed any longer on the island. As soon as he had returned to his senses, he immediately fled. At the same time, he said to Jian Chen through a communication technique, “Brother, I’ll be leaving first. I’ll be waiting for you ten thousand kilometers away.”

Jian Chen shook his head with a helpless smile as he watched Nubis desperately flee. He returned to the cave to watch over Xiao Bao.

Jian Chen stayed a few more days on the island. After Xiao Bao had learned everything Jian Chen could pass on to him, Jian Chen understood it was time for him to leave.

The next day, Jian Chen bid farewell to Xiao Bao and the Heavenly Enchantress. He left behind another great pile of heavenly resources, for Xiao Bao’s cultivation needs, before leaving the island. He flew toward the vast sea.

Jian Chen had left ten fifth grade Violet Cloud Peaches for the two of them and the same number of Comprehension Tea Leaves. The amount was enough to last them five hundred years.

“Daddy, you have to come visit me soon. I’ll be waiting for you here,” Xiao Bao demanded as he waved at Jian Chen from the mountain.

He did not receive a response from his father. Jian Chen had already vanished into the horizon.

The Heavenly Enchantress gazed in the direction Jian Chen had disappeared in in a daze. Her emotions were mixed as she thought about something.

Ten thousand kilometers away, Jian Chen reunited with Nubis. Although it had been several days already, Nubis still seemed rather dispirited, clearly still hung up on the shock he had received a few days ago.

“Jian Chen, I, the great Nubis, swear that I am never returning to Three Saint Island again. I never want to see that demoness ever again.” Nubis fumed and made a promise as soon as he saw Jian Chen. Nubis would never forget everything that had happened a few days ago, now forever etched in his head. When he had returned from the Beast God Continent earlier, he had been teeming with pride and confidence, yet he had suffered horribly.

Jian Chen became stunned by what he heard before breaking into laughter, “I want to pay a visit to the Beast God Continent. Do you want to come along?”

Nubis was surprised. His interest was immediately piqued as he responded, “The Beast God Continent? For the Beast God Hall? You want the young Winged Tiger God to enter the Beast God Hall for the legacy?”

“Yes,” Jian Chen replied firmly as if it was nothing.

“Hehe, I’ve never seen the Beast God Hall before, so I might as well go with you this time. Even if we get surrounded by the three Class 9 Magical Beasts when the time comes, there’s no need for me to fear,” Nubis chuckled.

It would obviously be better the sooner Jian Chen went to the Beast God Hall, so he clearly did not fly there leisurely while enjoying the scenery like what Nubis had done before. He got Nubis to create a Space Gate that connected to the center of the Beast God Continent. Then the two of them vanished through it.

Chapter 1422: Legacy of the Beast God (One)

The Beast God Hall stood in the very center of the Beast God Continent. A majestic hall hung ten thousand meters in the air, radiating with a brilliant glow. The structure was extremely large, stretching ten thousand meters in length, width, and height. It seemed like a small city.

The divine hall was named the Beast God Hall. It possessed an irreplaceable position on the Beast God Continent because it had been created in the ancient times by the Winged Tiger God using the essence of the earth. It had become a holy land for all the magical beasts on the Beast God Continent as well as the place where the experts of the continent cultivated.

The divine hall possessed ninety-nine floors. Each floor was a hundred meters tall with a huge area. Aside from the ninety-ninth floor, where no one has ever set foot in, the other floors were occupied by the ninety-eight strongest people of the continent. The top three floors were where the three Class 9 experts of the continent cultivated.

However, after the battle against the World of Forsaken Saints, the Beast God Continent had suffered heavy losses. Many of the ninety-nine floors had become empty, over two-thirds of all the floors.

A person sat on the ninety-sixth, ninety-seventh, and ninety-eighth floors of the structure. They were the three Saint Emperors of the Beast God Continent, the tiger emperor, peng emperor, and Kaiser.

However, the three of them were all sickly pale. Their faces were haggard, bearing weakness. The three of them had been severely injured in the battle against the World of Forsaken Saints. Without the help of a Radiant Saint Master, it was impossible for them to recover in such a short amount of time even as Class 9 Magical

Beasts.

But, at this very moment, the three experts suddenly opened their eyes simultaneously. They stared in the same direction. Their gazes seemed to be able to pierce through the obstructions of the divine hall and clearly see the world outside.

At the same time, the calm space a hundred kilometers from the divine hall suddenly began to ripple. A Space Gate rapidly formed and Nubis and Jian Chen emerged together, by each other's sides.

The two of them hovered ten thousand meters in the air, allowing them to see far. Even though the continent was riddled with mountains, they could still see the grand divine hall in the distance a hundred kilometers away.

“Is this the Beast God Hall? Although I’m a magical beast, this is the first time I’ve seen the divine hall that holds a supreme status in the hearts of all magical beasts,” Nubis mumbled as he stared at the divine hall in the distance. He had come to the continent before, but since he feared the three Saint Emperors, he had chosen to not set foot here.

Jian Chen also examined the divine hall with his eyes. Each side of the Beast God Hall was the same length, like a cube. It was clearly different from all the other divine halls he had come across before.

However, Jian Chen could clearly sense the pulse of an extremely terrifying energy within the divine hall despite the special exterior. He felt shocked by how powerful it was.

“This Beast God Hall is definitely much more powerful than the sea goddess’ divine hall,” Jian Chen thought. At that moment, he could not help but compare the divine hall to the supreme divine hall in Mercenary City.

The Beast God Hall had been constructed by one of the four ancient champions, the Winged Tiger God, while the supreme

divine hall in Mercenary City had been left behind by the greatest human expert, Mo Tianyun. The two divine halls both held an extraordinary significance to their respective continents. They were the greatest creations of the magical beasts and humans.

“I may have gone to the divine hall left behind by senior Mo Tianyun in the past, but I was too weak back then. Although I could sense how extraordinary the divine hall was, I was unable to see the exact details of the divine hall clearly,” Jian Chen thought. He could not help but imagine the floating divine hall he had met Tian Jian in.

Jian Chen and Nubis flew toward the Beast God Hall together, but before they could approach the structure, three figures simultaneously flew out of it. They glanced over the two of them.

The three of them were the greatest experts on the Beast God Continent. Aside from the Saint Emperor of the Peng clan, Cangqiong, who faintly smiled, Kaiser and Lankyros both revealed extremely sunken faces. They were quite a horrifying sight.

If Jian Chen had been the same as before, he would have been smashed to a pulp just because he was a human, regardless of his disagreements with the two Saint Emperors. However, strength had given Jian Chen the power to look down on the world. Even though they had once fallen out with Jian Chen, Kaiser and Lankyros could say nothing and only fume as they watched Jian Chen swagger toward the divine hall. They could not afford to take him on as an opponent.

“So it’s sovereign Jian Chen. I represent the Beast God Continent when I welcome sovereign Jian Chen. If there is anything we can assist you with, please tell us,” Cangqiong clasped his hands at Jian Chen with a smile. He was neither arrogant nor humble. He then glanced at Kaiser and Lankyros and seemed to take pleasure in their suffering.

Jian Chen possessed quite a good impression of the peng emperor

and even felt some admiration for him, because he was the only Saint Emperor who had not become involved with Xiao Bai's matters. He had not taken part in making things difficult for Jian Chen during the fight for the Saints' Fruit in the Death Nest and was the only one who had put his life on the line and battled to the end when they had fended off the foreign world.

Jian Chen and Cangqiong greeted each other amicably. Afterward, Jian Chen turned his eyes to Kaiser and Lankyros and faintly smiled, "Looking at your reaction, the two of you don't seem to welcome me very much."

The two of them clenched their jaws as they stood there with dark faces. Even though they were utterly furious because of Jian Chen's arrival and did not welcome him at all, they dared not to say anything. It was even more impossible for them to yield to Jian Chen because they were the supreme experts of their races. They possessed their pride.

Nubis immediately sneered when he saw them. He took a step forward and said, "Sirs, do you really not welcome the two of us? According to the rules of the Beast God Continent, do you want to chase us away?" As he said that, a tremendous presence radiated from Nubis. He had exposed his 9th Class strength.

The three magical beasts all revealed different expressions and finally turned their gazes away from Jian Chen to Nubis. They had placed all their attention on Jian Chen before and unintentionally ignored Nubis' existence. Only now did they discover in shock that Nubis was also a Class 9 Magical Beast.

Kaiser and Lankryos looked at each other. They could see the helplessness and the grievances within each other's eyes. They had both trampled over others in the past, but this had never happened to them before. Their greatest enemy had come to their lair, yet they dared not to say a single word, afraid of creating a disaster.

"There naturally is nothing that can obstruct your way, but you

cannot enter the Beast God Hall,” Lankyros said reluctantly. His complexion was extremely unnatural.

Chapter 1423: Legacy of the Beast God (Two)

“The Beast God Hall was left behind by the Winged Tiger God in ancient times. There are a total of ninety-nine floors, and the ninety-ninth floor can only be entered by a Winged Tiger God. It’s said that the legacy of the ancient Winged Tiger God is there, but after all these years, no one has ever set foot there, which is why the ninety-ninth floor has always been sealed off. The only way there is through the ninety-eighth floor.” Cangqiong explained from one side.

Kaiser’s face darkened even more. The gaze he shot toward the peng emperor hid deep killing intent. He obviously knew why Jian Chen had come to the Beast God Hall. He had killed the young Winged Tiger God’s father in the past, so he had already become a permanent enemy of the Winged Tiger God. If he ended up receiving the legacy, Kaiser would end up dead for sure.

This was because the Winged Tiger God would definitely take revenge on him for killing his father.

“I thank senior for the explanation,” Jian Chen clasped his hands at Cangqiong before making his way to the divine hall.

“Stop! As a human, you cannot set foot in the supreme Beast God Hall. Otherwise, you would be committing blasphemy against the entire continent. You would be treading over the dignity of the entire continent,” Lankyros said with a horrible complexion.

“Come at me if you want to stop me,” Jian Chen coldly replied. He walked toward the Beast God Hall with firm strides. He had no intention of stopping. Nubis followed beside him excitedly.

Kaiser and Lankyros watched Jian Chen rapidly move further away as they gritted their teeth. In the end, they could only helplessly watch as Jian Chen entered the ninety-eighth floor of the Beast God Continent. They no longer possessed enough strength to stop Jian Chen now.

Cangqiong gazed at Kaiser and Lankyros before gently sighing inside. He then followed Jian Chen and Nubis into the ninety-eighth floor of the Beast God Hall.

Kaiser and Lankyros were left standing where they were with dark expressions. Their eyes flickered uneasily, and they did not follow Jian Chen into the divine hall.

“The two of us are nowhere near Jian Chen’s opponent even if we work together. Jian Chen has not claimed our life, but there’s still the young Winged Tiger God. As long as Jian Chen is present, we can’t do anything to it, and once it reaches the 9th Class through the legacy of the Beast God, we won’t be its opponent even if we work together,” Lankyros said through a communication technique. He felt very heavy-hearted.

Kaiser silently pondered for a while before responding, “We’ve had some disagreements with Jian Chen in the past, but they haven’t reached the point where we can’t reconcile with Jian Chen. At the same time, we’ve contributed in the battle against the World of Forsaken Saints, which is why Jian Chen has not killed us. However, the Winged Tiger God is different. After all, its father was technically killed by us, so the Winged Tiger God’s enmity for us has already reached a point of no return. It’s just a pity that we still can’t control the Beast God Hall, or dealing with Jian Chen would have been easy. We can only leave the Beast God Continent now.”

“The world is only so big. An Origin realm expert will not find it difficult to find us, so where can we run to?” Lankyros asked.

“We can conceal our tracks, where even Jian Chen would need some time to find us. And I believe, soon, the next wave of attacks from the World of Forsaken Saints will arrive. Jian Chen may be very powerful, but he’s definitely not the opponent of the sovereigns from the World of Forsaken Saints. Who knows if he and the Winged Tiger God can survive the next battle. As long as they die, there’s no need for us to remain in fear. However, we

need to find a place to hide ourselves until then. The best place right now would be to hide in the most dangerous place of the Tian Yuan Continent, the Death Nest!” Kaiser gnashed his teeth as grievances filled his eyes. He had never ever thought that a day like this would come in the past, where he would be forced to leave the Beast God Continent and the region he ruled over.

“We should not tarry. Let’s leave right now!”

Kaiser and Lankyros concealed their presences and carefully left. They were afraid Jian Chen would detect their departure.

However, what they did not know was that as soon as they had begun to move, Jian Chen suddenly turned his head in their direction while the Beast God Hall. He had already discovered their intentions.

“Jian Chen, those Class 9 Magical Beasts owe a blood debt to that little tiger of yours. Are you just going to let them leave?” Nubis asked Jian Chen, clearing sensing their departure as well.

“Xiao Bai’s the Winged Tiger God after all. There’s no need for us to interfere with avenging his father. Once Xiao Bai truly matures, he’ll need to take revenge personally and kill his enemies,” Jian Chen said in a deep voice. He was not afraid of Kaiser and Lankyros disappearing. This world was not particularly vast to Origin realm experts.

“Since they’ve already left, that would be equivalent to abandoning their positions in the Beast God Hall. The ninety-sixth and ninety-eighth floors are now without owners. Jian Chen, there’s still some wealth that they’ve left behind. It all belongs to you now,” Cangqiong said. He was amazed. Back then, Kaiser and Lankyros had lead the experts of the continent to attack the Tian Yuan Continent. Jian Chen was forced to leave his home and seek refuge in the sea realm in the end.

Yet now, Jian Chen had forced Kaiser and Lankyros into abandoning their positions on the Beast God Continent to flee.

This really was karma.

“There’s no hurry. Let’s get Xiao Bai to enter the ninety-ninth floor for the legacy first. We can search through the items they’ve left behind afterward,” Jian Chen said as he leisurely made his way through the ninety-eighth floor. He was amazed because the energy of the world on that floor was extremely dense. It seemed to be a hundred times denser than the energy outside, even denser than the miniature worlds of the protector clans.

“No wonder the Beast God Continent had three Saint Emperors while the humans only had one, who had only managed to break through by coming up with a cultivation path himself. Looks like all the mysteries are explained here. If you cultivate for long periods of time in the Beast God Hall, the rate at which you can cultivate is incomparable to the outside world,” Jian Chen thought.

Cangqiong lead the way for Jian Chen as they made their way to the entrance of the ninety-ninth floor. Although Cangqiong had always stayed on the ninety-seventh floor, he had a rough understanding of the layout of every floor, which was why he was familiar with the ninety-eighth floor.

Jian Chen passed through many corridors under Cangqiong’s lead before finally arriving at the entrance to the top floor.

The entrance was not a flight of stairs, but an extremely complicated teleportation formation.

Chapter 1424: Legacy of the Beast God

(Three)

The teleportation formation was extremely large. It was fifty meters wide and had been carved into the ground. It seemed extremely mysterious. Even though it had not been activated, it seemed like it was constantly spinning. If someone placed their attention on it, they would feel a sudden force from the formation tug at their soul, as if they were about to be sucked into the formation.

Jian Chen examined the formation for some time and gradually became stern. He had seen teleportation formations before and had even obtained one from the divine hall of the Underworld sect. However, all the teleportation formations he had seen in the past were not as mysterious as the one in the Beast God Hall.

Even Jian Chen felt dizzy if he stared at the formation for too long. He felt extremely shocked by this fact.

After all, his soul was far more powerful than it had ever been in the past, yet it was not strong enough to discover the mysteries of the teleportation formation. This could only mean that the quality of the teleportation formation was unbelievable.

“Looks like this is the teleportation formation leading to the ninety-ninth floor. I’ve only learned about the existence of this formation from some ancient records. This is my first time seeing it as well,” Cangqiong stared at the formation before him in interest, before sighing emotionally.

“The records say that there is a supreme killing formation hidden within the teleportation formation, which will kill any person who tries to touch or destroy it, no matter how powerful they are. Even if they’ve reached the apex in this world, they won’t be able to withstand a single attack from the formation, dying in an instant. The killing formation will activate as soon as the teleportation

formation is activated. Only the Winged Tiger God can survive the killing formation,” Cangqiong continued. The gaze he used to look at the formation with contained some surprise and doubt.

“What if an Origin realm expert steps into it?” Jian Chen asked.

Cangqiong frowned slightly with that. After a moment of thought, he said, “The records say that even those who have attained the very apex of the world will be killed in a single strike. I wonder if it’s referring to Saint Emperor or the Origin realm. If it includes the Origin realm, it probably has the terrifying power to kill Origin realm experts.”

Nubis laughed in uncertainty when he heard that. He said, “Who passed down this information in the ancient records? He’s actually described this formation as being so powerful that it can even kill Origin realm sovereigns.”

“Of course it’s the ancient Winged Tiger God,” responded Cangqiong.

Nubis was stunned by the answer and immediately became much sterner.

“This teleportation formation can only be activated by the bloodline of the Winged Tiger God. Jian Chen, please let out the Winged Tiger God. It can only rely on itself for what will happen next. No one can help it,” said Cangqiong. He was the only Saint Emperor who had protected Xiao Bai among the three from the continent.

The white tiger had awakened from cultivation several days ago and had learned from Jian Chen that he was taking him to the Beast God Hall for the legacy of the beast god. As a result, the tiger had spent the past few days waiting for Jian Chen to bring him news in the artifact space.

Jian Chen immediately contacted the artifact spirit in order to let out Xiao Bai. Jian Chen had gotten him to stay within the artifact

space because he wanted to prevent any schemes that Kaiser may have planned in the Beast God Hall from occurring.

With a flash of golden light, the white tiger appeared within the Beast God Hall. It could control its size as it wished, so it was only a meter-long tiger right now. It was covered with snow-white fur that let out a hazy, white glow. Powerful pulses of energy could be clearly sensed from every strand of its fur, as if any single hair on its body could easily be used as a weapon.

Its two wings were tightly furled on its back. They were covered with a simple patterning, appearing extremely ordinary yet also seemingly hiding deep mysteries of the world within them.

This time, Rum Guinness, who had remained in seclusion for many years in the artifact space, emerged as well. Over the past few years, her strength had undergone an overwhelming change as well. She had only been a Class 7 Magical Beast in the past, but she had reached the 8th Class now and was at the Seventh Heavenly Layer.

Rum Guinness' strength could increase so much in such short time obviously because of the Comprehension Tea and a Violet Cloud Peach.

Cangqiong obviously recognized the mother of the Winged Tiger God. He nodded his head at her amicably before turning his attention away from her. His gaze became fixated on the Winged Tiger God.

“We magical beasts can assume a human form as soon as we reach the 7th Class. Some unique species don't even need to reach the 7th Class to assume a human form. I never thought that the Winged Tiger God would still be in a beast form despite reaching the 8th Class now. The records say that the ancient Winged Tiger God always appeared before its people in its beast form. Does that mean that the Winged Tiger God can never assume a human form?” Cangqiong murmured to himself. A sliver of doubt and

confusion appeared in his eyes.

The white tiger gazed at the teleportation formation ahead before looking at Jian Chen and Rum Guinness. Its gaze was filled with reliance and closeness. It did not enter the teleportation formation immediately.

Jian Chen rubbed the white tiger's furry head out of habit and his gaze became gentle. He said softly, "Xiao Bai, this is a fortuitous encounter that belongs to you. It will all be up to you, so get through the upcoming journey. We cannot give you any support at all. Go, go and accept the legacy that belongs to you. You will have to take revenge for the death of your father yourself."

"Child, your father is looking over you from heaven. You must not disappoint your father. You have to obtain the legacy of the great beast god." Rum Guinness' eyes were brimming with tears as she emotionally added encouragement.

The white tiger's gaze immediately became determined when it saw the tears pool in its mother's eyes. It let out a deep growl, turned around, and walked toward the teleportation formation.

The formation had been activated by a drop of the white tiger's blood. It immediately began to shine with a dazzling white light, enveloping the white tiger.

At the same time, the killing formation hidden within it appeared. It separated the space of the formation from the outside world and a terrifying glow of death descended. The glow enveloped the entire space of the formation.

Jian Chen's face abruptly changed when the glow of death appeared. The light made him feel like the world was ending. At that moment, he even felt that if the light made it outside, it was enough to annihilate the entire world or cleave the entire universe into two. It seemed like the entire world and universe could not withstand a single attack from the light.

Chapter 1425: Legacy of the Beast God

(Four)

At that moment, Jian Chen could not help but recall the Spiritking. If he compared the Spiritking to the glow of death, the outcome would have shocked Jian Chen because the Spiritking would not have been able to endure it at all. He would have been completely annihilated by the light in the end.

“The war god Aergyns once said that the Winged Tiger God had surpassed the limitations of a lifespan and is able to live as long as the world exists. That’s a representation of Godhood. Is he at Godhood?” Jian Chen asked himself. He was greatly astounded by the terrifying light.

He finally believed that the ancient records did not exaggerate anything at all. As soon as something that was not another Winged Tiger God had activated the formation, they would have been annihilated, even if they had reached the apex of the world in this world.

This apex was not referring to peak Saint Emperor but the Origin realm.

Cangqiong and Nubis also revealed drastically different expressions as well. They could obviously sense how terrifying the killing formation was. Just tiniest bit of presence that had managed to leak out made them shiver inside. If they had to take the full brunt of the formation...

They could no longer imagine the final outcome.

Rum Guinness suffered even more than them. She stumbled back several dozen steps and became utterly pale. Shock and fear filled her face.

“The Way of Slaughter. This Winged Tiger God has actually comprehended the Way of Slaughter to such a profound level. He’s

not of this world. Just who is he? Does he come from..." At the same time, the sword spirits softly murmured to themselves as well. They were very stern.

The terrifying glow of death descended from the sky and only swept through the area enclosed by the formation. It seemed like it was destroying everything in the formation, but when it landed on the white tiger, its body harness passed through. In the end, the glow of death completely vanished after it reached the edge of the formation.

At the same time, the teleportation formation had completely charged up. It sent the white tiger away. A few cracks followed as the huge teleportation formation on the ground shattered.

The white tiger discovered that it had actually arrived in a sea of stars after leaving the ninety-eighth floor of the Beast God Hall. The stars covered the area as far as it could see, countless galaxies shined down. Huge meteors would swoop by from time to time at unbelievable speeds in the vast space, either disappearing into the distance or colliding into huge planets in the end.

"Slaughter rules over life. It reigns supreme above all life forms and moves through the fates of all life..."

At this moment, a tremendous voice rang through the void, reverberating in the white tiger's ears like a huge bell.

"To comprehend the great Way of Slaughter, you must first comprehend the source of life, which is known by the extreme Yin that gives birth to Yang and the extreme Yang that gives birth to Yin. The opposite is obtained when approaching the extremities. The Way of Slaughter is death while the origins of life is birth. If death and life become one, there will definitely be conflict. Only by balancing the two can you attain the true way."

Suddenly, the landscape before the white tiger changed. A huge planet had appeared. It was covered with wastelands but lingered in a deathly silence. There were no signs of life at all.

There, the white tiger seemed to experience the endless flow of time, but it felt like the blink of an eye at the same time. After a period of time that even the white tiger did not know how long had passed, a few interesting phenomena gradually appeared on the huge planet after alternating between Yin and Yang. These phenomena all originated from the rocks or natural climate of the planet, all forming odd lifeforms in the end. Some were formed from rock, others were formed from rain, and there were even some formed from the wind.

From then on, the dead planet had gained its first forms of life.

After another length of time that the white tiger could not fathom, vegetation gradually appeared on the planet. After countless revolutions around the sun, the vegetation attained self-awareness, becoming another odd form of life. After countless years, the lifeforms of rock, vegetation, rain, and wind all evolved differently. They formed various powerful races, and the planet brimmed with life.

Among these races, the white tiger had discovered the beasts that it was extremely familiar with. During that period of time, the life of the planet had reached utmost prosperity.

However, a cataclysm descended at this very moment. A terrifying rain of fire descended from the sky, punching countless holes into the planet. The entire planet was devastated. Mountains and earth cracked, huge tidal waves were kicked up, and lava shot into the air, leading to the extinction of all life.

In the blink of an eye, the planet teeming with life had fallen back into silence. There were no signs of life.

The planet began to settle down, and after countless more years, it gave birth to another wave of life. Gradually, vegetation reappeared, and the planet slowly made its way back to its former glory.

When the planet had become prosperous once more, a huge

meteorite fell from the sky, smashing into the earth. It immediately caused the planet to fall apart. The powerful force had wiped out all life.

The huge planet had been reduced to several smaller planets now, which floated silently in the vastness of space.

But, after even more time, new waves of life appeared on the smaller planets, but they were all met with extinction in the end. Some of the extinction events were caused by objects from outer space while others were caused by the lifeforms themselves. It seemed like an endless cycle, a story.

The white tiger watched this silently as confusion filled its eyes. However, time seemed to move extremely quickly in outer space. In the blink of an eye, countless more years had passed, and this occurred time and time again. Life and death replaced each other. The initial confusion in the white tiger's eyes finally vanished after countless years, and they began to brighten up. Through the light, it seemed to have understood and comprehended something.

“The end of life is death, while death is the birth of life. Once life reaches its peak, approaching its extremity, the opposite will occur. At the same time, once death reaches its extremity, there are chances that life will appear as well. Life and death are like Yin and Yang. They must coexist harmoniously and cannot turn on one another.” The white tiger had understood that truth. At that moment, it sensed its soul rapidly grow as it underwent a qualitative change.

“To understand life and death is to comprehend the true essence of life and death and to obtain its source.” The great voice boomed once more, causing the entire universe to tremble.

The white tiger felt the world spin, and when it woke up once again, it discovered itself on a planet teeming with life. It had become a stalk of medicinal herbs growing in a forest.

He was eventually harvested by a herbalist and was used to make

a bowl of medicinal soup to save someone from death's door. His life had ended to save another.

After that, the white tiger became a human, a bird, a beast, and all the various plants in the forests and mountains. He experienced life and death time and time again as he comprehended the true essence of life and death in order to obtain its source.

With every life and every death, it felt like a cycle. Every life and death he experienced seemed like a cumulative deposit of knowledge. Gradually, he understood more and more and his understanding of life and death deepened.

Finally, after countless lives and deaths, after countless cycles, he understood the true essence of life and death and obtained its source.

Chapter 1426: Sacredfeathered Tiger Emperors

His soul rapidly grew once more, undergoing a drastic metamorphosis. Two specks of light had appeared in his soul as it strengthened. These were seeds, the sources of life and death he had obtained after comprehending their true essence. One represented death, the other represented life.

The illusion ended. The planet beneath the white tiger vanished and the cosmos shattered. When he saw the landscape around him, he discovered that he had returned to the Beast God Hall.

This floor was extremely different from the ninety-eighth floor. A statue of a white tiger with two wings stood in the center of the room. Its wings were completely unfurled. They seemed to be able to blot out the sky and rip through worlds.

A hundred-meter-tall platform stood at the end of the floor. The platform only possessed a single throne. There was nothing else on the floor aside from the statue, platform, and throne.

“The second Sacredfeathered Tiger Emperor, you have finally come. I have waited for this day for a very long time.” At this moment, a voice filled with vigor rang out. Beside the white tiger, a man in white clothes hovered a meter from the ground. He shone with a gentle, white light, obscuring his appearance.

The white tiger let out a deep growl as he observed the man in interest. However, he sensed an extremely close presence radiating from the man.

“Correct, I am that Winged Tiger God that appeared in ancient times. However, the Winged Tiger God is only a name given to us by others. Our true identities are Sacredfeathered Tiger Emperors, also known as White Tiger Emperors.”

“Sacredfeathered Tiger Emperors are given birth to by the world.

Our lives are bestowed to us by the world, but unlike natural spirits, we are born from the various organisms in the world. Sacredfeathered Tiger Emperors are true rulers. We possess the greatest bloodlines in the world, and it's rare for even a single one to appear in ten million years. We possess potential that has been bestowed on us by the world, directly comparable to the ancestral dragons. We are existences that can become Grand Exalts.

"I was the first Sacredfeathered Tiger Emperor to be born in the past eight million years. My home is not here but an extremely distant place. I love my home very much, but I had to leave my beloved home in the end...

"Back when I had come to this world for the first time, my soul fused with the world and resonated with it during one of my comprehensions. I witnessed the source of the world for the first time, which forecasted that a second Sacredfeathered Tiger Emperor would be born here within a million years. I left my legacy here to provide assistance to the future clansmen.

"The Sacredfeathered Tiger Emperor is unquestionably the emperor of white tigers. It's rare for them to appear within even ten million years, yet a second one was going to appear in another million year. It has disproven the past, representing the descent of an unprecedented age of prosperity."

The man in white clothes slowly made his way to the white tiger before gently rubbing his head. He continued, "This is a clone that I left behind with a fragment of my soul. It has existed since ancient times, so it cannot last much longer and will disperse soon. You will properly comprehend the Way of Slaughter here, second Sacredfeathered Tiger Emperor. Only when you have truly mastered the basics can you leave. We will meet again."

The white tiger looked at the man and produced a deep roar. Determination filled its eyes.

"This world has already been sealed, preventing anyone from

reaching the Origin realm. However, it cannot seal natural spirits of the world, nor can it seal the powerful bloodline of Sacredfeathered Tiger Emperors, so nothing can obstruct you from reaching the Origin realm. Once you become powerful enough, go to the higher world with your companions. You can learn about that place from your friend...

“Grow well, second Sacredfeathered Tiger Emperor. We may possess a powerful bloodline that directly rivals the ancestral dragons, giving us the possibility to become Great Exalts, but we have been born in a prosperous age. Powerful experts will definitely stand in great numbers in the future, so we must stand hand-in-hand and kill our way back to our home together...

“I am about to disperse. Proceed to the throne and accept the legacy...”

As he uttered the final sentence, the man turned into countless specks of light and dispersed. In the blink of an eye, the ninety-ninth floor of the Beast God Hall fell silent.

The white tiger stared in the direction the man had stood in a daze. Only after quite a while did he finally turn his eyes to the throne up ahead. He then began to slowly make his way over.

As soon as he leaped onto the throne, the entire Beast God Hall violently trembled. At that moment, the terrifying energy hidden within the divine hall began to move about violently. It gathered from all directions, surging toward the mysterious ninety-ninth floor.

The white tiger's body violently jerked before he closed his eyes and collapsed on the throne. He entered a deep state of cultivation. All the energy that had gathered on the floor poured into the throne. The brutal, terrifying energy, filled with the presence of death, became gentle after it was funneled through the throne. It allowed the white tiger's strength to grow at an unbelievable rate.

At the same time, the white tiger's consciousness had drifted off

into another world. There, he began to comprehend the Way of Slaughter left behind by the other Winged Tiger God. In his soul, the two specks of light, which represented the sources of life and death, flickered. They gradually swelled as the white tiger comprehended the Way of Slaughter.

The movements of the divine hall alerted all the magical beasts cultivating there. The energy within the divine hall wildly churned, forming a terrifying pressure. Even the Class 8 Magical Beasts found it difficult to endure and some of the ones still injured from the battle against the World of Forsaken Saints vomited blood. Their wounds deepened.

“What’s happening? Why is there such a terrifying pressure in the Beast God Hall...”

“The energy in the divine hall is unstable. Something’s happened. Something abnormal has happened to the divine hall...”

“Oh no, the pressure is rapidly strengthening. At this rate, we’ll be injured by the pressure sooner or later. We need to leave immediately...”

At that moment, all the powerful magical beasts cultivating in the Beast God Hall revealed drastically different expressions. They flew out of the hall, shocked and confused. They hovered in the sky outside as they stared at the huge divine hall.

“Everyone, please do not panic. The great beast god has returned and has entered the mysterious ninety-ninth floor for its legacy. The abnormality of the divine hall is due to his return.”

An ancient but energetic voice boomed from the sky. Cangqiong, Jian Chen, Rum Guinness, and Nubis had all left the ninety-eighth floor as well. They currently hovered outside and looked down on everyone.

when

Xiao Bai

emerge



Chapter 1427: Done For

The Class 8 Magical Beasts that had emerged from the divine hall all looked up when they heard a voice. When they gazed at Cangqiong, their eyes were filled with respect. This was the respect directed at a Class 9 expert.

However, when they heard that the great Winged Tiger God had entered the ninety-ninth floor of the Beast God Hall to accept his legacy, their emotions leaked onto their faces.

The Winged Tiger God was the god of the magical beasts. He had left behind a permanent influence in ancient times. However, this influence had weakened with the passage of time, which was why very few magical beasts still treated the Winged Tiger God as a god. Two of their rulers had even become interested in replacing the Winged Tiger God.

However, the world currently faced the threat of the World of Forsaken Saints. They had all personally witnessed the power of the foreign world. The foreign world was impossible to stop without Origin realm experts. The war god of the Hundred Races had already returned, the humans had Jian Chen, and the sea realm had the sea goddess. Three of the four great races in this world possessed Origin realm experts. Only the magical beasts were lacking an expert. The magical beasts, which were originally stronger than the Hundred Races and humans, became the weakest race in a single stroke.

As a result, all the magical beasts were extraordinarily moved by the return of the Winged Tiger God in their time of need.

A part of them did not become emotional because the Winged Tiger God was the ancient beast god but because its existence allowed them to maintain their former position among the four races. Very few people still worshipped the Winged Tiger God as a god.

Cangqiong's voice rang out once more, "Today, I will be announcing a significant matter. Two of the three rulers of our Beast God Continent, Kaiser and the tiger emperor, have attempted to harm the great beast god in the past and have now fled because of their crimes. They have left the Beast God Hall. From today on, they are no longer a part of us. I declare that the tiger emperor Lankyros and Kaiser are now wanted people. Once their tracks have been found, you must report them."

What Cangqiong said immediately caused quite a large commotion. The Beast God Continent had been split into three territories. Kaiser, the tiger emperor, and Cangqiong all governed one of the territories, as they were the most powerful existences on the continent. Yet now, Cangqiong had actually issued a warrant for the arrest of the two other rulers, which immediately shocked everyone.

However, no one dared to voice any objections. Right now, the disappearance of the two rulers had already explained some matters. At the same time, the Winged Tiger God had already begun to accept its legacy. They all understood that their loyalty no longer lay with the three rulers from before but with the great beast god.

As a result, even the Class 8 Magical Beasts that had belonged to the tiger emperor and Kaiser remained silent due to this special situation.

Cangqiong looked at Jian Chen and the seriousness on his face disappeared. He said to Jian Chen with a smile, "Sovereign Jian Chen, I am unsure when the Winged Tiger God will finish accepting its legacy. Why don't you stay at the Beast God Hall over the next few days? I'll be able to perform my duties as a host that way."

Jian Chen silently pondered the offer before rejecting Cangqiong's urgings to stay. He too had no idea when the white tiger would finish accepting its legacy. It was fine if it was only a

few days, but he could not afford to wait if it took several years or even longer. He had a lot of matters to attend to. The white tiger was safe on the ninety-ninth floor.

Jian Chen returned to the Beast God Hall under Cangqiong's lead. He went through the floors where Kaiser and Lankyros stayed and found their treasuries. He took away everything that caught his eye.

Jian Chen found a large number of high class monster cores in the two treasuries as well as a few Ruler Armaments and King Armaments that they had collected. Jian Chen even found a complete Saint Tier Battle Skill tablet and three Emperor Armaments.

The Saint Tier Battle Skill and Emperors Armaments all possessed a heavy, ancient presence. They were items from several tens of thousand years ago. The items were great treasures to humans, but they were of no great use to the magical beasts aside from keeping them in a collection.

However, Jian Chen failed to find anything that could catch his attention in the treasuries of the two Saint Emperors, to his disappointment.

Jian Chen and Nubis left the Beast God Hall together. However, Rum Guinness stayed behind. She insisted on waiting for her child to return.

Jian Chen rode the Zi Ying Sword as he flew alongside Nubis at a slower speed. A gleam of cold light flickered in his eyes. He would stop and sweep the surroundings with his senses after flying a certain distance every time, as if he was looking for something.

“What’re you looking for?” Nubis asked out of interest.

“Back in the sea realm, one of the people who killed the grand elder of the Turtle clan managed to escape. He’s called Li Fengxing and he belongs to the Beast God Continent,” said Jian Chen. He

had come to the Beast God Continent this time with two intentions in mind. One of them was to get the white tiger to enter the Beast God Hall for its legacy, while the other was to look for Li Fengxing, who had managed to flee in the past.

Jian Chen had never forgotten who had contributed to the grand elder of the Turtle clan's death. He had been forbidden from setting foot on the Beast God Continent in the past. Only now did he possess the strength that allowed him to step onto this foreign land without worrying about the three Saint Emperors.

Jian Chen's senses could envelop an area of over two hundred thousand kilometers in a single instance and that was not his limit. Even a single ant a hundred thousand kilometers away from him could not escape his senses. They could even reach deep into the ground, allowing him to find anything hidden deep below.

The Beast God Continent was vast, but it was not difficult for Jian Chen to find a person if he had made up his mind. All he needed was some time and energy.

In the blink of an eye, Jian Chen had searched the Beast God Continent for three days. In that time, he had basically looked over every inch of half the continent. Although he had not found any traces of Li Fengxing, he was not flustered at all.

"In a few more days, I'll have searched every inch of this continent. As long as Li Fengxing is still here, he won't be able to escape my search. If he isn't, then I'll go to the Tian Yuan Continent and then the land inhabited by the Hundred Races. If I still can't find him, I'll search the entire world after my soul reaches the level of the Origin realm," Jian Chen thought. He would never let Li Fengxing off the hook, unlike what he did with Kaiser and the tiger emperor. In the battle against the World of Forsaken Saints, the two of them had put in the effort even if it did not amount to much at all. As a result, he had settled his enmity with the two of them then and there. Jian Chen was not the only one who had wanted to kill the two of them after all. Even with

Jian Chen out of the picture, they were still the white tiger's enemies.

Jian Chen's and Nubis' senses scoured the land. They arrived in a new region and Jian Chen's powerful senses swept out in an unstoppable fashion, enveloping over two hundred thousand kilometers.

Jian Chen suddenly opened his eyes a few seconds later. A bright gleam of light immediately flashed through his eyes, and he shot off as a stream of light on the Zi Ying Sword. Nubis followed close behind him.

In an ancient forest rich with the energy of the world, a simple, wooden hut stood by itself on a huge, gray rock. It creaked in the gentle breeze, like an old man at death's door. It seemed to have almost collapsed in the wind.

It was extremely shabby inside. There were no furniture, like in any other house. The hut was empty. There was nothing aside from a middle-aged, burly man who was seated in there.

The man's eyes were closed as a tremendous presence leaked from his body. He was clearly cultivating. The extremely lively energy around his body began to calm down, and he gradually opened his eyes.

"The Beast God Continent has suffered heavy losses from the battle against the World of Forsaken Saints. Many experts have died and the Beast God Hall has emptied out. It's said that cultivating is much easier within the Beast God Hall. It might have been difficult for me to take up a position in the Beast God Hall before, but it's different now..." The middle-aged man murmured to himself. His eyes shone with eagerness and desire.

However, the man seemed to think of something soon after. His face became extremely ugly in the blink of an eye, and he tightly clenched his fists. Deep fear seemed to appear in his eyes as he growled, "I may not have taken part in the battle against the

foreign world, but I've heard from many people that a sovereign who's surpassed Saint Emperor has appeared for the humans on the Tian Yuan Continent. I've fallen out with him back in the sea realm, so if he finds me, I'm done for...

"It's said that the human sovereign has close ties with the Winged Tiger God. If he accompanies the Winged Tiger God to the Beast God Hall, it'll be impossible for me to avoid him. With that being the case, I still can't go to the Beast God Hall...

"Whatever. Cultivating in the Beast God Hall really is attractive, but it's not as important as my life. I can't go to the Beast God Hall. It's better for me to cultivate here in peace. That human sovereign's busy with the matters of the foreign world, so he definitely won't have time for me. Plus, here's distant enough from here if he visits the Beast God Hall..."

Li Fengxing released his fist powerlessly. The eagerness he had displayed earlier had vanished from his eyes as well. As soon as he thought about how he had fallen out with the human sovereign, he felt like the end of the world had come, making him shiver inside.

"Li Fengxing, did you think I wouldn't find you just by fleeing to the Beast God Continent? You're done for today." At this moment, a great voice boomed from outside. It caused mountains to collapse and pulverised trees. Li Fengxing's rickety old hut collapsed the tremendous sound waves.

Chapter 1428: Visiting the Arctic Again

The tremendous voice exploded in Li Fengxing's ears like a bolt of lightning. Not only was he deafened, but even his soul shook uncontrollably.

The wooden hut had collapsed, burying Li Fengxing in its ruins. However, Li Fengxing remained seated like nothing had happened. He had become temporarily stunned.

However, his dazed gaze began to shine once again. He immediately became shocked and terrified. He had not heard that voice a lot before, but it was one he would never forget, because he had thought about what the owner of the voice had said back in the sea realm several times over the last couple of days. The owner of the voice had now become the human sovereign.

Li Fengxing shuddered and immediately paled. At that moment, his entire soul was overwhelmed by tremendous fear. Without any hesitation, he immediately burst out of the ruins and took to the sky. He wanted to devote himself to fleeing.

However, as soon as he took to the sky, a stream of violet light suddenly appeared on the horizon, approaching him at an unbelievable rate. This streak of violet light was still near the horizon for one moment, but in the next, it had already arrived before him. Immediately, a pressure so powerful that it was indescribable swept forth, crushing down on Li Fengxing like a mountain. His chest became tight as breathing became difficult.

Jian Chen stood before Li Fengxing on the Zi Ying Sword with his arms crossed. He stared at Li Fengxing coldly as heavy killing intent radiated from him. He didn't expend any effort to conceal it.

Li Fengxing immediately began to violently tremble the moment he saw Jian Chen. He was utterly frightened and became overwhelmed by fear.

“S-s- sovereign Jian Chen, you’re the great human expert, so why do you still hang onto your past matters with someone insignificant like me?” Li Fengxing inquired with a trembling voice. At the same time, he was filled with resentment. He had originally thought that he would be fine hiding away, thinking Jian Chen would forget someone as insignificant as him long ago with his great status as the sovereign of the humans. Never did he think that Jian Chen still remembered him even after attaining such a great status, and what he found unbelievable was that Jian Chen actually came to the Beast God Continent in search of him.

“The grand elder of the Turtle clan was slain by you. No matter who it is, whoever has taken part in the attack against the grand elder, I will never let them go, even if they flee to the ends of the earth. Li Fengxing, you should have made up your mind about what is going to happen today the moment you killed the grand elder.” Jian Chen coldly informed him.

“N-no- sovereign Jian Chen, you can’t blame me. I was only acting under orders...” Li Fengxing hurriedly replied. He felt like he was facing a death god as he stood before Jian Chen right now.

He had completely given up the thought of fleeing before Jian Chen, because he knew any attempt was useless. It was impossible for him to avoid being hunted down by an Origin realm sovereign.

Jian Chen had already made up his mind. Of the people who had contributed to the grand elder of the Turtle clan’s death, he had killed everyone except for Li Fengxing.

A powerful strand of sword Qi flashed with white light and Li Fengxing was beheaded by Jian Chen. The pure sword Qi entered Li Fengxing’s head through the wound and wiped out his soul.

A Class 8 Magical Beast, equivalent to a Saint King, was easily slain.

Only now did Nubis arrive as a golden streak of light. He silently stared at Li Fengxing’s head as it fell from the sky. He seemed to

remember the story Jian Chen had told him when the grand elder and him were attacked by Li Fengxing and the others

If it were not for the grand elder laying down his life, Jian Chen probably would have died right there.

“To the sea realm!” Jian Chen said emotionlessly as he lifted up Li Fengxing’s head.

Nubis nodded silently and immediately ripped open a Space Gate leading to the sea realm. The two of them departed through it.

As soon as Jian Chen and Nubis approached the protective barrier around the sea realm, an entrance ripped open. They immediately headed to the Turtle clan.

In the forbidden grounds of the Turtle clan, Jian Chen and Nubis did not alert anyone. They silently arrived with Li Fengxing’s head. Jian Chen offered the magical beast’s head to the grand elder’s spirit in heaven.

Jian Chen remained before the grand elder’s grave for three days. The two of them left silently after that. The great Turtle clan was now filled with experts. They possessed several Saint Kings, but no one had discovered Jian Chen and Nubis’ arrival.

Jian Chen and Nubis hovered a thousand meters above the calm sea as they gazed into the distance. Jian Chen said, “Nubis, I need to go to the Ice Goddess Hall in the arctic. There is an extremely powerful and mysterious expert there. Before her, even I do not have control over my own life, so there’s no need for you to come with me this time.”

Nubis was shocked inside and became stern. He said with a heavy voice, “There’s some rough records regarding the arctic Ice Goddess Hall in my inherited memories. It’s said that they’re an mysteries organization that has already existed for countless years. Even the ten protector clans do not want to offend them. I never thought that there would be an Origin realm expert hidden there.”

Nubis looked at Jian Chen and said, “Jian Chen, I probably won’t be able to help you with this trip. I’ll wait for you on the Tian Yuan Continent.”

Jian Chen and Nubis separated. One of them headed to the Tian Yuan Continent while the other one made his way to the icy tundra in the north.

When Jian Chen’s feet landed on the arctic tundra once more, he could not help but sigh emotionally. This was the second time he had set foot on the tundra. He had been with Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu’s the first time, but he was all by himself now.

However, the dangers of the tundra had drastically weakened even though he was by himself. It was even possible to say that nothing could threaten him aside from the layer of mist around the Ice Goddess Hall.

“Seniors Rui Jin, Hei Yu, and Hong Lian originally fell victim because of me and were frozen into statues. I will save the three of them no matter what today and let the three of them become Saint Emperors.

“It’s also been far longer than a year since I promised my sister. It’s just that I have been too busy and couldn’t make time, which is why I didn’t go when the promised time came. I wonder if she’s mad...” Jian Chen did not fly on his sword. He instead made his way into the depths of the arctic region on foot. Although he was moving on foot, he moved extremely quickly. He would leave behind a faint afterimage with every step as he appeared several kilometers away. It seemed like he was teleporting.

Jian Chen encountered waves of iciness several times along the way. The streams of coldness could freeze a Saint King into a statue in a single moment, but now, Jian Chen could disperse them by extending a finger and shooting out a strand of sword Qi.

Very soon, Jian Chen saw the statues of the Saint Emperors and Class 9 Magical Beasts that had been left behind long ago. He could

clearly see a few piles of icy slush near the statues. These piles were the result of Jian Chen's attempts to free the statues of the frozen Saint Emperors when he had first come across them.

This time, Jian Chen only glanced over the statues indifferently. He did not stop as he continued on, disappearing in a few flashes. A faint layer of white light flickered around him as he radiated with sword Qi. He protected himself with the Way of the Sword. The icy streams of air would shatter as soon as they came into contact with the layer of light.

The deeper he ventured into the tundra, the colder it became. Even Jian Chen needed to take some measures to protect himself now.

After advancing a few thousand kilometers, Jian Chen finally saw the white mist that seemed to connect the sky with the ground. The white mist was completely formed from the terrifying presence of profound ice. It was extremely powerful. Even Hong Lian could not venture far into it with her full strength back then. She had almost been frozen into a statue.

Chapter 1429: Ten-thousand-year Icesouls (One)

Within the snow-white, sculpture-like Ice Goddess Hall, the armored protector Shui sat on her bed of ice like a statue. She gradually opened her eyes before hesitating slightly. With a gentle wave of her hand, the space outside the Ice Goddess Hall immediately began to distort. The Ice Goddess Hall rapidly blurred in the distorted space, vanishing in the blink of an eye.

The icy tundra remained the same as before, except the Ice Goddess Hall that had stood there for countless years had vanished.

“I’ve already moved the Ice Goddess Hall into a separate space, isolating it from the outside world. I hope Jian Chen’s arrival will not disturb her majesty,” protector Shui murmured to herself in the Ice Goddess Hall. A sliver of helplessness was present in her icy-cold and emotionless eyes.

“I may not be able to make things difficult for Jian Chen because of Mo Tianyun, but I can stop her majesty from seeing Jian Chen since her majesty insists on giving a ten-thousand-year-old Icesoul to him and I cannot change her mind.”

At the same time, Changyang Mingyue who was in another room of the divine hall suddenly roused from her cultivation. A sliver of doubt flickered through her eyes as she mumbled, “Weird. Why do I suddenly feel uneasy?”

Changyang Mingyue pondered with a frown for a while and lost interest in cultivation. She stood up and made her way out of her room, headed to protector Shui’s side. She asked, “Protector Shui, it’s been several years already, so why has my brother still not come? Has my brother come across some problems?”

Protector Shui gradually opened her eyes and rather politely said,

“Your majesty, your brother is completely fine. He is currently busying himself with the matter of fending off the World of Forsaken Saints, which is why he has not come.” Protector Shui was worried that Changyang Mingyue would think of going to the Tian Yuan Continent to help out Jian Chen again so she added, “Your brother now has the power to face off against Origin realm fighters. The foreign invasion is not enough to threaten him.”

In order to make Changyang Mingyue believe what she said, protector Shui waved her hand and used an ability to condense a mirror of ice before her. It displayed the scene when Jian Chen had massacred the Saint Emperors from the foreign world with the Zi Ying Sword.

Changyang Mingyue could not help but smile happily when she saw how her brother was rampaging through the Saint Emperors in an unstoppable manner. She mumbled, “I never thought my brother was so strong.”

“Your majesty, there’s still one more year before your Profound Ice Body matures. At that time, you can leave the Ice Goddess Hall and go where you want to go,” said protector Shui.

Anticipation appeared in Changyang Mingyue’s eyes. She mumbled, “There’s still one more year. In a year’s time, I can go to the Tian Yuan Continent to look for brother. Father, mother, it’s been so long since I’ve spent time with you. I wonder if you’re still fine.

“Over the next year, I must work hard on cultivation and let the Profound Ice Body reach perfection as soon as possible. I’ll go cultivate right now.”

Protector Shui watched Changyang Mingyue leave. The light in her eyes flickered uneasily as she thought, “There’s still one more year before her majesty’s Profound Ice Body reaches perfection. At that time, I’ll embed all three Icesouls into her majesty. That way, she cannot give them away. Jian Chen, I hope you do not disturb

her majesty within the next year.”

“Sigh... it’s just a pity that I agreed to Mo Tianyun that I would not make things difficult for Jian Chen...”

Jian Chen did not recklessly charge into the screen of mist. He had personally witnessed how terrifying it was before. Even with his strength now and the Azulet swords, he was not confident he could get through the mist.

Jian Chen frowned. He had waited before the mist for a while and no changes had happened. He thought, “Last time I visited sister, she said that this entire tundra is under protector Shui’s control. As soon as I set foot here, protector Shui will know about my arrival and send me over. Not only have I set foot in this tundra right, but I’m just a single layer of mist away from the Ice Goddess Hall. It’s impossible for protector Shui to have not sensed me.”

Jian Chen’s gaze gradually grew colder as he stared at the mist that blocked his way. He thought, “This can only be explained by the fact that protector Shui does not want me in and does not want me to see my sister. Hmph, I’ve already arrived here today, so how can I leave so easily?”

Suddenly, Jian Chen’s presence changed. He began to radiate a surging sword intent. At that moment, he seemed to have turned into a sword instead of an ordinary human. The terrifying sword intent seemed to shatter space and make the coldness around him collapse. Only the dense layer of mist before him remained unaffected.

Jian Chen was enveloped by a bright white light, completely obscuring his body. When the white light came into contact with the tough sheet of ice beneath him, the ice crisply cracked.

Two dazzling lights, one violet and one azure, appeared in the white light. They surged into the sky as they transformed into the silhouettes of swords.

Jian Chen's eyes shone brighter. He formed a seal with his hands and the Azulet swords on his back immediately shot out in a flash. The two of them began to spin like a whirlpool as they shot into the icy mist in front of him with a dazzling light.

Jian Chen did not hold back at all with that attack. He erupted with the power of the Origin realm. Wherever, the swords passed by, the space violently trembled, showing signs of shattering. Invisible sword Qi filled the surroundings, creating huge cracks in the tough ice on the ground.

The icy tundra was the domain of protector Shui, so the space was countless times tougher than the outside world. Jian Chen's strike was enough to obliterate a world and split the Tian Yuan Continent into two. However, it did not even manage to cleave through the air in the icy tundra.

The Azulet swords shot into the icy mist as streaks of light. The mist immediately began to churn. When the mist came in contact with the sword Qi from the Azulet swords, it immediately emitted a hissing sound.

The Azulet swords shot several dozen meters into the mist in a single moment, leaving behind an open space behind them. However, the mist became more terrifying the deeper they went. After traveling three hundred meters in, the light from the two swords were immediately suppressed and they lost their bright color.

After traveling three hundred and sixty meters in, the light on the swords was completely suppressed, pushing it back into the swords themselves. A thin layer of ice crystals rapidly formed on the swords.

Chapter 1430: Ten-thousand-year Icesouls (Two)

After traveling another fifteen meters, the terrifying coldness from the mist immediately increased by several fold. Even the swords, low quality immortal artifacts, were unable to withstand it. The ice began to rapidly thicken on the swords, instantly turning them into two poles. Their light was completely suppressed and the swords themselves were no longer visible.

This was no ordinary ice. It was terrifyingly tough, able to suppress the Azulet swords, prevent them from gaining an advantage.

Jian Chen stood sternly outside the mist. He could sense that his connection to the two swords was rapidly weakening. Without any hesitation, he immediately changed his hand seal and recalled the swords.

When the two swords emerged from the mist, the ice on them had already reached a thickness of half a meter. The swords had lost the speed they had once possessed, so they slowly flew out.

After leaving the mist, the tunnel carved by the swords slowly began to close up, filled up by the mist in the surroundings.

Jian Chen stared at the thick ‘popsicles’ and powerful sword Qi began to condense from the surroundings. It condensed around his right hand in a single moment, making it shine with an extremely dazzling light. He then slammed his hand toward the two swords.

The attack only managed to cause a tiny crack to form on the thick ice. The moment his hand came in contact with the ice, a terrifying coldness invaded his body through his palm, rapidly extending up his arm. Jian Chen’s arm immediately became covered with a layer of white frost. Not only had his entire arm been frozen, but even his blood had stopped flowing.

A gleam of light flashed through Jian Chen's eyes as a large quantity of Chaotic Force immediately surged to his right arm from his chaotic neidan. Only after he did that did he manage to stop the spread of the coldness. He circulated the Chaotic Force in his right arm and ate away the terrifying coldness that remained within him, gradually regaining use of his arm.

"I never thought that this coldness would be so terrifying," Jian Chen thought. This was just a single strand of coldness from the Azulet swords. If he had entered the layer of mist before him, he would have received the direct attacks of the coldness. He probably would not have been able to last for a few seconds before being frozen into a statue.

Jian Chen did not attempt to smash through the thick ice again as he stared at the two frozen swords. Around half a minute later, the ice on the two swords became covered with dense cracks. After a series of cracking sounds, the cracks spread across the ice like a web as azure and violet light poured out from them.

Bang! Finally, the ice loudly exploded and revealed the two dazzling swords inside. Without the support of the coldness from the mist, the ice was unable to keep the two swords trapped.

"Protector Shui's intentions are very obvious. How do I get in if I can't get through this mist?" Jian Chen deeply frowned. He knew that he could do nothing about the layer of mist before him with his current strength. Not even Reciprocity experts would have been able to make it through the mist.

Changyang Mingyue returned to her room to cultivate in the Ice Goddess Hall, but she was unable to settle down no matter what. She sat on a bone-piercingly cold piece of ice as she rubbed her chin with one hand. Suspicion filled her eyes as she mumbled, "Odd. Why do I suddenly feel so uneasy? I can't settle down no matter what."

Changyang Mingyue silently wondered to herself silently after

pondering her thoughts for some time. “Something must’ve happened, and it’s connected to me. I just happen to have learned the Profound Ice Mirror technique from protector Shui a few days ago, which allows me to see anything anywhere. I may be restricted by my strength and my mastery over the technique, preventing me from seeing the entire Tian Yuan Continent like protector Shui, but I should be able to see anything I want within a radius of ten thousand kilometers.”

Changyang Mingyue immediately used the secret technique. Like protector Shui, she condensed a mirror from profound ice in the air. The mirror was snow-white before some blurry scenes flashed through it.

This was the first time Changyang Mingyue had used this secret technique, so she was not very good at controlling it yet. It took her several seconds before the mirror finally cleared up. Displayed was a world of snow and ice. It was the tundra in the arctic. She could clearly see a corner of the entire arctic.

It was only a corner, but it was an expanse of almost ten thousand kilometers.

Although the Ice Goddess Hall had been hidden away by protector Shui, having disappeared from the tundra and seemingly entered another space, it was not enough to stop the technique from working.

The Profound Ice Mirror technique was extremely wondrous. Not only could the user of the technique gain a clear view of everything within ten thousand kilometers, but they could clearly sense all the presences in the area as well.

Basically, the moment the technique worked, Changyang Mingyue sensed an extremely familiar presence. She immediately gathered her attention to look at it and became dazed. Surprise and joy filled her face as she uncontrollably exclaimed, “Brother, brother. I see my brother... protector Shui, you’ve...” The next

moment, Changyang Mingyue discovered that Jian Chen had been stopped by the layer of mist. Her snow-white face immediately became furious, and with a single flash, she vanished. She angrily ran to where protector Shui stayed.

At the same time, protector Shui gently sighed on her bed.

The same moment she sighed, the terrifying wall of mist in front of Jian Chen began to violently surge. Under Jian Chen's interested gaze, the mist quickly parted open, and in the blink of an eye, a three-meter-wide tunnel leading inside formed silently.

"Come on in," protector Shui's cold voice rang in Jian Chen's head. He fell silent, before entering with the Azulet swords on his back.

As Jian Chen passed through the mist, protector Shui returned the Ice Goddess Hall to where it was before. The exquisite, crystal-like divine hall stood there as if it had fused with the world. It gave off an ancient and desolate sense of grandeur.

Jian Chen glanced over and his eyes immediately narrowed. He failed to find Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu where they had been frozen before. He looked around and did not find any traces of the three of them at all.

"Have they been moved to some other place by protector Shui?" Jian Chen thought. He had come to visit his sister as well as to save the three of them this time.

"Brother!" At this moment, a joyous voice rang out from the distance. Changyang Mingyue stood at the entrance of the divine hall as she gaze at Jian Chen. Her face was filled with joy and deep concern.

Chapter 1431: Ten-thousand-year Icesouls (Three)

“Sister!” Jian Chen beamed with delight when he saw Changyang Mingyue. He temporarily put the matter of Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu aside and immediately walked over.

“Brother, you’ve finally come. I’ve waited for you for so many years already. It’s been way more than the single year we agreed on before,” Changyang Mingyue brightly smiled at Jian Chen as she stood at the entrance of the divine hall. She had spoken like she chastising Jian Chen, but she had no intentions of angering him at all.

Jian Chen smiled apologetically. He had always been busy with the revival of the sea goddess during that time. He had gone into the Sea of Despair with Yadriam in search of the sea goddess’ supreme divine hall and just that had taken a very long time. When the two of them had returned with the divine hall, the agreed time had passed long ago. Afterward, he had to handle the sea goddess’ resurrection ceremony and stop the two other hall elders.

Returning to the Tian Yuan Continent after that, he needed to handle the invasion of the foreign world, so he was just busy, forcing him to temporarily put off the promise, all the way until today.

Jian Chen gave Changyang Mingyue a simple explanation and Changyang Mingyue immediately smiled, “Brother, you don’t need to explain things to me. I’m not blaming you.” Changyang Mingyue gently sighed as she reached there, “It’s just a pity that I haven’t been able to leave the Ice Goddess Hall in all these years, making you suffer so much all by yourself. Otherwise, I would have helped you no matter what and taught all those enemies that have made things difficult for you a lesson.”

Jian Chen smiled from the bottom of his heart when he heard her words. He said, "Sister, I now possess that strength. All my past enemies are no longer my opponent, even if they are Saint Emperors."

"Yeah, you've become so impressive now. You conducted a slaughter against the Saint Emperors of the foreign world, none of them were your opponent. You killed at least two hundred of them. I learned all this from protector Shui. Sigh, and I had thought that I was very powerful now, but I've only just discovered that I'm still not as great as you," Changyang Mingyue smiled. She did not become depressed at all and became happy for Jian Chen instead. She felt proud of her brother's strength.

"Brother, why don't you quickly tell me about the interesting things you've come across over the past few years. I'm extremely curious as to how your strength has increased so quickly," Changyang Mingyue asked out of interest.

Jian Chen gently smiled and soon gave a brief overview of everything that had happened to him over the past few years. However, he described many events in a single sentence and did not go into detail, including the matter regarding the Xuanhuang Microcosm. It was not because he did not trust Changyang Mingyue, but he was worried about revealing something to protector Shui, who had an unfathomable strength.

Jian Chen did not know how strong protector Shui was even now, whether she was of the Origin realm or at Godhood. He believed that even his communication techniques would not be able to hide what he said from her ears.

"Sister, seniors Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu who came with me a few years ago were sealed up here by protector Shui. I am completely in debt to the three of them. It's even possible to say that I would not still be alive if it wasn't for the three of them. Please help me persuade protector Shui to release the three seniors," said Jian Chen. He knew that he could only rely on his

sister to save the three of them with his current strength.

“What! Something like that happened? This protector Shui is going more and more overboard, even laying her hands on your saviors. Let’s go. I’ll take you to see protector Shui right now,” Changyang Mingyue was furious. She really cared about her brother. To her, his saviors were her saviors as well. Protector Shui’s treatment of the three of them had angered her once again.

Changyang Mingyue immediately brought Jian Chen into the Ice Goddess Hall. As soon as he stepped into the divine hall, a bone-piercing chill appeared and caused Jian Chen to shiver uncontrollably. He immediately began to circulate the energy within him to resist it.

This was the first time Jian Chen had entered the extremely mysterious Ice Goddess Hall, so he could not help but look around. He discovered that the interior of the divine hall was snow-white, completely constructed from ice crystals. It seemed just like a world of ice.

Besides that, the mysterious divine hall was not really eye-catching. However, Jian Chen understood that behind the divine hall’s ordinary appearance was something terrifying that he could not sense.

He knew that it was not because the divine hall was ordinary, but it was because he was not strong enough and unable to see through it.

Along the way, Jian Chen discovered a few other people cultivating within the divine hall. There were many Saint Rulers and Saint Kings and even quite a few Heaven Saint Masters. They all worked as servants.

All the people that Changyang Mingyue came across bowed politely toward her. They were extremely courteous.

“These people should all be from the Tian Yuan Continent.” Jian

Chen glanced at them casually and discovered that they were all human.

Very soon, Jian Chen was brought before protector Shui with Changyang Mingyue's guidance. Protector Shui remained seated on her bed in her silver-white armor the same as before, and she only stood up to bow to Changyang Mingyue the moment she saw her. However, before Changyang Mingyue could ask about anything, she said to Jian Chen, "The three of them were saved soon after you left. They are no longer on this tundra."

Jian Chen became stunned and was overwhelmed by disbelief. Was there still anyone who could save the three of them with protector Shui's strength?

"Senior, who saved them?" Jian Chen asked with clasped hands.

"Mo Tianyun," protector Shui responded coldly.

"What! Senior Mo Tianyun did? Is senior Mo Tianyun still on the continent?" Jian Chen was shocked as his heart churned. This matter was just far too astounding.

"It was only a clone of Mo Tianyun. He probably just sent it down from a higher world. I can't sense the presence of that clone any longer now. It must have dispersed. After all, it's not that easy to come to this world," protector Shui replied.

Jian Chen's looked at protector Shui in surprise. He felt that she was rather different today. According to his understanding of her, she would never have wasted words on others with her pride, yet she had become patient enough today to explain things to him. Today was quite an abnormality.

"Protector Shui, are you looking down on me? Since the three seniors were my brother's saviors, they're my saviors as well. You actually trapped my saviors here. You really are going more and more overboard," Changyang Mingyue stared at protector Shui coldly. Protector Shui was powerful, but she was not afraid of her.

“This one understands. This one trapped them only because they possessed saint artifacts that did not belong to this world,” protector Shui politely responded.

“Let’s just leave the matter at this since the seniors have already been freed, sister,” Jian Chen quickly added seeing how Changyang Mingyue was still furious. Protector Shui was a powerful expert after all. She possessed her own pride, so he did not wish for his sister to press her too much and end up with some unexpected outcomes.

Changyang Mingyue snorted coldly, “Since my brother’s put it like that, I won’t dwell on this matter anymore. However, I don’t wish to see something like this happen again, protector Shui.”

“This one understands,” protector Shui remained very polite. She did not feel displeased at all even while being scolded by Changyang Mingyue, who had not even reached Origin realm, despite being a Godking. It was as if this was supposed to happen.

This was because Changyang Mingyue was the reincarnation of the snow goddess. Similar to the ice goddess, she was her master.

Changyang Mingyue and Jian Chen left. The two of them strolled through the divine hall casually as they talked about their daily lives.

“There’ still one more year before my Profound Ice Body matures. At that time, I’ll be able to leave this place, so don’t worry, brother. The next time the World of Forsaken Saints invades, I’ll fight alongside you. Don’t underestimate me alright. I may not be as strong as you right now, I’m only a Saint Emperor, but once my Profound Ice Body matures, I’ll immediately reach the Origin realm. Coupled with the ten-thousand-year-old Icesouls, I’ll only become even more powerful. Even you might not end up being my opponent,” Changyang Mingyue giggled. Afterward, she immediately pulled out a fist-sized piece of ice crystal with a flip of her hand.

“Brother, this is a ten-thousand-year-old Icesoul. I have three of these. Protector Shui said that each one of them can only be condensed after a million years, so it’s extremely precious. I’ll give you one as a gift from me.” Changyang Mingyue passed the Icesoul to Jian Chen.

Jian Chen’s eyes narrowed. He stared at the ten-thousand-year-old Icesoul as shock gradually appeared. He could sense that the energy within the Icesoul was even more terrifying than a fifth grade Violet Cloud Peaches. It possessed several times the energy, possibly even several dozen times the energy in a peach.

At the same time, the energy within the Icesoul was very gentle, just like the peaches. It could easily be absorbed.

“Sister, this is for you to increase your strength. I can’t accept it.” Jian Chen immediately declined the gift. He knew that the ten-thousand-year-old Icesoul was even more precious than the fifth grade Violet Cloud Peaches, which was exactly why he could not accept it. The three ten-thousand-year-old Icesouls were the most precious items on his sister. They were to increase her own strength, and every one that she lost would reduce her strength in the future. On the other hand, he possessed quite a few heavenly resources similar to the Icesoul. They may not be as precious, but he had many more of them.

Changyang Mingyue frowned and her face immediately darkened. She was displeased and said, as if she was scolding a junior, “Brother, this is a gift from your sister. You have to accept it whether you want to or not, or you’ll be looking down on your sister.”

“Sister, this...” Jian Chen was troubled. He wished that she would use all three Icesouls and would become even more powerful.

“Take it. You have to accept my gifts. I’ll stay by your side until you fully absorb it. You’re not allowed to take it out,” Changyang

Mingyue said without giving him any room to reject her gift. She did not let him take the Icesoul away because she was afraid that protector Shui would steal it back.

Chapter 1432: The Fifth Layer of the Chaotic Body (One)

Finally, Jian Chen ran out of options. He could only accept the extremely precious ten-thousand-year-old Icesoul.

The extreme coldness within the Icesoul had been removed, but it was unable to change its base properties. As a result, it still felt like ice to Jian Chen when he held it in his hand. However, he did not feel cold at all. Instead, he felt warm inside.

He understood just how important the Icesoul was to Changyang Mingyue. If it was used by her, the increase in strength she would gain would definitely be greater than if it was used on himself. After all, he practiced the Chaotic Body. The energy required to progress through each layer was incalculably large. However, Changyang Mingyue did not think about herself at all. She was willing to progress a little slower just to help him, which touched Jian Chen.

“Brother, come. I’ll find a room for you and then I will personally watch over you so that you can absorb the entire Icesoul,” Changyang Mingyue pulled Jian Chen toward a room meant for cultivation.

Jian Chen did not resist. He knew just how determined his sister was and that it would be useless no matter how he resisted. All he could do was burn her kindness deeply into his heart and never forget about it.

Jian Chen entered a cavern of ice under Changyang Mingyue’s lead. Coldness filled the room. It was abundant like the energy of the world. A piece of cushion-like, pure-white ice sat in the center of the room and gave off waves of coldness.

“Brother, protector Shui has said that this piece of profound ice is extraordinary. It will bring you benefits if you cultivate on it.

You can emerge after you completely absorb the Icesoul,” Changyang Mingyue said as she pointed at the piece of ice. After that, she closed the door to the room with a wave of her hand, leaving Jian Chen in there all by himself. She sat down outside to personally keep guard for Jian Chen.

“Protector Shui, you can’t change matters that I’ve decided on. I know you’re thinking about me and that you want me to become even stronger, but it’s been tough on my brother in the years he’s spent outside. He may no longer be weaker than me now, but I know that he has risked his life to obtain his current powers. When he was suffering outside and being chased around the world by others, I did nothing as a sister. I was unable to help him, but I have the power now. I have to help him this time no matter what. This is my responsibility as a sister,” Changyang Mingyue uttered inside as she sat outside the room with her eyes closed.

“Protector Shui, you won’t be able to take the Icesoul from my brother with me here. Even if the day that my Profound Ice Body has to be delayed indefinitely, I will stay here until my brother emerges...”

The room filled with coldness was hazy. Jian Chen sat on the ice as he held the Icesoul in his hand. He stared at the Icesoul with mixed emotions. He was unable to settle down for the moment.

At this moment, a cool feeling radiated from the ice below. It entered Jian Chen’s body and moved about. The cool feeling clearly was not as simple as a strand of coldness. Its appearance gradually ate away all of Jian Chen’s mixed emotions and allowed him to brush aside his random thoughts.

“Sister...” Jian Chen muttered inside before gathering his concentration. He began to cultivate with all his attention, absorbing the energy within the Icesoul.

Although the tremendous energy within the Icesoul had been condensed from extreme coldness, the formation of each Icesoul

took a million years. After such a long time, the energy within the Icesoul had changed long ago. Not only was the coldness removed, making the energy in it gentle, but it was also extremely pure and powerful.

When the first strand of energy was absorbed by Jian Chen's body, the thin strand immediately began to rapidly expand like a balloon, becoming a hundred times its size and completely filling Jian Chen's dantian. In the end, his dantian was unable to contain all of the energy, leading to some leaking out into his body, making it swell.

Jian Chen was delighted inside. He had estimated the value of the Icesoul before, but to his surprise, the Icesoul had far exceeded any of his estimations.

"I wonder if I can reach the fifth layer of the Chaotic Body with just this Icesoul." Jian Chen became hasty as he immediately began to refine the energy in the Icesoul.

As the energy of the Icesoul was endlessly absorbed by Jian Chen, the chaotic neidan in his dantian gradually grew larger. More and more Chaotic Force accumulated within it as he rapidly approached the fifth layer of the Chaotic Body.

Jian Chen would have definitely consumed a lot of time to reach the fifth layer of the Chaotic Body if it was not for the Icesoul. After all, the energy required to reach the fifth layer was just far too tremendous, far more than what he had needed to reach the fourth layer.

Although he had a large amount of Immortal Tier heavenly resources he had obtained from the Xuanhuang Microcosm, he would develop an immunity to their effects if he consumed too many of them in a short time frame. The effects of the heavenly resources would be heavily reduced, so Jian Chen was unable to devour the heavenly resources to reach the fifth layer. After all, he did not have the white tiger's natural advantage, which enabled it

to consume heavenly resources endlessly.

The appearance of the Icesoul, without a single doubt, was giving Jian Chen exactly what he needed when he needed it. The time he required to reach the fifth layer would be greatly reduced.

Jian Chen absorbed the Icesoul extremely quickly. The fist-sized Icesoul had vanished in just two months, having all been refined into Chaotic Force.

Unfortunately, Jian Chen still had not reached the fifth layer after absorbing the Icesoul with his Chaotic Body. He was only an inch away from the fifth layer.

The chaotic neidan in his dantian had become the size of a fist. He had reached the peak of the fourth layer, the limit of what he could achieve right now. If he could take one step further, he would immediately reach the fifth layer.

Jian Chen fell silent as he observed his chaotic neidan within him. He then clenched his teeth, and with a flip of his hand, he immediately took out an energy crystal from a Xuanhuang beast.

As soon as the energy crystal had appeared, a terrifying pulse of energy was emitted, filling the entire room.

At the same time, protector Shui who sat on her bed in another area of the divine hall sensed something. She slowly opened her eyes and glanced where Jian Chen was cultivating. Her gaze was deep, as if she could directly see Jian Chen beyond the various walls of ice in the room.

However, protector Shui retracted her gaze as if nothing had happened, slowly closing her eyes again.

“The Ice Goddess Hall is in danger right now. There are many things I don’t care about and won’t care about, but I hope that Jian Chen really will behave how Mo Tianyun has described him in the future, where he will assist the Ice Goddess Hall in getting through this disaster,” thought protector Shui.

Chapter 1433: The Fifth Layer of the Chaotic Body (Two)

“I hope this energy crystal can help me reach the fifth layer of the Chaotic Body successfully,” Jian Chen murmured to himself as he gazed at the energy crystal in his hand. This was one of the two Class 10 Xuanhuang beast energy crystals he had obtained back in the Xuanhuang Microcosm.

“Back then, I was too weak and lacked an understanding of the Origin realm, so it was difficult for me to distinguish energy crystals beyond the 9th Class. Now that I look at it, this energy crystal is nowhere near the 10th Class. It’s at least a Class 11 or even a Class 12 crystal, and this was also the weaker energy crystal out of the two I obtained. The other energy crystal must have reached the 13th Class at the very least,” Jian Chen gently rubbed the energy crystal with his thumb. His eyes grew brighter and brighter as they became filled with his eagerness.

If it were not for the Icesoul, Jian Chen would not have chosen to absorb one of the two most powerful energy crystals he had ever obtained, because he was not confident that one would be enough for him to break through. The energy crystal was of an extremely high quality, but it was akin to monster cores after all. The benefits it could bring were nothing like the Icesoul or the high grade Violet Cloud Peaches, so even if he absorbed it, he would not break through.

However, he had now reached the peak of the fourth layer with the Icesoul. This was the best moment for him to make a breakthrough.

Jian Chen sucked in a deep breath and slowly calmed himself. He immediately gathered his concentration and devoted himself to refining the energy crystal in his hand. He planned to reach the fifth layer in a single stroke.

The fifth layer of the Chaotic Body was extremely significant to Jian Chen. Not only would it drastically increase his strength, but it would give him the ability to refine the Yinyang Saint Rock.

Seven days later, a loud crack finally rang out. Jian Chen was filled with eagerness. A ball of extremely terrifying Chaotic Force filled his body, and at that moment, his body suddenly began to swell. He became a giant, as if he had been blown up like a balloon.

Every breakthrough of the Chaotic Body would be equivalent to the chaotic neidan shattering, and each shattering would bring tremendous pain.

The muscles on Jian Chen's face twitched as his forehead became covered with cold sweat in a single moment. His face had already paled. Even though his chaotic neidan had already shattered several times before, he still found the ripping pain unbearable.

However, Jian Chen was willing to accept a great increase in strength for bearing with the intense pain.

Vast amounts of Chaotic Force rampaged through Jian Chen's body before slowly being compressed. Virtually at every moment, the Chaotic Force within Jian Chen's body shrank, undergoing a process of compression, slowly changing his fourth layer Chaotic Force to the fifth layer.

At the same time, Jian Chen's body endured the battering of the strengthened Chaotic Force. His flesh also toughened at a visible rate, becoming even more powerful.

This process lasted for several days and Jian Chen finally reached the fifth layer of the Chaotic Body. Both the toughness of his body and his Chaotic Force had increased in quality. The chaotic neidan in his dantian had been reduced to the size of a soybean once again.

Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes. He sensed the strengthened Chaotic Force in his chaotic neidan and could not help but smile. He was filled with joy. The energy crystal in his hand had not been

fully absorbed. He had only used a third of the energy present.

“My chaotic neidan is too small right now. The Chaotic Force stored inside is limited. Although the Chaotic Force will be consumed very slowly, the next wave of invasions from the World of Forsaken Saints should not be too far off. At that time, the battle will definitely be even more intense and even more difficult,” Jian Chen pondered. He chose to continue his secluded cultivation and continued to refine the energy crystal in his hand.

A few more days passed and the energy crystal in Jian Chen’s hands finally disappeared. However, he now needed several times or even more than ten times the amount of energy now that he had reached the fifth layer, so the amount of Chaotic Force he managed to refine from the remaining two-thirds of the energy crystal was extremely limited. It had only increased his chaotic neidan to the size of one and a half soybeans.

“Sigh. The further I progress, the more energy I require. When my Chaotic Body was still at the fourth layer, a single Icesoul was enough to make me reach the peak of the fourth layer. I probably need ten of them to reach the peak of the fifth layer. If I want to reach the sixth layer, probably even a hundred won’t be enough...” Jian Chen sighed inside. The Chaotic Body really was very powerful, but there was endless pangs of pain behind its strength.

“However, I have truly become a Saint Emperor now. I have the battle prowess of a Saint Emperor without my comprehension of the Way of the Sword and without the Azulet swords. If I use the Way of the Sword, there should be no Saint Emperors that can hold their ground against me. If I use the Azulet swords as well...” Jian Chen wondered. Only a while later did he think, “I should be able to battle against the clone of the Spiritking. However, his comprehension of the Way of the Sword is greater than mine...”

“The Spiritking...” Jian Chen felt very pressured as soon as he thought about the Spiritking, because he was just too powerful. He had sent just a single clone, yet it required Xiao Ling, the sea

goddess, and him to work together to fend off. If he had come personally, even all the power this world possessed would not be enough to stop him.

Although the world had gained two Origin realm experts, Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao, while the eight other founding ancestors of the still not awakened, Jian Chen understood that their strength had fallen from the Origin realm to Saint Emperor after all. Even with the assistance of their saint artifacts, they were Receival experts at most. The disparity against the Spiritking was just far too great, so they would not be much help in an actual battle against him.

This was unless they recovered their peak strength and reached the Origin realm again.

And even if they returned to the Origin realm in terms of strength, there were other Origin realm experts in the World of Forsaken Saints aside from the Spiritking, and they outnumbered Jian Chen's world by quite a lot.

"I can now absorb the Yin and Yang Qi from the Yinyang Saint Rock, but I need the assistance of the Heavenly Enchantress. Sigh..." Jian Chen's head ached. He became filled with helplessness as soon as he recalled the Heavenly Enchantress. He gently shook his head and opened the room's door.

As soon as the door was opened, Jian Chen saw his sister seated there. He evidently became stunned.

Changyang Mingyue sensed his emergence as well and stood up. She looked at him and became surprised. She said, "Brother, you've absorbed the ten-thousand-year-old Icesoul so quickly? Are you sure you haven't hidden it away in your Space Ring?" Changyang Mingyue suddenly became stern. She said seriously, "Brother, you have to listen to me. You have to absorb the entirety of the Icesoul, or I won't let you leave here."

Chapter 1434: The Truth Behind the Seal

“Sister, how is it possible for me to not listen to you? You got me to fully absorb the Icesoul, so why wouldn’t I listen to you? I’ve already fully absorbed the Icesoul you gave me,” Jian Chen smiled helplessly. He possessed the Chaotic Body, so the rate he could refine energy was incomparable to ordinary cultivators. In this period of seclusion, not only had he fully absorbed the Icesoul, he had even refined an Origin realm Xuanhuang beast’s energy crystal.

“Really? Have you really absorbed the Icesoul so quickly? According to protector Shui, even I need at least several years to fully absorb an Icesoul. How did you do it in a few short months?” Changyang Mingyue suspiciously questioned him. However, she seemed to think of something very soon. She appeared enlightened as she said to herself, “I understand now. It must be because of brother’s extraordinary talent, which is why you could absorb the Icesoul in such a short time. This also explains why brother’s strength has been increasing so rapidly.”

Jian Chen smiled but did not give a detailed explanation. He said, “Sister, I’ve stayed here for long enough. I plan on returning today. As time goes on, the next wave of invasions from the foreign world grows near. I must return to the Tian Yuan Continent to make preparations, but I want to see protector Shui before I leave. I have a few questions I want to ask her.”

Changyang Mingyue also understood the precarious situation of the current Tian Yuan Continent, so she did not urge Jian Chen to stay. She said, “Brother, once my Profound Ice Body matures, I’ll come to the Tian Yuan Continent to look for you. We can fend off the invasion of the foreign world together. Let’s go, I’ll take you to see protector Shui. Her strength is unfathomable where even I can’t sense how great it is. If there’s anything you’re unsure about, feel free to ask her.”

Jian Chen obviously met protector Shui without any obstructions under Changyang Mingyue's personal guidance. Very soon, he saw her again in the same room of ice.

“Speak, what do you have to ask this king? I can answer some things you should know seeing how her majesty is your sister.” After bowing to Changyang Mingyue, protector Shui turned her icy-cold gaze toward Jian Chen.

Jian Chen bowed to protector Shui and got straight to the point, “Senior, our world's currently sealed, preventing the cultivators of this world from reaching the Origin realm. It's also lead to no Origin realm experts for the four races since ancient times. May I ask if this seal was cast down by senior?”

“The world may be sealed, preventing everyone from reaching the Origin realm aside from species with powerful bloodlines and natural spirits of the world. However, you walk a different path, where you don't need origin energy to reach the Origin realm. As a result, the seal cannot stop you. Since it's no problem to you, why are you sticking your nose into matters that you don't need to care about? You cannot interfere with these matters,” protector Shui coldly responded.

“But this matter is connected to my great-grandfather. He's currently at the peak of Saint Emperor and is unable to reach the Origin realm because of the existence of this seal. His life span is limited to ten thousand years. This is how it's connected to me. And, the Tian Yuan Continent is currently facing the threat of the World of Forsaken Saints. If we do not increase the number of Origin realm experts we have, we will not be able to stop them. Senior, please release the seal in consideration of all the life in this world so that they have a chance of reaching the Origin realm,” Jian Chen sincerely said, almost like he was pleading. In his eyes, protector Shui's strength was unfathomable. It was extremely likely that she had already reached Godhood, so if she did not remove the seal, Yang Lie and the others would never be able to

reach the Origin realm.

Although he believed that he would possess the power to break through the seal in ten thousand years, there were quite a few Origin realm experts in the foreign world. No one knew whether Yang Lie and the others would survive the coming battles.

After all, they had fallen from the Origin realm to Saint Emperor and were only able to display the strength of the Origin realm through their saint artifacts. However, that was only the strength of the weakest Origin realm experts. Once they came across true Origin realm experts, it would be very difficult for them to stop them.

“Leave. I am unable to remove this seal,” protector Shui said coldly.

Jian Chen became bitter. He had known long ago that the outcome would be like this, but he still felt extremely depressed. Once the seal was removed, Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao would still be able to reach the Origin realm even without origin energy, because they had stored some origin energy in their saint artifacts.

If the seal was not removed, Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao would still not be able to break through even with their origin energy.

“Protector Shui, I order you to remove the seal immediately,” Changyang Mingyue said with an irrefutable tone.

Protector Shui dared not to behave as indifferent as she was with Jian Chen. She gently sighed as a sliver of helplessness appeared in her cold eyes. She said, “Your majesty, I really do not have the ability to remove the seal. I may not have cast the seal, but I know who did. It was cast by her majesty. Otherwise, it would have been very difficult for the matters here to avoid the divination of the experts from the Saints’ World. Otherwise, quite a few people from the Saints’ World would have come looking for your majesty.”

Jian Chen was disappointed when he heard that. He had never

thought that the seal was actually cast down by the Ice Goddess. The Ice Goddess was a Grand Prime, a supreme expert who stood at the apex of the higher world. Even after ten thousand years, he might not be able to gain the strength to break through a seal cast down by someone so strong.

At the same time, he worried about his sister.

Jian Chen left the Ice Goddess Hall. Although he had not managed to get the seal removed, he had learned exactly who had cast it down as well as who was responsible for the missing history from the ancient era. It was definitely protector Shui's handiwork and her intentions were to prevent anyone from entering the Saints' World and exposing what was happening here, which would have endangered his sister.

Although the method was shocking and extremely brutal, Jian Chen was unable to determine whether protector Shui was right or wrong. If it was himself, what would he have done to protect the people most important to him?

Jian Chen left the icy tundra and returned to the Tian Yuan Continent on his sword. However, Jian Chen suddenly came to a halt at this moment. He gazed into the distance as his eyes shone. He was gazing in the direction of the Wasteland Continent.

Even though the Wasteland Continent was extremely far away, Jian Chen could still sense an extremely tremendous pulse in that direction.

"There's more than ten members of the Hundred Races that have reached Saint Emperor and several dozen are reaching Saint King at the same time..." Jian Chen murmured. He knew that it must have been Tie Ta using the Violet Cloud Peaches to increase the strength of the strongest experts of the Hundred Races, which was why so many people had broken through.

"Tie Ta's already begun to move. I can't fall behind either," Jian Chen said before speeding up. He disappeared into the horizon as a

violet streak of light.

Chapter 1435: Acquaintances of the Past

Jian Chen returned to the Tian Yuan Continent and descended in the Changyang clan of Lore City. The Changyang clan announced something that shook up the entire continent, causing a great commotion everywhere.

All Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Masters would experience the chance to become a Saint Ruler if they gathered outside Lore City in three day's time.

All Saint Rulers who had comprehended Saint Tier Battle Skills or were at the Seventh Heavenly Layer or above would have the chance to become a Saint King if they gathered outside Lore City in three day's time.

All Saint Kings at the Eighth Heavenly Layer or above would have the chance of becoming a Saint Emperor if they gathered outside Lore City in three day's time.

These three pieces of information spread across the entire continent like wildfire soon after the Changyang clan announced them. All the hermit and ancient clans who had isolated themselves from the world received the news. Even the mysterious experts who remained hidden within the wilderness all year round to cultivate received the news from their friends as well. They were all astounded and could not calm down even after a very long time.

The current world lacked origin energy, making it impossible for Saint Emperors to reach the Origin realm and extremely difficult for Saint Kings to reach Saint Emperor. There were countless experts who had devoted their lives to cultivation only to stop at Saint King. On the continent, Saint Emperors had almost stopped appearing entirely. Only the path lord of carnal desires managed to become a Saint Emperor through the creation of his seven emotions and six desires, becoming the only supreme expert for

quite some time.

In the eyes of all the Saint Kings on the Tian Yuan Continent, the path to Saint Emperor had fallen apart long ago. Even those who had reached Great Perfection and were only an inch away from Saint Emperor could not avoid the miserable ending of being reduced to a pile of bones.

Yet now, the Changyang clan of Lore City had claimed that they would give Saint Kings a chance to become Saint Emperors. This matter immediately exploded among the Saint Kings, throwing countless people into an uproar.

No one doubted the abilities of the Changyang clan because they were the clan the human sovereign Jian Chen belonged to. Several months ago, a few new Saint Emperors appeared on the Tian Yuan Continent, and they all possessed close ties to Jian Chen. Everyone knew that the reason why these people could skyrocket in strength and all become Saint Emperors was all because of Jian Chen's assistance.

Some Saint Kings who fulfilled the requirements even ripped open Space Gates to hurry to the Changyang clan the moment they received the news. A few Saint Rulers and Heaven Saint Masters who fulfilled the requirements did not hesitate either. They all ventured to the cities, sects, or clans with Space Gates as soon as they heard the news and paid a large price so that they could make it to Lore City in the shortest amount of time possible.

The moment the news spread from the Changyang clan, two Saint Kings in the clan ripped open Space Gates and left excitedly. They went to the sea realm and the Beast God Continent respectively.

One of the Saint Kings was a magical beast while the other one was a member of the Sea race. They had remained on the Tian Yuan Continent to keep guard and had been summoned by Jian Chen. He got them to take a similar announcement with them.

The two experts reported the news to Yadriam and Cangqiong, greatly shocking the two Saint Emperors. They immediately broadcasted this news across the entire sea realm and Beast God Continent as well.

The sea realm and Beast God Continent were thrown into an uproar as well. The Saint Kings who fulfilled the requirements all surged with emotion. They could not remain where they were for a single moment longer, eagerly heading to the Tian Yuan Continent.

Not only did Jian Chen want to increase the overall strength of the humans on the Tian Yuan Continent, but he had also invited the Sea race and magical beasts to take part in this event as well.

In just the first day since he had let out the news, over ten thousand people had gathered outside Lore City. All of them looked toward the small city in reverence.

All these people had hurried over on the first day. Most of them were Heaven Saint Masters, with Saint Rulers making up an extremely small portion. There were even many Heaven Saint Masters and Saint Rulers who did not match the requirements present. They had come with the mindset to watch or to try their luck, hoping that they would be chosen if Jian Chen decided to make exceptions.

All of them stood on the ground, including the Saint Rulers. No one dared to hover in the sky, and even when they communicated with one another, they purposefully stifled their voices. They did not cause a great disturbance, as if the city before them was holy. Even the Saint Rulers did not step into the city, staying outside in the wilderness.

The Changyang clan was currently filled with the Saint Kings of the three races. However, without any exceptions, all the Saint Kings had lowered their statuses and acted extremely modestly. There was a vague sense of reverence present. They did not even

dare to offend a single servant of the clan.

A palace-like hall stood within the Changyang clan. It was grand and the most eye-catching piece of infrastructure in the clan.

This hall was the place where Jian Chen stayed in the clan.

Jian Chen always remained in there as he tidied the heavenly resources on him. He did not visit anyone. There were many Saint Kings who had wanted to see him to pay their respects, but they were all denied entry. His hall became a holy place in the eyes of all the Saint Kings.

There were many Saint Kings who believed that all the people who managed to enter the hall would receive infinite glory.

At this moment, a small group of Saint Kings courteously arrived before the hall where Jian Chen stayed. One of them said to the two female servants at the entrance, “Tai Dou wishes to see ruler Jian Chen.” After that, the entire group bowed to the hall. They all bore the respect they felt from the bottom of their hearts on their faces.

A few Saint Kings in the surroundings secretly shook their heads when they saw their actions. They could already guess what would happen.

“Esteemed guests, the young master is not seeing anyone...” The two beautiful servants repeated something they had said countless times with smiles. Whenever they mentioned ‘young master,’ there was evident admiration and adoration in their voices. It was close to a fanatical level.

“Come in!”

However, Jian Chen’s voice rang out from inside as soon as the two servants finished speaking. The Saint Kings in the surroundings immediately froze when they heard his voice, suddenly turning their heads to the group of Saint Kings standing at the entrance. Envy filled their eyes as well as a certain

strangeness. There had been countless Saint Kings who had wanted to see Jian Chen, including many Saint Kings at Great Perfection. Without a single exception, they were all turned down at the entrance, yet this group had succeeded.

The two servants at the entrance were stunned. Their opinions of this group of people immediately changed as well.

If it was before, they would have been utterly frightened if Saint Rulers stood before them, let alone Saint Kings. They would even worry about breathing too loudly, but on this day, the two of them had discovered that Saint Kings only amounted to so much.

The group of people entered the hall. As soon as they saw Jian Chen, who was sorting through the Violet Cloud Peaches and Comprehension Tea Leaves, they all dropped to their knees and said, “We greet the ruler!”

They were the Saint Kings from the Turtle clan as well as Tai Dou, who had initially pledged his loyalty to Jian Chen.

Jian Chen glanced over them and gently sighed, “You already know that I’m not the ruler of the Turtle clan, so why must you kneel for me? Please get up.”

Chapter 1436: Powering Up Together (One)

“Ruler, it doesn’t matter whether you’re a part of the Turtle clan. You will always be the most respected and greatest ruler to the entire clan. The only reason why we are so glorious today is all because of ruler,” an elder of the clan said emotionally. He felt respect from the bottom of his heart for Jian Chen.

“Ruler, my life belongs to you. It doesn’t matter whether you’re a human or a part of the Sea race, I, Tai Dou, will always treat you as my master,” Tai Dou dropped to his knees and said extremely seriously while he kept his head very low.

Jian Chen’s emotions became rather mixed as he looked at these people. With a flip of his hand, a neidan appeared. It slowly drifted before the elders of the clan under Jian Chen’s control.

The elders of the Turtle clan immediately became fixated on the small neidan. They could sense an extremely dense Turtle clan ruler’s Qi within it.

“I obtained this neidan before, and it was exactly because of this that I possessed the ruler’s Qi of the Turtle clan. This belongs to your clan, so I am returning it right now,” Jian Chen softly said as he sighed inside. It was because of this neidan that he had become connected to the Turtle clan in the sea realm. At the same time, it was also the reason the grand elder had given up his life to save him.

This neidan had added a lot of ups and downs to his journey in the sea realm.

The elders of the Turtle clan remained on their knees. None of them extended their hands to accept the neidan.

Jian Chen said when he saw this, “My connection with the Turtle clan was all brought on by this neidan. Now that the clan has returned to its former glory, I have completed the grand elder’s

final wish. I will not be going to the Turtle clan very often from now on, so just treat the neidan as something I have left to the clan. After all, this neidan has accompanied me for quite some time in the past.”

The Saint Kings of the Turtle clan all became very depressed. They carefully accepted the neidan with heavy emotions and a slight sense of devotedness, holding it in their hands like a treasure that they feared they would break. At that moment, the neidan had become a treasure that had surpassed all else in their eyes.

This was because this was the item left to them by the greatest ruler in their history. It was something that had accompanied him for quite some time. The neidan was not worth a lot by itself, but it held significant value to the Turtle clan.

“You all have consumed Violet Cloud Peaches to reach Saint King before. The immortal peaches can only be consumed once every hundred years, so you won’t be able to take part in this gathering this time,” Jian Chen said to them.

“Ruler, we’ve come this time only to meet you personally. There was nothing else that we wanted,” an elder politely replied. He felt no regrets at all. With their original strength, becoming a Saint King would have been an extremely distant dream to them. Some of them would not have been able to reach such a level of cultivation ever. The ruler had let them all become Saint Kings, so they were already extremely delighted.

After all, Saint Kings were basically the limit of cultivation now that Saint Emperor was difficult to reach.

The elders left. They did not stay in the Changyang clan any longer and instead rushed back to the clan as they carefully carried Jian Chen’s neidan. They held an extravagant ceremony involving the entire clan and constructed a sacred tower. The neidan was enshrined on the highest floor of the tower.

Jian Chen met another acquaintance soon after the elders of the

Turtle clan had left. Qing Yixuan had arrived in the Changyang clan in azure robes to meet Jian Chen.

Qing Yixuan had already broken through to Saint Emperor when they met again. When she had consumed the Violet Cloud Peach, a very limited amount of energy had leaked out. Even though it was just a first grade immortal peach, it allowed her strength to increase drastically.

Qing Yixuan sat on a seat opposite of Jian Chen. She was in melancholy mood. A sliver of loneliness was present in her eyes, along with some confusion.

“You’ve avenged yourself?” Jian Chen asked.

Qing Yixuan shook her head and gently sighed. Her expression was indescribably mixed as she softly said, “My former enemy has already died. He did not die by my hands, but was slain by a foreign expert in the battle against the World of Forsaken Saints. Even his corpse can’t be found.”

Qing Yixuan continued in a rather depressed fashion, “Back when I was still a Saint Ruler, I was forced to flee to the sea realm due to my enemy. I hid there for a thousand years, working hard on my cultivation day and night just so I could return a little sooner to take revenge. The heavenly resource you gave me recently allowed me to get through several minor levels of cultivation and break through to Saint Emperor. When I returned to the Tian Yuan Continent and went to the Yangji sect of the ten protector clans, I found that they did not even have a single Saint King great elder left.”

When she reached there, Qing Yixuan suddenly smiled idiotically. She said to herself, “The heavens sure do have their own way of doing things. I never thought that the heavens would pull such a joke on me. I cultivated arduously in the past just so I could personally kill my enemy, yet he’s already dead, even though I have the strength to kill him. He did not even die in my hands. If

I had known that this would happen, was there still any need for me to cultivate so hard?" Qing Yixuan felt empty inside, as if she had lost all her objectives in life.

"Your enemy's actually a part of the Yangji sect? What happened between you and them?" Jian Chen asked in surprise.

"Yang Yun of the Yangji sect wiped out my clan," Qing Yixuan responded, feeling immense sorrow.

Jian Chen fell silent. He just stared at her quietly.

"This is the Saint Tier Battle Skill I took from the treasury of the Tao family before. I don't need it anymore, so I'm returning it to you," Qing Yixuan left behind a tablet of stone before turning around and leaving. With her back toward him, she seemed rather lonely and pessimistic.

Jian Chen watched Qing Yixuan leave before gently sighing. He put the stone tablet away with a wave of his hand. The Flame Mercenaries just happened to be in need of items like that.

Experts constantly poured into Lore City within the three days. Not only had the city become the most renowned place on the continent, but even the Gesun Kingdom managed to profit from the fame. Even though its overall strength was not as great as the eight great kingdoms, its status had completely superseded the three great empires.

Jian Chen's uncle had returned to the Changyang clan after so many years. He had always remained in an unknown forest, cultivating in seclusion after cutting himself off from the world for all those years. Only now had he finished refining all the shards of venerable Poisonsword's soul, so he had emerged as a result. He had inherited the Saint King's comprehension of the mysteries of the world.

However, since the shards were incomplete, he only managed to inherit a portion of the venerable Poisonsword's understanding.

He did not manage to return to the Saint King's peak strength, only having reached the Fifth Heavenly Layer.

Tianmu Ling had come as well. Jun Mohao and Wang Yinhong stuck close to her, clearly loving her very dearly.

Tianmu Ling managed to see Jian Chen without any obstructions at all. He learned that their Saint King ancestor had fallen, so Jun Mohao and Wang Yinhong were the most powerful in their clan now. Their status as an ancient clan was in danger.

Jian Chen clearly understood what Tianmu Ling wanted to say. He guaranteed that Jun Mohao and Wang Yinhong would both become Saint Kings.

The three days passed very quickly and Jian Chen tidied all the Violet Cloud Peaches and Comprehension Tea Leaves. He stored them away neatly in his Space Ring. He had harvested a total of four first grade Violet Cloud Peach trees, three second grade Violet Cloud Peach trees, two third grade Violet Cloud Peach trees, two fourth grade Violet Cloud Peach trees, and three fifth grade Violet Cloud Peach trees. There were a hundred and eight peaches on each tree, so he had a total of four hundred thirty-two first grade immortal peaches, three hundred twenty-four second grade immortal peaches, two hundred sixteen third grade immortal peaches, two hundred sixteen fourth grade immortal peaches, and three hundred twenty-four fifth grade immortal peaches.

Aside from the fifth grade Violet Cloud Peaches that only had half remaining and peaches he had given to Tie Ta, the others were almost untouched.



Chapter 1437: Powering Up Together (Two)

There were fewer Comprehension Tea Leaves compared to Violet Cloud Peaches. Jian Chen had only harvested three first grade Comprehension Tea trees and one fifth grade Comprehension Tea tree. Each tree bore eighty-one leaves and he had already used up almost half of the fifth grade Comprehension Tea Leaves.

“The difference in the numbers is just far too great and basically all the Saint Kings of the humans, magical beasts, and Sea race have gathered here. Although there were many of them who did not fulfil the standards, there are still over a hundred people beyond the Eighth Heavenly Layer. Just that would require over a hundred Violet Cloud Peaches and a few of them aren’t in possession of talent like Qing Yixuan’s, so they’ll end up wasting quite a lot of the energy in the heavenly resource. I need to give them immortal peaches that are not of the first grade,” Jian Chen murmured to himself as he frowned slightly.

“Other than that, there’s several thousand Saint Rulers who reach the standards to become a Saint King. If I just give them an immortal peach each, there won’t be enough at all. There’s even more Heaven Saint Masters, over ten thousand of them...”

“Looks like the Heaven Saint Masters and Saint Rulers have to share an immortal peach between many people while the Saint Kings can consume an entire peach themselves. However, the people with great potential have to take priority...”

Three days later, Jian Chen finally emerged from the hall under the eager gazes of many Saint Kings. He appeared before all of them.

This was the day Jian Chen had promised to increase everyone’s strength. All the Saint Kings of the three races had gathered before the hall Jian Chen had stayed in as they stared at the tightly-shut door with anticipation and eagerness. As soon as Jian Chen

appeared before them, all their eyes lit up and they politely bowed to him.

“Greetings to sovereign Jian Chen!”

“Greetings to sovereign Jian Chen!”

All the politeness from the Saint Kings originated from the bottom of their hearts. The world followed the rule of the jungle. They respected Jian Chen because of his strength. At the same time, Jian Chen had slain many foreign Saint Emperors in the battle before, protecting the continent. Just that was enough for many people to admire him.

The group of senior members from the Changyang clan stood nearby. They all watched this unfold with smiles. Bi Yuntian and Changyang Ba had even teared up in joy. This was all because the person that the Saint Kings greeted was their child.

Jian Chen's elder brother, Changyang Ke, was in the crowd as well. He stared silently at this scene with mixed emotions. He was filled with envy, but his gaze bore some gloominess and dejection.

Out of the four siblings of the Changyang clan, their eldest brother had been chosen by the Pure Heart Pavilion and had been taken there. Their sister had become the saintess of the mysterious Ice Goddess Hall, so she possessed an extraordinary status, while their youngest brother had become the greatest human expert now. He was an existence that had surpassed Saint Emperor and deserved the respect of all Saint Kings. Only he remained nameless. Even though his strength had been propelled to Saint Ruler by the Violet Cloud Peaches, he still felt the same as before. Even if he had become a Saint Ruler, he was still a nameless figure.

Bi Dao also stared at Jian Chen in the crowd. He smiled with great pride.

Uncle Chang, Changyang Zu Yunxiao, Changyang Zu Yeyun, Changyang Zu Xiao, and the others were all the same as they stared

at Jian Chen quietly.

Jian Chen looked around and clasped his hands at everyone. He greeted a few Saint Kings before directly proceeding to the main topic, “Everyone, you must already know that I have some heavenly resources that can rapidly increase your strength. I used these exact heavenly resources a few days ago to allow some of my friends and family to reach Saint King. The only unfortunate thing is that I don’t have many of these heavenly resources left. However, the invasion of the World of Forsaken Saints is at our doorstep, so in order to strengthen all of us I am willing to share these heavenly resources with everyone and assist you in your breakthroughs.”

“Sovereign Jian Chen is such a selfless person. If we possessed these heavenly resources, we would have tried keeping them just for ourselves, yet sovereign Jian Chen is willing to give them to us. His selflessness is admiring...”

“Sovereign Jian Chen, I may be a magical beast, but if I become a Saint Emperor, I am willing to join the Changyang clan and become its guardian if I survive the battle against the foreign world...”

“Sovereign Jian Chen, if you can make me become a Saint Emperor, I’ll serve you until my dying breath and never betray you...”

The blood of many Saint Kings began to boil. Their old faces became flushed as they loudly swore oaths. They were unable to keep their composure. Although many of them had reached the Eighth Heavenly Layer, they did not have much longer to live, and they also knew that they had no chance of becoming a Saint Emperor. However, they all saw a sliver of hope from what Jian Chen had just said.

Once they became Saint Emperors, not only would their strength undergo an overwhelming change, their life span would increase

by four thousand years as well. More importantly, there was a greater chance for them to survive the upcoming battle as Saint Emperors. As a result, there were even a few of them willing to cast away the last portion of their lives just to become Saint Emperors.

The behavior of some of them seemed to be dim-witted, but they were all very clever. They knew that there would still be a very long road after Saint Emperor. Strength was still distinguished between the strong and the weak even in the Origin realm. If they could successfully follow an Origin realm expert with infinite potential, they would be able to obtain unknown benefits throughout their future cultivation.

Jian Chen began to divide the Violet Cloud Peaches. As even the weakest of the Saint Kings had reached the Eighth Heavenly Layer, he had given them all second and third grade immortal peaches since they were not too far off from Saint Emperor.

Jian Chen used thirty first grade Comprehension Tea Leaves together to make a cauldron of tea, sharing it evenly among the people.

Afterward, Jian Chen personally brought them to an ancient forest for them to break through.

Several days later, a large swathe of nine-colored rainbow clouds enveloped the entire continent. The clouds were extremely thick, formed from over a hundred layers of rainbow clouds overlapping with one another. They shone with dazzling light as they flickered brightly.

With the assistance of the immortal peaches, over a hundred Saint Kings from the three races all successfully reached Saint Emperor. They became an extremely powerful force on the Tian Yuan Continent.

At the same time, in a miniature world some place on the continent, the rather pale path lord of carnal desires sat in a room to recover. He was naked while several other young, naked women

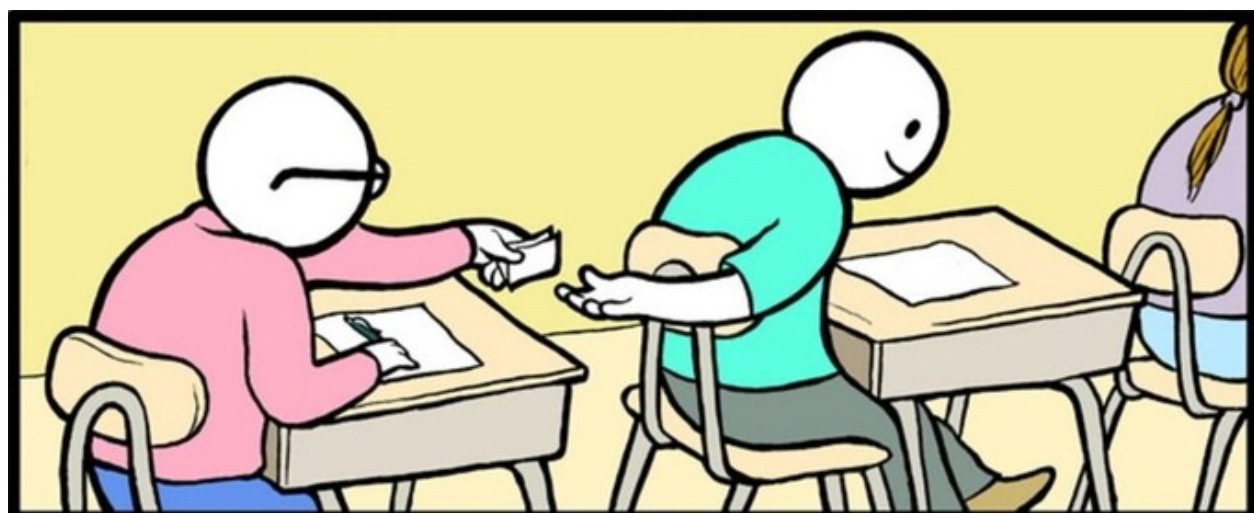
lay dead in a corner of the room with blood splattered across their bodies.

Suddenly, the path lord opened his eyes, and they immediately glowed brighter. He seemed to be able to pierce through space with his gaze and see the outside world.

“Over a hundred Saint Emperors...” The path lord of carnal desires said with a deep voice as shock filled his eyes. Soon after that, his face sank.

“When I broke through to Saint Emperor, it was almost impossible. I used my entire life to create the path of six emotions and seven desires before I finally became a Saint Emperor, becoming the only Saint Emperor among the humans. Yet now, these people have all easily gotten through the bottleneck that I poured my soul out for, all with Jian Chen’s help. Jian Chen, I curse you a horrible death,” the path lord gritted his teeth. His sickly face had already become warped from intense envy and a sense of unfairness.

Why, just why did his breakthrough have to be so difficult while these people had it so easily? How was it fair that these people could just cultivate for a few days and reach what he had used several millennia to attain?



Chapter 1438: Severance of Emotions and Desires

“Why, just why did I need to waste several thousand years to become a Saint Emperor while they only need a few days to become one? Even those Eighth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings have broken through in a few short days, making it through the Ninth Heavenly Layer and Great Perfection permanently.

“Back then, I used my comprehension of the cultivation method for the Pure Heart Pavilion and poured my soul out in order to create a different cultivation method, allowing me to become the only human Saint Emperor. Yet now, there’s suddenly over a hundred of them and they’ve broken through so easily. Why, just why does it have to be so difficult for me and so easy for them? This is unfair. I cannot accept this...”

The path lord sat in a room and roared out. His face had already become warped and, coupled with his sickly appearance, he seemed extremely vicious.

“Jian Chen, it’s you. It’s all because of you. Sure you cultivate fast, but do you really have to make all these people, who are not related to you at all, become Saint Emperors and make my cultivation, which I spent thousands of years on, not worth a single cent? You’re purposefully directing this at me,” the path lord gritted his teeth. He was filled with hatred. He blamed Jian Chen for everything.

Originally, the path lord had been the only Saint Emperor on the Tian Yuan Continent, the only human Saint Emperor, who even the ancient protector clans didn’t easily offend. His name could shake the entire continent, and he was known as the greatest human expert both in name and reality. However, after Jian Chen appeared, everything changed. Not only had Jian Chen taken his status as the greatest human expert, but Jian Chen also received

the admiration of everyone. Even worse, Jian Chen was helping many people reach Saint Emperor, allowing the Tian Yuan Continent to gain several dozen Saint Emperors. The path lord's status, which was once the greatest, only dropped lower and lower with each coming day.

“I want to break through. I want to break through Saint Emperor and become an Origin realm sovereign. Today, I'll completely sever my seven emotions and six desires and complete the cultivation path I have created.” Madness filled the path lord's eyes. Raising his hand, a powerful force gushed out and smashed through the stone door of the room. He left.

This was a miniature world carved out by the path lord himself. Not a lot of people lived in it, only a few thousand. Other than the several dozen wives of the path lord and his hundred or so children, the others all belonged to the sect that the path lord had created. They were the disciples of the Carnal Desires sect.

The Carnal Desires sect had been founded by the path lord several thousand years ago. All of them cultivated in the miniature world and rarely left, which was why they were not very well-known on the Tian Yuan Continent. Many people did not even know that a sect like this existed.

The place where the path lord cultivated was near the sect. As soon as he emerged, two middle-aged men heard the commotion and flew over from afar. They bowed to the path lord and politely said, “Greetings to the path lord!”

The two men were both Saint Rulers. They were the only two Saint Rulers in the Carnal Desires sect and the strongest experts aside from the path lord. They all practice the cultivation method that the path lord had created.

The path lord was emotionless. His eyes were filled with a cold ruthlessness. He looked at the two men like he was looking at two corpses.

The path lord silently appeared before the two of them. He raised his hands and pressed them against their heads, and with a bang, their heads immediately exploded. Their souls were wiped out as well. They were mercilessly slain by the path lord.

The path lord's expression did not change at all. He stared at the sect in the distance and walked through the empty air. He steadily made his way over.

There were several thousand disciples in the Carnal Desires sect. Although they practiced the cultivation method that the path lord had invented, it was not suitable for everyone since it deviated from the beaten track. As a result, the sect had never produced a Saint King in the several thousand years it had existed, even though they all practiced a cultivation method created by a talented Saint Emperor. The strongest of them had only reached Saint Ruler.

The path lord entered the sect. As he looked at the familiar buildings, he murmured, "The seven emotions are composed of joy, anger, sorrow, fear, love, hatred, and desire while the six desires are life, death, sight, hearing, taste, and smell. I have already understood the seven emotions and six desire and have created the Palms of Emotions and Desires. It's just that I still haven't severed the last few aspects of the seven emotions and six desires. It's not that I can't sever them, but I didn't want to sever them because it wasn't the right time.

"Or maybe it's because I never had the willpower to sever them..."

"But now, this is my final choice. I have to sever them and let my strength increase, surpassing Saint Emperor..."

The path lord silently disappeared from the main entrance of the sect, and soon cries of fear and disbelief rang out.

"Path lord, what are you doing? Wu Lin is innocent! He's never done anything against the sect, so why did you kill him..."

“Spare me, path lord, spare me...”

“Path lord, why are you killing us...”

“Everyone run, the path lord’s gone mad! The path lord is slaughtering everyone like crazy...”

The path lord’s ruthless massacre was targeted at the disciples of the Carnal Desires sect. All the disciples he came across either had their heads blown up or necks snapped. No one could escape the claws of the path lord. Gradually, the ground became dyed with red and the metallic smell of blood grew heavier and heavier. More and more corpses collapsed on the ground.

The cries for help alerted the entire sect. Very soon, all the disciples learned that the path lord had gone mad. They immediately fled in fear, but the sect had been surrounded by a powerful barrier long ago. In the end, not a single disciple managed to make it out. All of them launched useless attacks at the barrier out of despair.

The path lord was covered in blood, all from the disciples he had slain in his own sect. With the path lord’s strength, he could have annihilated the entire place with a wave of his hand, but he did not do that. He took action personally, sending disciple after disciple into the afterlife.

The path lord had not gone mad. His eyes were clear and filled with resolution. He would comprehend the slaughter of each person closely as he underwent the final severing process.

There were many methods to sever the emotions and desires, and there was no need to sacrifice the lives of others to complete his cultivation method. However, the path lord just happened to choose the most brutal method.

The sect was strewn with corpses, without a living disciple. All of them had been personally slain by the path lord. He then gazed into the depths of the miniature world after personally destroying

the sect he had founded.

A beautiful hall stood there. It was the path lord's residence, where his several dozen wives and close to a hundred daughters and sons resided.

The path lord made his way to the residence in the depths of the miniature world. He entered every room and mercilessly sent his past lovers, daughters, and sons into the afterlife. He had become a ruthless person. The residence was filled with cries of shock and fear.

Many people in the residence had learned that the path lord had gone mad. They tried to flee, flying in all directions, but they could not leave the miniature world no matter where they fled.

In the end, even the servants within the hall were slain, totalling several hundred people. Neither his wives nor children were spared, the youngest was not even ten years old.

The path lord's gaze became cold after ending the lives of everyone. There seemed to be nothing in his eyes, yet they were also filled with everything in the world. He seemed connected to the world.

In a flash, he arrived in a mausoleum. There were several dozen tombs that held the family of the path lord. They were either his past lovers or his children, having almost all departed for the afterlife because of old age.

The path lord coldly stared at the mausoleum and did not feel any reluctance at all. He raised his hand and pressed down. Immediately, an extremely large hand appeared out of nowhere and slammed into the mausoleum.

With a heavy boom, all the structures vanished. They were replaced by a dark, hand-shaped pit that was several hundred meters deep.

"The last step is to sever life and death." The path lord sat in the

air as he mumbled to himself without any emotions, “Living is life and the seven desires and six emotions come from life. Aside from life and death, I have severed them all, so this life no longer exists either. I only have death now!

“Sever life and death by completely cutting away the impurities and only leaving behind the initial source, returning to my true self. I will use my Palms of Desires and Emotions to completely eliminate all impurities in my soul and sever any impure thoughts that are left in me.” The path lord raised his hand. An invisible blade had already condensed in his hand. He then stabbed it into his soul.

The blade was condensed from his Palms of Desires and Emotions. It did not harm his physical body because it only targeted his soul. The blade entered his soul with a flash, and after severing a hazy, bright part of his soul, his soul immediately shrank by a huge portion. It became extremely weak.

The path lord violently trembled. It was extremely painful for him as the blade fell. His soul was heavily injured. However, his soul became even more translucent after he had taken the blade to it. All the impurities and random thoughts left in his soul had been severed the blade.

Chapter 1439: Paving a Path with Hatred

The path lord immediately became empty inside when the blade fell. At that moment, he seemed to have entered a mental state where there were no emotions or desires. Everything in his gaze was clear. He could see through everything in the world. He had been liberated by letting go of his emotions and desires and abandoning life and death.

The path lord seemed to have let go of all his past hatred for Jian Chen as well as all the amenities he had accumulated in the past. In his current state, he felt indifferent toward breaking through the barrier of Saint Emperor and joining the Origin realm.

The path lord sat there and felt empty inside. In his current state, he felt like he was infinitely closer to the world and seemed to have reached conformity with the world, comprehending things unknowingly.

He had truly become desireless and emotionless. However, he still retained a basic instinct after becoming so close to the world, which urged him to continue his comprehension.

The path lord's strength silently increased. Although the Saint Force within him did not increase at all, his comprehension of the world constantly increased. His weakened soul gradually recovered as well. Not only had his soul surpassed his peak condition, but it continued to rise up and strengthen.

"I can sense that I am getting closer and closer to the Origin realm," thought the path lord. He could sense the changes extremely clearly, but he did not feel any joy at all. After severing his emotions and desires, increases to his strength were unable to excite him. In fact, anything in the world, whether delightful or sorrowful, would no longer be enough to instil any emotion within him, including his own life or death.

"I met the Saint Emperors of the Beast God Continent a few times

in the past. Kaiser had once said that even if I severed my desires and emotions, I would still not be able to surpass Saint Emperor. How can he understand just how wondrous my path of cultivation is...

“The Origin realm is already within my grasp, but even if I do reach it, why? For greater strength, or for a hundred thousand more years of life?

“Where does my path lie after today? What will I pursue after today...”

Suddenly, a sliver of confusion appeared in the path lord’s eyes. He had severed all his desires and emotions, including the aspirations of his life. He had walked this path too hurriedly and without appropriate preparations, so he faced the danger of losing himself.

This was a bottleneck as well as a tribulation. If he could overcome it, he would immediately reach the Origin realm, but if he could not, his path would end there, and he would be reduced to a living corpse.

“What is the purpose of my cultivation? What is the purpose of my existence? Why am I trying to reach the Origin realm? Where does my path after today lie?”

The path lord became more and more confused. Although he had severed his emotions and desires like Chanyang Hu, making it seem like they were walking the same path on the surface, Changyang Hu’s path was one that truly conformed to the world. Everything he did was in accordance to nature and conformed to the truths of the world. The path lord’s path deviated a little.

The path lord would never have come across this confusion before the split. He would be able to find an answer instantly, but he had clearly rushed it too much by forcefully severing his emotions and desires using an extreme method to enter a desireless and emotionless state. The path ahead still had not been paved, so

he immediately became confused when he reached the end of it. He was unsure where to go.

This was because a severed path had appeared before him. This path was also his life, his life as the path lord. Originally, he had been forced onto this path by Jian Chen and had also been urged by his emotions and desires to obtain greater strength and a longer lifespan. As a result, his path had been constructed from his emotions and desires.

But after severing them, he became desireless and emotionless, so his original path was no longer suitable for him. The path ahead of him had reached a dead end.

The path lord's strength continued to increase and his understanding of the world deepened. However, this understanding could not help him pave the severed path ahead of him.

At this moment, he stood at the end of his path and gazed ahead in confusion. He did not know where else he could go.

However, a mysterious and extremely powerful force appeared from outer space at this moment. It gushed into the path lord's miniature world with a destructive aura.

The path lord sensed this force. He felt fear and shock for the first time because of the force. With his current strength, he actually felt like he was not even as great as an ant before the mysterious force. It could be said that the mysterious force from outer space was an ocean while he was a rowboat that floated in it. Only a very small wave would have been enough to annihilate him.

The mysterious force did not devastate the path lord directly, but it instead interfered with the laws of the world. It helped him awaken from his desireless and emotionless state, preventing his comprehension and preventing his breakthrough.

The path lord's face suddenly changed. He paled in a single

instance and became haggard. His seated body swayed as if he was about to collapse. He had been forced out of the wondrous state of mind by the mysterious power, causing unimaginable damage to his soul.

The strength he had just gained rapidly declined when he left that state of mind. His soul grew weaker and weaker and would soon disperse.

This was like an unreturnable path. Once he embarked on it, the path behind him would disappear. He could only advance, and if he did not break through, his soul would disperse.

“My path collapses without my faith. I proceeded to hurry before and did not find my future path, so I did not reach the Origin realm successfully. What I need to do right now is find the path leading to the Origin realm,” the path lord murmured to himself. His soul gradually weakened as every moment in his life flashed before his eyes. His desireless and emotionless state of mind gradually became blurred.

When he thought of Jian Chen, when he thought about how he had been forced by Jian Chen to sever his emotions and desires without the proper preparations, impurities immediately began to litter his extremely fragile but pure soul.

Suddenly, the path lord's eyes lit up. He gritted his teeth, “Being desireless and emotionless no longer works. If I really have to reach that realm, then I have to abandon my hatred for Jian Chen, but the only reason why I am caught where I am right now, where I cannot go any further or go back, is all because of Jian Chen. This is unbearable, so I will pave my future path with my hatred for Jian Chen. Jian Chen, I shall build my path of hatred for you. It will lead me to the Origin realm.”

The path lord's pure soul became more and more contaminated. Unknowingly, his path was already leading off in the exact opposite direction he had headed in initially.

Chapter 1440: A Severed Path

Severing the emotions and desires would be freeing the body from everything that had held it down, allowing an unbound soul to break through. The path lord had completely failed when he tried to follow that path. He had severed his emotions and desires too hurriedly and without taking the appropriate measures. He had completely failed to find the rest of his path. As he stood at the end, he lost his sense of direction for the future. He became confused and came across an obstruction on his path to the Origin realm.

However, there was no way back once he embarked on this path. His initial path no longer suited him, so he needed to abandon it. He couldn't continue on a broken path. He needed to pave a new path.

He paved this path using his hatred of Jian Chen.

Originally, the path lord would not have been able to feel any hatred with his pure soul since he had severed his emotions and desires. However, the mysterious force from outer space had forced him out of that mental state, greatly injuring his soul and making it extremely weak. Even the slightest stimulation would have pushed him over the edge.

The path lord's eyes lost their clarity and were replaced with madness. Hatred burned within them as well. This hatred was so powerful that it was enough to annihilate his own soul. This burning hatred mixed with his soul.

“Jian Chen, the only reason why I'm like this now is all because of you! I want to surpass Saint Emperor! I want to surpass you and then torture you to death in the most brutal fashion possible!” The path lord roared at the sky, causing the entire miniature world to tremble. His face had become viciously distorted. His hatred for Jian Chen was increasing at an unbelievable rate.

His enmity for Jian Chen had not reached such an irreconcilable level before, but he had decided to use his hatred to pave a path to the Origin realm. This led to the rapid increase of his hatred.

The path lord of carnal desires was currently caught on the path between Saint Emperor and the Origin realm. Because the path had not been completed and did not exist, he had not broken through, but everything would be extremely smooth as soon as he had found a new one. His strength was increasing at an unbelievable rate as he inched toward the Origin realm.

If this continued, he definitely would have been able to become an Origin realm expert.

However, the supreme force from outer space appeared once again as he moved along the path to the Origin realm. It stopped him from breaking through.

“I want to surpass Saint Emperor! I want to surpass Jian Chen! I want to become the greatest expert on the Tian Yuan Continent! No one can stop me! No matter who it is, no one can stop my advance to the Origin realm!” The path lord roared out as determination and madness filled his eyes. He did not pay any attention to the obstruction of the powerful force. He charged forward. He would not stop unless he reached his objective.

The powerful force began to surge. It silently condensed into a completely invisible finger, which was gently pointed at the path lord.

With this simple gesture, the entire world seemed to fall silent. Air seemed to stop flowing, time seemed to stop moving, and the entire world seemed to have frozen.

The path lord froze as well. In the blink of an eye, his gaze became lifeless, but his body continued to surge with life, giving off terrifying pulses of energy. However, his soul had already vanished. He had turned into a soulless shell.

The miniature world immediately fell silent. There were no more of the path lord's mad roars, no more of the liveliness from before. It had fallen into a dead silence.

The mysterious force from outer space had completely vanished as well.

In the arctic Ice Goddess Hall, protector Shui stared coldly into the distance. To no surprise, she stared in the direction of the path lord's miniature world. Her gaze seemed to be able to pierce through the spatial barriers, allowing her to see the path lord.

"Another person with impressive talent. What a pity." Protector Shui shook her head as she gently murmured to herself. However, her eyes remained cold, lacking any sympathy.

At the same time, the sea goddess, Tie Ta, the Heavenly Enchantress, Jian Chen, Xiao Jin, Xiao Ling, Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, Feng Xiaotian, and fairy Hao Yue in the Bright Moon Divine Hall all looked in the direction of the path lord.

"This force has appeared again," murmured the sea goddess, before gently sighing. She knew that another expert had died.

Tie Ta sat in the War God Hall as he gazed into the distance in interest. A sliver of suspicion filled his eyes.

Xiao Ling and Xiao Jin looked in the direction of the path lord's miniature world and outer space in doubt, but they lost interest very soon.

Jian Chen, Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, and Feng Xiaotian were all stern. Aside from Jian Chen, they all ripped open Space Gates and immediately hurried over personally.

Soon after the three of them had departed, Jian Chen glanced at the Saint Emperors who had just completed their breakthrough. After hesitating for a while, he said to Nubis, Changyang Zu Xiao, and the other beside him, "I will be leaving temporarily. I'll help the Saint Rulers and Heaven Saint Masters break through after I

come back.” Jian Chen rode off on the Zi Ying Sword as a violet streak of light, moving extremely quickly.

Fairy Hao Yue sat in the bright moon divine hall. Her eyes were fixated in the distance, but her face was nonchalant.

The cold and aloof Heavenly Enchantress stood on the peak of Three Saint Mountain with her zither in her hands. Her beautiful eyes were filled with serious shock as she gazed in the direction of the Tian Yuan Continent.

“What a powerful pulse of energy. Who is it?” The Heavenly Enchantress murmured. Her face was filled with surprise.

Jian Chen arrived outside the path lord’s miniature world on his sword. Finding the miniature world was nothing difficult with his current strength. He split open the entrance and stepped in, arriving beside the path lord in a few flashes.

By the time he arrived, Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, and Feng Xiaotian had already been there. They all stared at the path lord. Life roared within the path lord but his soul was absent. They revealed extremely ugly expressions.

“He’s already dead,” Jian Chen said with a heavy voice. Although he had had some disagreements with the path lord in the past, he did not feel any delight from his death. Instead, he became very heavy-hearted.

“It’s the seal. Not only has the seal stopped him from reaching the Origin realm, it’s wiped out his soul as well, leaving behind an untouched body,” Yang Lie said with a heavy voice. His complexion was horrendous.

“The expert who cast down the seal is just too vicious. I originally thought that the existence of the seal was just to stop people from reaching the Origin realm. I never thought that it could kill people,” said Guihai Yidao. His complexion was horrendous as well.

Feng Xiaotian stared at what was left of the path lord and shook his head. He sighed, “He’s actually able to reach such a level without origin energy. What a great seedling only to be destroyed like this. What a pity, what a pity.”

Chapter 1441: End of a Grand Gathering

“Let’s go,” Guihai Yidao gently sighed in dejection before leaving with Yang Lie and Feng Xiaotian.

Other than Feng Xiaotian who still remained rather at ease, Yang Lie’s and Guihai Yidao’s faces had both sunken. The outcome of the path lord was horrendous news for them.

Jian Chen looked away from the path lord and glanced around the miniature world. He had already used his soul to envelope the entire place. Through his senses, he could clearly see that the Carnal Desires sect and the hall deep in the miniature world was filled with corpses. The ground had been dyed with blood while the heavy smell of blood lingered in the air.

Jian Chen sighed gently and murmured, “The path lord personally killed the people here. Looks like he wanted to sever his emotions and desires and reach the Origin realm, but he didn’t know that this world had been sealed, making it impossible to reach the Origin realm unfortunately.”

Jian Chen gently shook his head. He did not touch anything in the miniature world. He left with some sympathy.

In the current world, it was even difficult to become a Saint Emperor. Even Jian Chen felt some admiration for the path lord seeing how he could create his own cultivation method to reach Saint Emperor and attain such great achievements all by himself.

This was because the path lord must have achieved everything he had owned through his own hard work. He did not have the support of any powerful organizations, unlike the magical beasts with the Beast God Hall, which made cultivating much easier. He did not even have what the protector clans and Mercenary City possessed.

Jian Chen returned to the Gesum Kingdom. At that moment, the

Saint Emperors had all roused from their cultivation. They were all ecstatic as a terrifyingly tremendous pressure radiated from them. They had already consolidated their cultivation completely.

All the Saint Emperors gratefully bowed to Jian Chen when they saw him. A few of the magical beasts immediately swore their loyalty to Jian Che and said that they were willing to become guardians of the Changyang clan in the future.

“I appreciate your good intentions, except the threat of the World of Forsaken Saints is still present. Our utmost priority is to make preparations in order to fend off the foreign world. Once we completely eliminate this threat, I will definitely welcome you with open arms if you still want to come join the Changyang clan,” Jian Chen faintly smiled and turned down the oaths of loyalty.

If it was before, Jian Chen would have accepted several Class 9 Magical Beasts as guardians with great joy, but now, Saint Emperors were no longer as valuable to him as before. More importantly, he still did not know how many of these Saint Emperors would survive the battle against the foreign world.

Jian Chen leaped onto the Zi Ying Sword and left as a violet streak of light. He returned to Lore City. Currently, several hundreds of thousand people had already gathered outside the city. They were densely packed. All that was visible was a large crowd of heads.

These people were not ordinary people. Every single one of them possessed impressive strength. Just the number of Saint Rulers had reached ten thousand while the number of Heaven Saint Masters had reached over a hundred thousand. Many Heaven Saint Masters across the three races were just too far away and were unable to make it, or there would definitely have been many more people.

Not all the Saint Rulers fulfilled the conditions required to have their strength increased. Instead, they had come with the intent of

watching or trying to get lucky. However, even though that was the case, there were still over a thousand Saint Rulers who fulfilled the requirements.

Not only were there humans of the Tian Yuan Continent, but there were also magical beasts and members of the Sea race.

Jian Chen hovered high in the sky as he looked down. After he gave a general explanation of the requirements of increasing the people's strength, he pulled out a large pile of neatly-stacked Comprehension Tea Leaves from his Space Ring.

Around a dozen large tanks had already been prepared in an empty space below. They were all filled with the spring water from the Springs of Life, carrying a green tinge. They gave off a tremendous force of life. Several Saint Kings sat around the tanks, personally guarding them.

With a wave of his hand, Jian Chen threw a large handful of leaves into each tank, splitting them evenly. Afterward, he pulled out several hundred Violet Cloud Peaches and cut them into pieces, delivering them to the hands of all the Heaven Saint Masters and Saint Rulers who fulfilled the requirements.

The Violet Cloud Peaches were all the first to third grade. Only a very small fraction were of the fourth grade. He did not use any fifth grade immortal peaches.

"I've already given you the chance. Whether you can successfully break through will depend on your luck," Jian Chen said two hours later after everyone had received a cup of tea and a piece of a Violet Cloud Peach. He did not speak very loudly, but his voice was clearly heard by everyone.

"Is this piece of unknown fruit and this cup of tea our chance at breaking through?" All the people thought as they stared at the tea and fruit in their hands. None of them doubted Jian Chen, because over a hundred Saint Emperors breaking through was the best example available. They all consumed the piece of fruit and cup of

tea with joy and eagerness.

A day later, the first rainbow clouds finally appeared in the sky. Afterward, the number of rainbow clouds rapidly increased, layering on top of one another and forming an extremely thick nine-colored rainbow cloud. The clouds illuminated the entire sky with colorful light.

The rainbow clouds lasted for several days before beginning to disperse. This time, not all of the Heaven Saint Masters and Saint Rulers manages to break through. Only around seventy percent of them advanced. The Violet Cloud Peaches and Comprehension Tea Leaves were Immortal Tier heavenly resources, but they had been split up so their medicinal effects suffered a great decrease. Coupled with the inferior talent of a few people, some failed to break through.

Even though this was the case, the people who had failed to break through had all reached the peak of their current cultivation without any exceptions.

The result was within Jian Chen's expectations. He hovered in the air and said, "This is all I can do you for. Let's disperse. If you still haven't broken through, it shouldn't be too difficult to reach the next level of cultivation if you just go back and work hard on your cultivation."

All the people below were filled with gratitude when they heard his words. They all bowed at Jian Chen politely before leaving. Even though a few of them had failed to break through, they would never forget the kindness that Jian Chen had shown them.

Very soon, a large portion of the people outside the city had dispersed. Some had left in joy while others left with sighs. The people who had just come to watch had immediately become green with envy when they personally witnessed so many people reach Saint Ruler or Saint King.

The grand gathering that had shaken up the humans, magical

beasts, and Sea race came to a close. However, the three races had finally recovered some of their power after the gathering. Not only had they fully made up for the lost Saint Kings, but they had gained over a hundred Saint Emperors as well.

This time, Jian Chen's generosity and kindness had won the sincere respect of all three races. Without any exaggeration, Jian Chen's prestige among the humans, the Sea race, and the magical beasts had reached an unparalleled level.

Chapter 1442: The Heavenly Enchantress' Father

Lore City of the Gesun Kingdom became as peaceful as it had been before. However, the current Lore City was no longer the same as before. It had become a sacred city on the continent and this sacredness had even spread among the Sea race and magical beasts.

This was because the experts of the three races would never forget the great increase in strength they had experienced there. Not only had the name of the city been permanently engraved in the hearts of the people who had successfully broken through, but even the experts who had not fulfilled the requirements held some respect for the city.

This was because several thousand Saint Kings and several tens of thousands of Saint Rulers had been born outside the ordinary city in just a few short days.

As Lore City became renowned among the three races, the position of city lord became a representation of status as well. Although the city lord of Lore City was not an impressive expert, the position's status increased with the city's fame and became extremely special.

However, the position as city lord had been taken up by a member of the Changyang clan long ago and the king had given the city to the Changyang clan quite some time ago as well.

Although Lore City became as peaceful as it had been before the gathering, everyone felt that the population of the city had clearly increased. Countless unfamiliar people poured into the city daily, forming groups of threes or fives. They were quite powerful and spent extravagantly, clearly originating from large clans or organizations.

However, without any exceptions, all these people of great statuses would immediately become obedient when they entered the city. They would temporarily stay there as if they were on a pilgrimage, gazing in the direction of the Changyang clan from far away. Their eyes would be filled with respect and admiration.

There were even many Sea race, magical beast, and Hundred Races Saint Rulers and Saint Kings who settled there permanently. They all dismissed the violent temperaments they usually showed and become obedient law-abiding citizens of the city.

Although the four races now gathered in Lore City and the city became a great mixture of powerful and weak organizations, with some that had enmity with others, there was no conflict at all to everyone's surprise. No one dared to make trouble in the city, let alone start fighting.

After gaining the agreement from his three aunts, Jian Chen used valuable heavenly resources to purify their bodies and alter their talent in the Changyang clan. They all embarked on a journey of cultivation, just so they could live longer.

Bi Yuntian chose to continue her path as a Radiant Saint Master. The cultivation methods she practiced were valuable ones personally gifted to her by the president of the Radiant Saint Master Union. Coupled with the personal guidance from the president and grand elder whenever they visit the city, Bi Yuntian's cultivation increased extremely quickly.

Jian Chen's uncle, Bi Dao, had consumed a fifth grade Violet Cloud Peach and reached Saint Emperor as well. However, since his strength mostly came from venerable Poisonsword, he continued to practice his supreme poison arts after becoming a Saint Emperor. He sparred with Nubis many times to perfect them.

The ancient Tianmu clan had gained two Saint Kings as well, making up for the death of their ancestor and their lack of a Saint King. However, Jun Mohao and Wang Yinhong had both

consumed first grade peaches because of Tianmu Ling, unlike the other Saint Rulers who had only gained a piece. This allowed their strength to increase drastically. They could not be compared to ordinary Saint Kings.

As one of Jian Chen's few friends, Jian Chen had gifted a fourth grade Violet Cloud Peach to Tianmu Ling, allowing her to reach the Ninth Heavenly Layer as a Saint Ruler.

In the City of God within the Holy Empire, just the city itself took up a space equivalent to half of the Gesun Kingdom. The masters of the city, the Zaar family, were not in a great position. Of the two Saint King ancestors they possessed, Zaar Veimos had died in the battle against the foreign world, while their strongest ancestor, Zaar Caiyun, had vanished completely. Without the protection of Saint Kings, the Zaar family's influence immediately plummeted in the city and the Radiant Saint Master Union seemed to replace them.

If it were not for the fact that the Radiant Saint Master Union had unintentionally started to lead the city, the masters of the city probably would have been replaced long ago. Even though that was the case, the many organizations and clans there all accepted the Radiant Saint Master Union as the masters of the city.

At this moment, a violet streak of light suddenly appeared. It shot across the City of God with lightning-like speed and disappeared in the next moment.

Jian Chen stood on the Zi Ying Sword within the violet streak of light. He looked at the enormous, prosperous city below as a sliver of reminiscence filled his eyes. He could not help but think of everything that had happened when he had come to this city as a Radiant Saint Master.

Even though the City of God was vast, Jian Chen crossed it in just a few seconds. The city below him vanished soon after.

After traveling another ten thousand kilometers, Jian Chen

finally arrived in an ancient mountain range. On one of the mountain peaks stood a simple, lonely wooden hut.

Jian Chen slowed down. After reaching a distance of a hundred meters from the hut, he dropped like fallen leaf. He drifted away from the sword and landed before the door of the wooden hut. The Zi Ying Sword flew over by itself and stuck tightly to his back.

Almost the same time Jian Chen landed, a creak rang out and the door to the wooden hut opened. The white-robed Hao Wu walked out. He was haggard, worry and sorrow filled his face.

He immediately became stunned when he saw Jian Chen. However, he responded quickly and immediately tried to bow to Jian Chen.

Jian Chen stepped forward to stop Hao Wu. He said, "There's no need to be like this, senior Hao Wu. I've come without warning, so I hope I haven't disturbed you."

"Sovereign Jian Chen is welcome at my humble abode. It's an honor, and I can't even express my joy, so how could it be described as a disturbance?" Hao Wu replied. Jian Chen's arrival came as a surprise to him.

The two of them conversed a little before Jian Chen then asked in a straightforward manner, "Senior Hao Wu, I've come this time because I have something I want to ask you. How are you related to the Heavenly Enchantress?"

Jian Chen had kept this question to himself for a very long time. He had already guessed the answer, but he needed to confirm it. After all, he had had a child with the Heavenly Enchantress.

Hao Wu became gloomy as soon as he mentioned the Heavenly Enchantress. He gently sighed and said, "The person referred to as the Heavenly Enchantress on the Tian Yuan Continent is actually my daughter. Her name is Shangguan Mu'er."

Jian Chen's opinion of Hao Wu immediately underwent some

slight changes. He had guessed this already, but he had still just been guessing in the end. There was still a chance that he could have been wrong. Learning the actual truth was completely different than just guessing.

“Then what about Shangguan Mu’er’s mother?” Jian Chen continued with his questions.

Hao Wu’s face became filled with sorrow. He gently sighed, “When Mu’er turned ten, her mother passed away. Her death is directly connected to me. You can even say that I was the one who caused Mu’er’s mother to die. It’s all because I had far too many enemies back then, which caused this tragedy.”

“Senior Hao Wu, I sensed that your relationship with her doesn’t seem great. She seemed to hate you very much. Is it because of what happened in the past?” Jian Chen asked.

“Sovereign Jian Chen, may I know why you’ve suddenly come to me with these questions?” Hao Wu asked with a strange expression.

Jian Chen hesitated for a while before responding, “Senior Jian Chen, to be honest, the Heavenly Enchantress and I were on good terms in the past. If I could help the two of you reconcile, it would obviously be for the best.”

Hao Wu’s face lit up when he heard Jian Chen’s reason. He said, “If that’s the case, I’ll tell you what happened before. Sovereign Jian Chen, I really do hope that you can help me out. I don’t want Mu’er to hate me anymore.”

“I will definitely do everything I can,” Jian Chen replied in a serious voice.

Hao Wu eagerly nodded. After another period of silence, he said with some sorrow, “The death of Mu’er’s mother is only one of the reasons why she hates me. The other is because I still can’t forget about Caiyun. I met Caiyun even before her mother. Back then, if

it were not for the objections of Caiyun's seniors, we would have married and I wouldn't have met Mu'er's mother. It's just a pity that I was just a mercenary back then, without any background, while Caiyun was the treasured daughter of the Zaar family. The tremendous difference in our statuses became the obstacle that prevented me from being with Caiyun.

"After that, I met Mu'er's mother. At that time, I was just a mercenary. I accepted a mission to escort the daughter of a large clan to a place several tens of thousand kilometers away. She was Mu'er's mother, Shangguan Xueyan.

"Shangguan Xueyan's clan, the Shangguan clan, had some enemies. As I escorted her, the party was attacked time and time again by those enemies. Along the way, all the guards died, leaving only me and Shangguan Xueyan. We fled together. Because of an accident, Shangguan Xueyan became pregnant with Mu'er...

"It was a complete accident. Back then, Shangguan Xueyan and I entered a zone of danger. We were both heavily poisoned and intoxicated, which lead to the mistake. Afterward, I married Shangguan Xueyan with no other choice; we became partners. However, I always longed for Caiyun, and Xueyan had learned about my story with her as well. Although I spent those years living with Xueyan, my mind was not present at all. Xueyan was never happy during the years we spent together and her unhappiness was passed onto Mu'er in her youth. Not only had I failed to be a good husband back then, but I had failed to be a good father as well. I basically did not show any concern for the two of them at all.

"One day, my enemies suddenly came looking for me. I just happened to be out, and when I returned, the Shangguan clan had been wiped out because of me. Xueyan had collapsed in her own pool of blood. Mu'er only managed to avoid the disaster by hiding in a secret room. I was only a Heaven Saint Master back then, so I did not have the right to invite a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master to

save Xueyan with origin energy, so she left me forever. My daughter always hated me because of that incident and has never accepted me as her father.”

Chapter 1443: Visiting the Hundred Races

Hao Wu slowly narrated what he had gone through to Jian Chen. His face, weathered from all the storms of blood, was riddled with sorrow. Not only did his face express the anguish he felt because of his relationship with his daughter, but there was also grief for his dead wife.

“I have been filled with regret regarding the matters of the past. If I could return to the past, if the heavens gave me this opportunity, I would give up everything without any hesitation just so I could properly look after Xueyan and Mu’er, to show them love and make up for my mistakes back then,” Hao Wu said painfully.

Jian Chen stared at Hao Wu with mixed feelings. He understood why the Heavenly Enchantress and Hao Wu’s relationship had become like this after learning about Hao Wu’s past. Basically everything was because of Hao Wu’s mistakes.

After a period of silence, Jian Chen looked at the wooden hut behind Hao Wu. He said, “And what will you do regarding Zaar Caiyun’s matter?”

“Caiyun...” Hao Wu murmured softly before looking at the wooden hut behind him. His face immediately became a mixture of emotions. Falling silent for quite some time, he seemed to have finally made a decision. He said, “Caiyun’s become like this because of me. I don’t want her to remain unconscious forever. I wish Caiyun will wake up. I-if Mu’er can forgive me, then I-I’ll leave Caiyun once she does wake up and never see her again.” Hao Wu’s voice trembled quite a lot near the end. When he said those last words, his face was completely pale and his heart ached as if it was being stabbed by a needle.

Jian Chen sighed inside. He knew that Hao Wu was deeply in love with Caiyun, but even Jian Chen could not comment on this

complicated situation. After a moment of silence, Jian Chen said, "Senior Hao Wu, please let me try to wake her up."

Hao Wu's gloomy eyes lit up slightly. Zaar Caiyun had been unconscious for a very long time. He had tried everything, yet she still did not awaken. Even the president of the Radiant Saint Master Union could do nothing, throwing up both his hands. Hao Wu immediately saw some hope because of Jian Chen.

Jian Chen entered the wooden hut. He saw Zaar Caiyun laying there silently. Life was present in her body while her breathing cycle was long and gentle. She did not have any injuries, but she was still unconscious. Her noble and beautiful face bore the traces of sorrow. She seemed rather pitiful.

"Caiyun burned her soul in an attempt to die back then. I saved her, but her soul is extremely injured. Although I've given her various medicines that can heal the soul over the past few years, she still hasn't woken up. Maybe Caiyun's heart is already dead and she's sealed herself off, unwilling to wake up," Hao Wu said with pain evident in his voice.

Jian Chen said after a moment of thought, "I have a great heavenly resources that specializes in healing the soul. It can help the soul in wondrous ways. I can try it and see if she wakes up or not." Injuries to the soul were the most difficult matters to deal with. Even Jian Chen did not have many methods to deal with them. All he could do was use a heavenly resource that targeted injuries to the soul.

Jian Chen took out the Amethyst Spirit Bamboo he had obtained from the Xuanhuang Microcosm and refined a droplet of amethyst sap. A unique fragrance immediately filled the hut. From a single breath, Hao Wu felt his mind clear up and become free. It was as if his soul had become more consolidated.

Hao Wu was extremely shocked. He stared fixedly at the droplet of sap and his breathing became ragged. He knew for sure that this

was a fantastic heavenly resource for healing the soul. He could not help but feel even more confident that Zaar Caiyun would wake up again.

Jian Chen dropped the sap onto Zaar Caiyun's forehead. As soon as it came into contact with her, it silently dissolved, seeping into Zaar Caiyun's soul.

Very soon, Zaar Caiyun's expression changed. The residual sorrow on her face gradually vanished, before being replaced by peace. Like a sleeping beauty, she lay there silently with her eyes closed.

Jian Chen and Hao Wu stood before the bed as they stared at her. Using the Amethyst Spiritual Bamboo was Jian Chen's only method of waking her up. If even that did not work, he would have nothing left to use.

Hao Wu was extremely nervous. He knew how valuable the drop of sap was. With his experience and knowledge, he could tell with a single glance that it was an extremely valuable heavenly resources, something that belonged to legends of the continent. If even something from a legend was unable to wake her up, he would be out of ideas as well.

Time passed quietly in silence; two hours.. four hours... half a day passed very quickly. Zaar Caiyun still did not show any signs of waking up.

"Caiyun, you have to wake up. You have to wake up..." Hao Wu murmured as he clenched Zaar Caiyun's hand. This was his last hope.

A day later, Zaar Caiyun remained unconscious. Jian Chen could not help but sigh. He knew that the Amethyst Spiritual Bamboo could not help her anymore. The injuries of her soul had already been healed by the drop of sap. Her current state had nothing to do with the injuries she had experienced anymore.

Hao Wu was completely pale. Pain and despair filled his eyes. His final hope had vanished as well.

“Looks like only your daughter, the Heavenly Enchantress, can wake up Zaar Caiyun,” Jian Chen frowned. Persuading the Heavenly Enchantress would not be easy.

“Mu’er? Can Mu’er really do it?” Hao Wu asked, surprised. He rarely came in contact with his daughter and everything he knew about her based off rumors. As a result, he did not have a good understanding of her at all. Jian Chen knew more about her.

“There’s no one else in this world besides the Heavenly Enchantress if you want Zaar Caiyun to wake up,” Jian Chen swore.

“But senior Hao Wu, getting your daughter to treat Zaar Caiyun will definitely be difficult. As a result, we can’t rush this matter. Leave it to me. I’ll visit Three Saint Island in a few days to see if I can persuade her,” said Jian Chen.

Hao Wu bitterly nodded and said nothing else.

Afterward, Jian Chen took out a fifth grade Violet Cloud Peach and Comprehension Tea Leaf to give to Hao Wu. He wanted Hao Wu to become a Saint Emperor.

However, Hao Wu declined. Being a Saint Emperor would definitely give him several thousand more years of life. To Hao Wu, that was several thousand more years of torment.

Jian Chen put away the heavenly resources and left. He flew into the distance on his sword.

Several hours later, when Jian Chen landed, he had arrived in a great desert. This was the territory of the Hundred Races, the Wasteland Continent.

Chapter 1444: Soul-offering Ceremony

The Wasteland Continent was, originally, an uninhabitable sea of sand. The climate of the continent was extremely arid, and the environment was horrible. There were very few signs of life.

However, after the Hundred Races suffered defeat and were chased from the Beast God Continent by the magical beasts, they moved to this desert, finally leading to a prosperous age of life in a land where resources were heavily depleted.

Over the million years that the Hundred Races had spent on the Wasteland Continent, it had been modified countless times. However, due to its natural climate, they were unable to change the Wasteland Continent into a green oasis that was brimming with life even after several experts had poured their hearts out.

As a result, greenery was extremely scarce on the continent. From afar, there seemed to be no other colors aside from the deep-blue sky and endless stretches of yellow sand.

At this moment, a smear of violet suddenly appeared on the distant horizon. It silently shot through the air at an unbelievable speed, disappearing into the distance in a single moment.

Jian Chen rode a sword within the violet light as he made his way to the center of the continent. Jian Chen had learned where the War God Mountain was located long ago, so he did not stop at all on his journey, heading directly to the hall on the Zi Ying Sword.

He understood that if he wanted to find Tie Ta here, he just needed to proceed to the sacred mountain of the Hundred Races, War God Mountain.

Jian Chen had already closed his eyes on the Zi Ying Sword. The sword moved just far too quickly, so the surrounding landscape was reduced to a blur. It was impossible to distinguish the surroundings with his eyes, so he used his soul to travel.

However, Jian Chen's face changed at this very moment. He immediately came to a halt as his eyes snapped open. They glowed, as if they could pierce through space and allow him to see what was going on in an extremely distant place.

A speck of green light suddenly appeared in the distance. It bloomed like a flower, a tiny speck that became bright and resplendent. Very soon, the green light illuminated half the sky, dying it a deep green. Within it hid an extremely terrifying life force.

"It's the Elven Godtree," Jian Chen became fixated on the green as he stood on the Zi Ying Sword. The light in his eyes flickered as surprise and doubt appeared on his face.

"This tree appeared in the battle against the World of Forsaken Saints before. However, it was only a small clipping back then. Looks like this is the true form of the tree. However, its terrifying life force even shocks me. Looks like this tree isn't as simple as it's rumored to be," Jian Chen thought. He had heard some rumors regarding the Elven Godtree. He did not know much about it, but he had learned from the rumors that the tree was recorded to only be on the level of a Saint Emperor. Now that he saw it today, his initial understanding was completely thrown out.

Jian Chen stared at the green light, which lit up half the sky, for a while before continuing on as a streak of light.

"Where the green light has appeared just happens to be the War God Mountain. I wonder what's happened there," Jian Chen thought as he sped up slightly.

As he approached the mountain, he entered the boundary of the green light. The green light invaded the violet light around him and came in contact with his body, immediately filling him with a comfortable feeling. At that moment, Jian Chen even felt like his lifespan was increasing.

What shocked Jian Chen even more was that he still felt like his

lifespan was increasing even though he had become a Saint Emperor and possessed the battle prowess of someone in the Origin realm. This filled him with disbelief.

Jian Chen swept over the land below with his soul and actually discovered specks of light in the dry, yellow sand. They were strands of grass sprouts, having appeared out of nowhere. They grew in the sand and gradually enveloped the land before rapidly growing at a visible rate. In just a minute, they had become several inches tall.

In the blink of an eye, the expanse of sand had vanished from the area enveloped by the green light. The sand was replaced by green grass teeming with life.

Jian Chen's soul enveloped an area of two hundred thousand kilometers. There were several cities and tribes of various sizes within his senses. However, regardless of their strength, they currently all knelt on their knees and bowed to the mountain. Their faces were filled with devotion.

Jian Chen remained silent. He gazed into the distance and rapidly flew closer to the War God Mountain. He could vaguely see an ancient tree that was several thousand meters tall standing there. It was shining with a resplendent light as it reached out in all directions. It enveloped quite a portion of the continent. Its tremendous life force even made it difficult for Jian Chen to keep his composure.

Jian Chen finally arrived outside War God Mountain. However, the mountain was currently enveloped by a barrier, and the barrier made it impossible to see what was going on inside. The Elven Godtree had taken root at the bottom of the barrier. One of its branches reached into the barrier and into the War God Hall on the peak of the mountain.

However, the tree was not actually present. It was only an illusion, created by several branches. Each branch was several

hundred meters long.

“Who has come?” A great cry rang out the moment Jian Chen approached the War God Mountain. With the voice, the space a hundred meters around Jian Chen instantly froze. Several auras that came from Saint Emperors descended upon him at the same time.

Jian Chen was not affected at all. His gaze remained fixated on the mountain as the light in his eyes flickered.

The space a hundred meters above Jian Chen gently pulsed and a few figures silently appeared. Every single one of them gave off a tremendous presence. They were all Saint Emperors, and they were glaring at Jian Chen.

They were all experts of the Hundred Races. Jian Chen was familiar with them. He had seen many of them in the previous battle against the World of Forsaken Saints. They were the few Saint Kings that had managed to survive the battle, but they had all become Saint Emperors now.

“J-Jian Chen!” The Saint Emperors recognized Jian Chen as well and were immediately surprised. Without any hesitation, they immediately recalled their presences and the space around Jian Chen returned to normal.

“It’s sovereign Jian Chen. We didn’t know sovereign Jian Chen had come, so if we have offended you, please forgive us,” the Saint Emperors immediately became respectful and spoke with some gratitude.

They all understood that they had become Saint Emperors because of their war god’s assistance and the human sovereign’s gifts.

Tie Ta and Jian Chen’s friendship was no secret among the four races. All of them had witnessed Tie Ta go to the Tian Yuan Continent to ask Jian Chen for the heavenly resources. This matter

had obviously reached the ears of the experts as well.

“What’s happening on War God Mountain? And what’s happening with my brother, Tie Ta?” Jian Chen asked as he stared at the barrier in front of him.

The barrier had been cast by around a dozen Saint Emperors. It concealed everything that was inside. Jian Chen’s soul was unable to penetrate it, unless he removed the barrier.

“Esteemed sovereign of the humans, the war god is currently undergoing a Soul-offering Ceremony. This ceremony is extremely important to the war god. We cannot afford to have anything go wrong. In order for it to be successful, we cast this barrier to lock down the mountain after gaining the war god’s approval,” replied a Saint Emperor of the Hundred Races. It was an old woman with green fire flickering in her eyes. She was the Saint Emperor of the flame daemons.

“I want you to open the barrier. I’m here, so there’s no need to worry about safety. Unless an Origin realm expert comes personally, no one will be able to approach this place,” Jian Chen said without leaving any room for disagreement. The barrier hid everything inside. It was impossible to find out what was going on from the outside. He found this worrying.

“This...” The Saint Emperors hesitated. They seemed troubled.

A cold light flashed through Jian Chen’s eyes. He coldly said, “If you don’t open the barrier, I can only do so myself.”

Helpless, the Saint Emperors could only remove the barrier around the mountain.

As soon as the barrier vanished, a tremendous pulse of energy along with a resplendent golden light appeared. The War God Hall at the very peak of the mountain let out a bright light, mixing with the green light from the Elven Godtree. The light illuminated the entire region and dyed the whole mountain golden.

Countless people sat close to one another on the mountain, covering every inch of the land. All of them had their eyes closed while their faces were filled with devotion. They used a secret technique to condense a sliver of their soul, allowing it to drift out of the top of their heads.

An illusionary branch of the Elven Godtree revolved around the top of the mountain. It used the branch to draw a profound formation, connecting everyone's soul together. After being refined by the formation, the souls turned into a wondrous energy that was channeled into the War God Hall.

Jian Chen looked around before resting his gaze on the divine hall at the very top. He became rather stern. He felt that the divine hall was even more powerful than the Beast God Hall that belonged to the magical beasts. This unsettled him.

“Why is your Soul-offering Ceremony so strange, where it needs the souls of so many people?” Jian Chen asked in a deep voice. He could now see what was going on, but he was unable to tell whether it was beneficial or detrimental to Tie Ta.

“The Soul-offering Ceremony has been passed down through the ancient records in the War God Hall. The records say that our war god must undergo this procedure, but we don't know the exact reason,” said an elven Saint Emperor. She was a beautiful woman who seemed only to be in her twenties. A pair of wings sat on her back, and she seemed to be divine.

Chapter 1445: The Elven Godtree

Jian Chen frowned as he slowly glanced over all the people present. His gaze stopped on the figure of the Elven Godtree for some time before he looked at the formation drawn by the illusionary branch. The formation had connected all the soul fragments from the people on the mountain and was channeling it into the War God Hall as a wondrous type of energy.

However, Jian Chen was unsure as to what was going on in the War God Hall. He could clearly sense that the War God Hall was even more powerful than the Beast God Hall. His soul could not penetrate.

Jian Chen stared at the bright divine hall for a while before a sliver of determination appeared in his eyes. With a single movement, he headed toward it.

The door to the divine hall was not closed. Jian Chen was slightly worried about Tie Ta, so he wanted to enter to check on him. Although the war god of the Hundred Races possessed the faith of the entire race, this ceremony was just far too odd. The entire process was being directed by a mysterious, ancient tree, so Jian Chen had to take precautions. After all, something like this had happened to the white tiger in the past as well.

“Sovereign Jian Chen, do not approach the War God Hall...” The Saint Emperors all cried out as they rapidly ran toward Jian Chen. They wanted to stop him.

However, Jian Chen had already arrived before the War God Hall. He was so fast that even the Saint Emperors were not able to catch up to him.

“Sovereign Jian Chen, not only will the war god suffer severe losses if the ceremony is disturbed, but even the nine hundred ninety thousand people on the mountain will suffer a great backlash, which would be almost irrecoverable...” Seeing how they

could not catch up to the Jian Chen, the Saint Emperors sent him a message through a technique as quickly as they could. Worry filled their faces.

Jian Chen paused and after a slight moment of hesitation, he made his way to the door. The divine hall gave Jian Chen an impression that it was extremely powerful, but the more powerful something was, the more difficult it was to control. He believed that no one present could control the divine hall, so they obviously could not use its power.

The moment Jian Chen headed toward the entrance, the Elven Godtree suddenly moved. With a flash of green light, a branch that was several meters thick blocked the entrance.

The branch was illusionary and completely condensed from tremendous life force, but it stopped Jian Chen in his steps.

A gleam of light flickered through Jian Chen's eyes, and he suddenly turned toward the Elven Godtree that extended into the sky. His gaze gradually sharpened, as if he wanted to see through the tree.

"This king knows that you are worried about the safety of the war god. Do not worry, the war god's status among us, the God race, is not something you can imagine. We would never do something detrimental to the war god." An obscure voice rang through Jian Chen's head. It came from a female, and it was gentle but dignified.

Jian Chen became stern in a single moment. He expanded his soul in all directions and became filled with caution. He did not know where the voice came from at all.

"Are you the one talking to me?" Jian Chen asked gruffly as he stared at the figure of the Elven Godtree nearby.

"This ceremony is extremely important to the war god. Nothing can go wrong. Before the ceremony ends, do not enter the War God

Hall, or you will end up injuring the war god instead of helping him.” The obscure voice appeared again. Jian Chen was still unable to find its origins. As soon as the voice finished speaking, the ancient branch at the entrance of the divine hall was removed.

Jian Chen did not try to enter the divine hall any longer. Instead, he stood there as he stared at the Elven Godtree. He was certain that even if the speaker was not the tree, they were still closely connected to it.

“Who are you? Are you the spirit of the Elven Godtree?” Jian Chen asked again. He was very perturbed. He had never thought that such a grand existence hid among the Hundred Races.

It was impossible for her to be a Saint Emperor, since just being able to communicate to him without revealing her position was not something Saint Emperors could do.

“Three days later, the ceremony will end. Before then, I hope you will not disturb the ceremony, just in case you cause it to fail.” The voice rang out again and completely ignored Jian Chen’s questions.

“Alright. I’ll wait here patiently for three days,” responded Jian Chen before he left the War God Mountain. He waited patiently, hovering away from the mountain, but his gaze was fixed on the ancient tree the entire time.

The Saint Emperors who did not take part in the ceremony all looked around with uncertainty. Doubt filled their eyes. One of them could not hold back their curiosity and asked politely, “Sovereign Jian Chen, may I ask who you were talking to? Is there a mysterious expert that we cannot sense here?”

Jian Chen remained silent. He understood that the obscure voice was probably only audible to him.

Three days later, the nine hundred ninety thousand people opened their eyes. Their faces were pale and haggard. They seemed

extremely weak, but they were all filled with emotion. The gazes they directed at the War God Hall were filled with respect that came from the bottom of their hearts.

The figure of the Elven Godtree disappeared, returning to a branch that was stabbed into the ground. It was carefully collected by the elven Saint Emperor. The force of life in the surroundings disappeared with the figure of the tree. The formation had completely vanished, leaving only the War God Hall shining as bright as it had been before, rivaling the sun.

The vegetation that had grown on a small part of the continent, because of the teeming life force of the Elven Godtree, began to wither after it lost its source of life. The vegetation would soon be reduced to dead grass.

“Looks like the ceremony was successful. The ancient method in the records is right.” The Saint Emperors of the Hundred Races all expressed their joy. The ancient method originated from the War God Hall and, after the countless years it had been around, this was only the second time it had been used.

The branch that had conjured the Elven Godtree had been examined countless times by Jian Chen’s soul before it was collected by the elven Saint Emperor. “It’s an ordinary branch. There’s no other secret to it aside from its terrifying life force,” Jian Chen thought. He could not help but think about where the Elven Godtree actually was.

At this moment, a terrifying presence radiated from the War God Hall. Tie Ta emerged from the divine hall with long strides. He let out a lustrous light and stood three meters tall. His bearing was very dignified.

Jian Chen looked at Tie Ta and smiled from the inside. He knew that his friend had truly grown.

This growth was not an increase in strength or age but in temperament.

“We welcome the war god’s emergence!”

All the people on the War God Mountain, including the Saint Emperors, kneeled and bowed to Tie Ta. Their faces were filled with reverence from the bottom of their hearts, as if they were welcoming a god.

Tie Ta seemed to ignore their kneeling. He looked at Jian Chen. One of them stood outside the divine hall while the other stood beyond the outskirts of the mountain. They stared at one another. A few seconds later, Tie Ta took a step and arrived before Jian Chen instantly. He patted Jian Chen’s shoulder heavily and smiled, “Jian Chen, I never thought that you would come to the Wasteland Continent to look for me so soon. I was undergoing the Soul-offering Ceremony a few days ago and was cut off from the outside world, so I’ve made you wait.”

Tie Ta’s strength was very great. If Jian Chen was not in possession of the Chaotic Body and was not so powerful, he probably would have struggled to endure Tie Ta’s force.

“Your ceremony is very strange, actually requiring the souls of so many people. I was worried about you and almost charged into the divine hall. It’s good seeing you fine now,” Jian Chen smiled faintly.

“The ceremony is very strange. However, this ceremony has been passed down since the ancient times. It condenses the souls of nine hundred ninety thousand people to create the soul of the axe of the warring gods. The previous war god, uncle Aergyns, experienced this ceremony as well,” said Tie Ta. Afterward, the axe imprint on his forehead began to shine, and a small golden axe flew out, turning into an awe-inspiring war axe in Tie Ta’s hands.

“I learned after coming to the Hundred Races that the weapon in my hand can only display its greatest power when its form is fused with its soul. The axe I used before was only composed of the form and not the soul. The ceremony I just went through was to

condense the soul of the axe, fusing the form with the soul,” Tie Ta said as he stared at the golden axe in his hands.

Jian Chen looked at the axe and could clearly feel its changes. The axe seemed like an inanimate object that had gained life. The pressure radiating from the axe became even more effective on the soul.

“Jian Chen, let’s go and catch up properly in the War God Hall.” Tie Ta put the axe away and pulled Jian Chen into the War God Hall.

No outsider had ever set foot in the War God Hall in countless years. Jian Chen was the first.

The two of them spoke for a very long time in the War God Hall. As soon as they thought about how they had used to be students in Kargath Academy but had now become sovereign-like figures to entire races, they both sighed emotionally.

“Tie Ta, can I ask you how much you know about the Elven Godtree?” Jian Chen suddenly asked a question and looked at Tie Ta with interest.

Tie Ta thought about the question seriously and said, “I’ve only come to the Hundred Races recently, so I only have a rough understanding of each race. However, I do know some things regarding the Elven Godtree. It’s said that the tree has already existed for an extremely long time. When the Hundred Races still resided on the Beast God Continent, before uncle Aergyns had been born, the Elven Godtree was there. It’s always represented the elves. After we were defeated, the Elven Godtree was moved from the Beast God Continent to the Wasteland Continent with us, changing the territory of the elves into a great, lush forest. It uses its own life force to nourish the land, and it’s never withered after so many years.”

“There’s even a rumor that the Elven Godtree cannot be destroyed. No matter how heavily damaged it becomes, it can

completely recover in an instant.”

Chapter 1446: The Elven Godking

Jian Chen remained silent because of what Tie Ta had told him. He gently frowned and sank into his thoughts. His mind was filled with matters regarding the Elven Godtree.

A tree that had lived for over a million years and was even more ancient than the four champions from the ancient times was no longer an ordinary tree, especially with its abnormal movements during the Soul-offering Ceremony. Coupled with the obscure voice of unknown origins, it made Jian Chen feel that the tree was not as simple as it seemed.

“Then where did that obscure voice come from? Has the Elven Godtree gained self-consciousness, or is it someone else?” Jian Chen wondered. In the past, the Hundred Races had been the only great race that had not possessed a Saint Emperor, but now that Jian Chen had personally come to the Wasteland Continent, he found that they were not as simple as people had imagined them to be.

There was actually a mysterious existence, who even he himself was unable to detect, hidden on this barren continent. No one knew who they were since they had never been detected by others.

“Jian Chen, the Elven Godtree has a very powerful life force, but its battle prowess is just far too limited. It’s only at the level of a Saint Emperor, so it won’t be of great use. After we were defeated in the ancient times and the Elven Godtree was moved from the Beast God Continent to the Wasteland Continent, it’s never moved again,” Tie Ta said with a deep, muffled voice. He thought that Jian Chen wanted to ask if the tree could be moved to the Tian Yuan Continent for the next major battle after Jian Chen had witnessed how extraordinary it was in battle.

Jian Chen gently shook his head, “Tie Ta, I feel like this tree is not as simple as you all think it is. There is definitely an even

greater mystery behind it. I plan to visit the territory of the elves to properly examine the Godtree.”

Tie Ta immediately stood up when he heard that and said, “Jian Chen, I’ll come with you.”

Jian Chen and Tie Ta left the War God Hall together and made their way to the territory of the elves. An elven expert followed them, but they were not a Saint Emperor, only a Saint King.

Along the way, the Saint King enthusiastically explained the situation of the elves to Jian Chen and Tie Ta. Jian Chen gained a rough understanding of the elves.

The territory of the elves was only several hundred thousand kilometers away from the War God Mountain. When their race had first moved there, the place was still a desert, devoid of any life. Any type of vegetation struggled to survive. After the Elven Godtree took root and used its own tremendous life force to nourish the desert, the quality of the soil changed. Only then could a forest grow on the Wasteland Continent. Ancient trees that were several hundred meters tall could be seen everywhere. The entire forest was filled with life, and the vegetation was countless times more dense than any mountain on the Tian Yuan Continent.

Soon after Jian Chen and Tie Ta had entered the territory of the elves, the elven experts received the news. The Saint Emperor that Jian Chen had met outside the War God Hall lead around a dozen Saint Kings to welcome and receive them.

“The elven queen, Julisia the thirty-third, welcomes the great war god and the esteemed human sovereign!” The female Saint Emperor and the Saint Kings behind her all bowed to Jian Chen and Tie Ta.

“Elven queen, we’ve come this time with the intention of seeing the ancient tree of your esteemed race that has existed since ancient times. Would that be inconvenient for you?” Jian Chen cut right to the chase and expressed their reason for coming.

The elven queen hesitated slightly before allowing Jian Chen to visit the Elven Godtree. She knew very well that she could not object at all. Even ignoring Jian Chen's strength and status, just the war god standing beside him sucked away her courage to decline.

Afterward, the elven queen personally lead the way. She took Tie Ta and Jian Chen to the land where the Elven Godtree had taken root. Along the way, Jian Chen discovered quite a few elves dancing about through the forest and fluttering their wings. The males were handsome while the females were pretty. Pure smiles filled their faces. They seemed naive and lively.

Several holes existed on some huge trees. That was where the elves stayed as well as where they cultivated. Because of their cultivation method, the holes did not harm the trees at all and would even hasten their growth, allowing them to become even taller and thicker.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta walked several thousand kilometers, following the elven queen's lead. They entered the central region of the forest. Although the region was teeming with life, it was silent. There was not a single person visible as far as the eye could see.

"This is the forbidden region of us elves. Without the agreement of the elven queen, even the elders of our race cannot set foot here. This is because this is the place where our Godtree has taken root. The Elven Godtree possesses an extremely venerated status within our territory, even though it's just a tree," the elven queen said with a solemn voice.

"Is this really just a tree?" Jian Chen thought. He raised his head and looked ahead. Several dozen kilometers away, he saw a great tree that glowed with faint green light. Even though it was only several hundred meters tall, it greatly differed from the projections he had seen before. However, he could still tell with a single glance that it was the Elven Godtree.

In Jian Chen's eyes, the Elven Godtree seemed no different than any other tree, aside from its green glow. It was very difficult to see the awe it had displayed on the battle against the foreign world and outside War God Mountain. However, as his soul approached the tree, it was stopped a hundred meters away by a mysterious force, preventing it from getting any closer.

Jian Chen raised his head to observe the ancient tree and slowly made his way over. In the end, he stopped a hundred meters away from the Elven Godtree and closely examined it.

"It seems ordinary on the outside, just like any other tree, but a terrifyingly tremendous life force is hidden inside. This life force is so powerful that even I feel shocked. It's a tree, yet it's reached a state where it seems the same as its origin form. This is just amazing," Jian Chen softly said as he studied the tree. It seemed like he was just talking to himself.

"This mysterious Elven Godtree can fool the entire Hundred Races, but it cannot fool me. I have come to personally see you. I know you can hear me talking, so do you still plan on hiding?" Jian Chen spoke to the tree. Tie Ta and the elven queen both suspiciously stared at Jian Chen. They felt that Jian Chen was saying something odd.

"Sigh." Suddenly, a sigh rang through Jian Chen's head, but he was unable to tell where it had come from at all.

"Come in." The obscure, female voice rang in Jian Chen's head once again. A human-sized hole suddenly appeared in the tree in front of him.

The elven queen's eyes immediately narrowed. Shock filled her face. The Elven Godtree had always just been a tree with a supreme status throughout the history of the elves. Nothing like this had ever happened before.

Without any hesitation, Jian Chen strode over. Just when Tie Ta and the elven queen behind him wanted to follow him in, they

were stopped a hundred meters away by a mysterious force. The force was extremely strange, and even Tie Ta was unable to overcome it.

Jian Chen entered the hole in the tree and immediately disappeared. The tree returned to how it was before. There were no signs of what had just happened.

Jian Chen arrived in a green space. It was empty, like a miniature world, but filled with the presence of life. Jian Chen stood in the center of the space.

“You sure are worthy of being known as the greatest human expert to reach such a level of cultivation within just a few decades and to discover this king’s existence. Even in the Saints’ World, your talent belongs to the very top.” The obscure voice rang through the space. It was gentle and pleasant but also dignified.

“That’s the second time you’ve referred to yourself as a king. You shouldn’t be a tree if you refer to yourself like that. If I’ve guessed correctly, you shouldn’t be a tree at all. I’m very curious, and I also want to know a lot as to who you are.” Jian Chen inquired. However, he was not as calm as he seemed on the surface. His heart churned. The voice that had just referred to herself as a king actually knew about the existence of the Saints’ World. Did that mean she was an expert from the Saints’ World?

“With your talent, you’ll surpass me sooner or later, or even end up leaving me in the dust. As a result, you have the right to know some things. This king is Audriana, the strongest Godking of the God race. I have come under the orders of my race’s hall elders, descending here over three million years ago to welcome the return of the war god.”

Chapter 1447: Experts of the Godking's Throne

Jian Chen's eyes immediately widened as disbelief filled his face. His heart surged even more, and he almost lost all composure. He had even begun to doubt his ears at that moment.

A Godking! The owner of the obscure voice was actually a Godking. This was just far too astounding.

Jian Chen had learned from the sword spirits long ago that beyond the Origin realm was Godhood. Godhood was split into another four cultivation levels, which were Deity, God, Overgod, and Godking. Godking was the peak of Godhood, and one more step would lead to the highest realm of cultivation in the Saints' World, the Primordial realm!

Audriana was the strongest Godking among the God race of the Saints' World. That would mean that even among the Godkings, her strength was ranked near the top.

Jian Chen was extremely shocked, struggling to return to his senses even after quite some time. A Godking was actually hidden among the Hundred Races and had never been discovered over the countless years. This was just far too shocking, far too astounding.

Jian Chen finally began to recover after a long time. He sucked in a deep breath and stared at the empty, green space with some lingering shock. He asked, "Senior, junior doesn't understand something. You said that you came under the orders of the hall elders to welcome the war god. Why did you not interfere when the previous war god, Aergyns, was slain by the Winged Tiger God?" With your strength as a Godking, protecting the previous war god would have been extremely easy, wouldn't it?"

"Sigh," Audriana deeply exhaled as her voice became bitter. She said, "I've already lost that ability. I may be the greatest Godking

of the God race, but I'm only a weak soul now. After being weak for countless years, I need to sleep and nourish my soul so it doesn't disperse."

Jian Chen understood. The Hundred Races had a Godking, yet she had never been discovered after so many years and had never acted either because Audriana was only a fragile soul now. Even if she wanted to do something, she did not have the power.

"Senior, you're a Godking. You're already invincible here, so may I ask how you ended up like this? Did something go wrong during the process of coming down, or was it some other reason?" Jian Chen carefully asked.

"I'm not the only Godking in this world. The Godking of the Ice Goddess Hall, Shui Yunlan, came down as well. I arrived several thousand years before Shui Yunlan, but she went overboard when she came down. As soon as she came down, she sealed up this world. Not only did she seal up the tunnel to the Saints' World, she stopped everyone from being able to reach the Origin realm. Even the God race Saint Emperors who followed me to this lower world were affected, preventing them from reaching the Origin realm. For this, I engaged in a great battle against her. Unfortunately, our difference in strength was extremely great even though I was the greatest Godking of the God race. I was not her opponent, so I was slain by her in the end.

"Shui Yunlan wiped out my body and heavily injured my soul, making it extremely difficult to recover. The teeming life force within my body turned into this tree of life to nourish my weakened soul so that it would not disperse. However, Shui Yunlan would never dare to kill me off. Once I die, the hall elders in the higher world would immediately know what had happened."

Jian Chen's heart beat heavily. He could not help but think about protector Shui. He sighed in surprise, "Is protector Shui really that strong? You're both Godkings, but you're still not her opponent

even as the greatest Godking of the God race?”

“Shui Yunlan has already arrived at the very peak of Godking. There is a Godking’s Throne in the Saints’ World that records a thousand of the most powerful Godkings in the entire Saints’ World. Shui Yunlan’s ranking is ninth. There are only a few Godkings who have surpassed her in the entire Saints’ World. I only rank in the top one hundred. Her strength is not something you can imagine,” Audriana gently sighed.

Jian Chen gasped. Only now did he understand just how terrifying protector Shui was, the same person who was always polite to his sister.

There were many Godkings in the vast Saints’ World, yet protector Shui ranked ninth among all of them. This was a great surprise to Jian Chen.

“And that was what happened over three million years ago. Although Shui Yunlan’s strength has not been able to progress during the three million years she’s stayed here, much less make a breakthrough, she’s become even more powerful now,” Audriana’s voice rang out. It was filled with bitterness.

Although she had stayed in the lower world with Shui Yunlan for over three million years, Shui Yunlan’s strength had increased while she was only a weak soul right now. Even recovering her strength was just an extravagant wish, let alone making any improvements.

“You can only rely on yourself to fend off the threat of the foreign world. I am unable to help you. I am also a Godking that’s come down from a higher world, so I can’t interfere with too many matters regarding this world, or I will be punished by the laws of the world. The treasure that the hall elders bestowed upon me to fend off the punishment of the laws was destroyed in the battle against Shui Yunlan...

“I can already sense that Shui Yunlan has found the snow

goddess of the Ice Goddess Hall. Soon, Shui Yunlan will leave with her. At that time, the seal of this world will shatter and the tunnel to the Saints' World will open again. The formation that restricts everyone from reaching the Origin realm will vanish as well. At that time, you'll be able to reach the Saints' World...

“At the same time, since you're friends with the war god, I hope you can pass on my message: he cannot take revenge for the previous war god before he has truly become powerful. That Winged Tiger God from a million years ago is not as simple as he seemed. Even though he only displayed strength of someone from the Origin realm, he makes my heart jump. Even if he's not as powerful as me, he is definitely in possession of a treasure that can heavily injure me. I also get the same feeling from the human Mo Tianyun...

“I have become extremely exhausted after assisting the war god undergo the Soul-offering Ceremony, so I am about to fall into a slumber again. Do not expose my existence. When the Winged Tiger God slayed the previous war god, he sealed up his corpse and shed eighteen pieces of fur. Those pieces are the only key to the seal of the war god, and opening the seal will allow the current war god to obtain the essence and power of the previous war god.”

Chapter 1448: Changes to the Saint Artifact

When Jian Chen emerged from the Elven Godtree, Audriana sank into a slumber. The Soul-offering Ceremony that Tie Ta had gone through had been secretly directed by Audriana. She had expended a great deal of energy, so she needed to fall asleep since she no longer possessed her strength as a Godking.

Jian Chen stood a hundred meters away as he stared at the Elven Godtree that let out a faint, green glow. His emotions were extremely mixed. He now knew that the Elven Godtree before him was not a tree but a Godking.

“Jian Chen, what happened?” Tie Ta asked Jian Chen out of doubt as he stood beside him. He had no idea what had happened within the Elven Godtree.

The elven queen stared fixedly at Jian Chen as well while she stood beside Tie Ta. She wanted to know the answer to that question very much. The Elven Godtree had existed among the elves for so long, yet something like this had never happened before. It had never let someone into its main trunk.

Jian Chen said nothing. He gazed at the tree before bowing. He said, “This is a Godking’s tree.” Afterward, he turned around and left.

Tie Ta scratched his head in confusion. He glanced at the tree suspiciously a few times before silently leaving with Jian Chen.

“A Godking’s tree? What is sovereign Jian Chen trying to say?” The elven queen stood there in a daze. She closely observed the Elven Godtree while confusion filled her face.

Although she did not understand what Jian Chen meant by ‘Godking’s tree,’ she understood that the Elven Godtree was probably not as simple as her predecessors had understood it to be. Otherwise, how could it have been worthy of receiving a bow from

the human sovereign?

However, what Jian Chen did not know was that soon after he had left, the bow he gave to the Elven Godtree was recorded in the archives of the race. At the same time, the ‘Godking’s tree’ he had mentioned was clearly recorded as well.

Tie Ta and Jian Chen left the only forest on the Wasteland Continent after visiting the elves. Along the way, Jian Chen also asked Tie Ta about the matter regarding the keys to Aergyns’ corpse, the beast furs.

“The hall elders of the War God Hall have reported that they’ve already gathered eleven of the eighteen beast furs. There’s just seven left that they haven’t obtained. Two of them are with the Beast God Hall on the Beast God Continent, one is with Mercenary City on the Tian Yuan Continent, one is with the Tyrant’s Blade School of the protector clans, and the whereabouts of the last three are unknown,” said Tie Ta.

Jian Chen thought of something. With a flip of his hand, three palm-sized beast furs immediately appeared. These beast furs were once crucial for his breakthrough to Sainthood. He had given the three beast fur to others to cultivate with but had taken them soon after back.

“Tie Ta, I just happen to have three beast furs. These must be the three with unknown whereabouts. I’ll give them to you right now. I’ll help you find the other beast furs as well,” said Jian Chen before passing his three beast furs to Tie Ta.

There was obviously no need to be polite since Tie Ta and Jian Chen were close, so Tie Ta accepted the three beast furs.

At this time, Jian Chen’s face suddenly changed. A golden stream of light immediately shot from his forehead, turning into a fist-sized golden tower before him.

“Tie Ta, I need to enter the artifact space, so I’ll leave it with you

for now.” Jian Chen hurried into the artifact space before Tie Ta could ask why.

A white-robed, middle-aged man currently stood in a majestic hall within the artifact space. He sternly stared ahead. He was the artifact spirit of the artifact space.

An extremely powerful but not very large formation shone with resplendent light, illuminating the hall in front of the artifact spirit. To no surprise, the Radiant Saint Force origin energy refined by the artifact was all stored within the formation.

The origin energy of Radiant Saint Force was crucial for allowing Radiant Saint Masters to go from Class 6 to 7 and from Class 7 to 8. However, the world did not possess any by itself. The reason why the saint artifact existed was to absorb the Radiant Saint Force in the world and transform it into origin energy.

The seal within the artifact space had existed for an extremely long time, so long that it had been there before the artifact spirit was born. At the same time, it was the only place in the artifact space that the artifact spirit could not control.

Over the countless years the saint artifact had existed, the amount of origin energy it had stored up had already reached a terrifying point. However, the seal would only weaken once every fifty years, and every time it weakened, only a bare minimum of the origin energy would escape, allowing people to take it away and thus giving birth to Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters on the Tian Yuan Continent.

At this moment, a violet streak of light shot over with lightning-like speed. It vanished into the hall. Jian Chen had made his way over as quickly as he could once he received the news from the artifact spirit.

As soon as Jian Chen arrived, his gaze was drawn to the powerful seal. He immediately frowned because the seal that held in all the origin energy was extremely unstable. It showed signs of

shattering.

“Greetings to the master!” The artifact spirit greeted Jian Chen with a bow.

Jian Chen stared at the seal and asked, “Artifact spirit, what’s happening here?”

“Master, I am not too sure as to what the exact situation is, because I only just discovered the abnormality of the seal. However, according to my close observations, I have found that a foreign force appeared at a certain time within the seal. Even though there is only a sliver of it, it is so powerful that it makes me shiver. It’s currently eating away the seal bit by bit,” responded the artifact spirit.

Jian Chen narrowed his eyes and stared at the seal. Indeed, he discovered the foreign force that did not belong to the seal, as described by the artifact spirit. After a moment of observation, he suddenly became extremely stern. There was only just a sliver of the foreign force, but Jian Chen sensed it as a fatal threat.

“Just how did this foreign force appear?” Jian Chen thought as the light in his eyes flickered with uncertainty. He thought about Audriana, but he quickly shook his head. This force clearly did not match Audriana’s power and he could not think of a reason why she would want to help him.

“Master, the seal is slowly being eaten away by the energy. If this continues, the seal will completely collapse in just a few days. If the seal is unable to keep it busy and if the foreign force erupts in the saint artifact, the outcome will be...” The artifact spirit said with a heavy voice as his complexion became horrendous. The saint artifact could only resist attacks from Saint Emperors, and a few more powerful Saint Emperors would have been enough to destroy it, let alone the foreign force that surpassed Saint Emperor. Once the saint artifact was destroyed, he would disperse as well.

Chapter 1449: Collecting the Beast Furs

Jian Chen's complexion became ugly. He worried that it really would turn out like what the artifact spirit had said, where once the foreign force was free from the seal, it would explode and obliterate the saint artifact.

Not only would the saint artifact be destroyed, but the artifact spirit would disperse as well, dying. The artifact spirit was inseparable from the saint artifact. It had been born in the artifact space. They mutually coexisted.

Of course, this was true unless he was as powerful as the sword spirits, who could continue to exist even after the artifacts they belonged to were destroyed.

“Quite a lot of the seal has been destroyed already. Looks like this foreign force has already been here for quite some time,” Jian Chen said with a gruff voice. What he wanted to understand the most was just where did this foreign force come from?

“It's a pity that I can't control everything here and only just discovered the abnormal pulses of energy from this seal as well as the abnormality here.” The artifact spirit gently sighed and felt bitter.

Jian Chen and the artifact spirit stood there as they stared at the seal. They thought about methods to deal with it in an attempt to remove the foreign force before it could erupt after it completely ate away the seal. Unfortunately, the two of them could only sigh after racking their brains. There was nothing they could do to the foreign force.

Although there was only a sliver of this foreign force, it was extremely powerful. Jian Chen was not confident he could disperse it even if he erupted with his full battle prowess, which was equivalent to the Origin realm. At the same time, the saint artifact was unable to withstand the power of the Origin realm. If Jian

Chen really did display his full strength, the saint artifact probably would collapse before he could even launch an attack on the foreign force.

“This foreign force is eating away at the seal bit by bit in an extremely gentle method. Not only is it able to destroy the seal, but it probably won’t harm the saint artifact either. Looks like this force is harmless for now, or why would it go to such great lengths with its power if it wanted to destroy the saint artifact?” Jian Chen pondered silently. However, he was still unsure whether the force would destroy the saint artifact in the end or not.

Jian Chen left the artifact spirit there to closely observe any changes to the seal. He then left the artifact space. When he emerged, he learned that Tie Ta had already taken the saint artifact with him back to the War God Hall.

In the War God Hall, Jian Chen got Tie Ta to summon many hall elders and learned about the current force of the Hundred Races as well as all the trump cards they had on hand. He needed this information so that he could make preparations to fend off the next wave of the invasion.

He had come to the Hundred Races this time to see Tie Ta as well as to truly understand all the trump cards that the Hundred Races possessed.

No one understood the Hundred Races better than the hall elders of the War God Hall. Even Tie Ta did not know as much as them since he had only just arrived.

If it was before the invasion, the Hundred Races would definitely find this request outrageous if Jian Chen had come as a human to investigate the Hundred Races. Even if he was the human sovereign, the hall elders would not tell him anything, yet the hall elders told Jian Chen everything he wanted to know right now.

This was because they too understood that the threat of the foreign world was just far too great. If the four races did not work

together, they would not be able to stop the foreign world, which would lead to their extinction.

However, Jian Chen was disappointed in the end. The Hundred Races did have some trump cards, enough to stop a large scale invasion from the Tian Yuan Continent or the Beast God Continent, but they could only be used to deal with Saint Emperors. They were helpless against experts from the Origin realm.

And they had already used quite a few of these trump cards to fend off the first part of the invasion. Over a dozen forbidden artifacts that had been passed down throughout the ages among each race had been destroyed. Even the treasure of the dwarves, the Heaven's Guard, had been rendered unusable as well.

“Jian Chen, I feel like this War God Hall can stop Origin realm experts,” Tie Ta could not help but add when he saw Jian Chen frown.

Jian Chen glanced at the majestic war god hall and asked, “Tie Ta, can you refine this divine hall?”

Tie Ta scratched his head, “I can already fuse my soul into the divine hall and know everything that happens within it, but I still can't control it. It seems like I can only refine a small fraction of the divine hall with my current strength, and it'll only let me expand or shrink the divine hall, allowing me to carry it with me like your saint artifact. I still won't be able to use the power of the divine hall. I need to fully refine it to do that.”

Jian Chen did not find his response surprising at all. He knew that the War God Hall was extraordinary, even more powerful than the supreme divine hall in Mercenary City and the one on the Beast God Continent. How could an ordinary Saint Emperor control such a powerful divine hall so easily?

He had even guessed that this divine hall did not belong to this world at all and was brought down from the Saints' World by

Audriana.

“Tie Ta, around how long will it take you to refine a small part of this divine hall?” Jian Chen asked.

“This...” Tie Ta pondered silently for a while before replying with uncertainty, “Probably several decades or even over a century.”

Jian Chen shook his head with a bitter smile. That was just too long. The World of Forsaken Saints would never give them so much time to prepare.

Jian Chen bid farewell to Tie Ta and left. He emerged from the War God Hall. He had completed his journey to the Wasteland Continent and returned to the Tian Yuan Continent.

The first thing he did when he returned was visit the Tyrant’s Blade School of the ten protector clans. When he asked them for the beast fur, the great elders immediately went into their treasury in their ancestral divine hall to retrieve it. They were polite and gave it to Jian Chen.

Afterward, Jian Chen went to where Mercenary City had once stood. Although Mercenary City had ceased to exist on the continent long ago, the miniature world still remained. The organization had weakened, but they still possessed their deep heritage.

Jian Chen asked the grand elder of Mercenary City about great elder Tian Jian in the miniature world. He learned that Tian Jian was still refining the supreme divine hall of Mercenary City and still had not completed it since he had gone into seclusion.

The grand elder even took Jian Chen into the miniature world where the divine hall was stored. Jian Chen felt that the mysterious power hidden within the structure was extremely energetic and that the divine hall gave off a tremendous pressure, filling up the surrounding space. It would cause the surroundings

to distort from time to time.

Jian Chen gazed at the floating divine hall in the distance and sighed inside. When he had heard Tian Jian mention the beast furs in the past, he had also learned that Mercenary City's beast fur was stored in the treasury of the supreme divine hall, and it could only be opened and retrieved by someone who controlled the structure.

“Looks like I won't be able to retrieve the beast fur in Mercenary City for now,” Jian Chen thought and did not stay any longer. He left the miniature world.

Afterward, Jian Chen visited the Beast God Continent. There were two beast furs on the Beast God Continent, so if he gathered them, he would have all eighteen beast furs except for the one left in Mercenary City.

Chapter 1450: Settling Down Magical Beasts

Jian Chen made his way to the Beast God Hall after he arrived on the Beast God Continent. Cangqiong personally received him, inviting him into the Beast God Hall.

The white tiger remained on the ninety-ninth floor of the divine hall, still accepting its legacy. The ninety-ninth floor seemed like it had entered a whole different space, having been cut off from the world completely. Jian Chen could not sense what was going on inside at all and whatever was happening inside was not creating any disturbances either.

Rum Guinness remained within the Beast God Hall as she eagerly waited for her child to emerge. After learning that Jian Chen had come, she immediately went to greet him. Rum Guinness was grateful toward Jian Chen and had always treated him as her savior. She knew that if it were not for Jian Chen's assistance, her child probably would not have been able to live until now, let alone enter the ninety-ninth floor of the Beast God Hall to accept his legacy.

The three of them conversed a little before Jian Chen approached the main topic. He asked Cangqiong about the two other beast furs in the Beast God Hall.

Cangqiong understood that Jian Chen wanted to gather the eighteen beast furs to remove a seal that the ancient Winged Tiger God had cast down. Without any hesitation, he immediately made his way into the depths of the ninety-seventh floor of the Beast God Hall. When he returned, he held two snow-white furs in his hand, to no one's surprise, and said, "There are mysteries hidden within these two beast furs. It seems like extremely profound mysteries of the world are hidden within them. All the predecessors of the Beast God Hall have looked at them over the countless years that they've been in our possession and have attempted to understand their mysteries, attempting to use them

to surpass Saint Emperor, but no one has ever been able to benefit from the two furs after all these years. During my generation, these two beast furs were kept by Kaiser, Lankyros, and me. We had reached an agreement long ago that each person would hold onto them for a hundred years to comprehend them. They have just happened to end up with me this century.

“The two beast furs have remained in our Beast God Hall for who knows how long, because they’re extremely valuable, so they’ve always been stored in here. All the Saint Emperors who were in possession of these two beast furs had to leave them in the divine hall if they ever went out, because only in the Beast God Hall could they never be lost. Since sovereign Jian Chen needs them now, I’ll make the decision to gift them to you. I hope they will help repel the World of Forsaken Saints in the future.”

Jian Chen accepted the two beast furs without holding back. He sighed emotionally at how abnormally successful he was at collecting the rest of the beast furs.

Afterward, Jian Chen asked Cangqiong for some land where he could let the various magical beasts in the saint artifact to settle down. Cangqiong obviously agreed to Jian Chen’s tiny request and gave him a few spiritual mountains that belonged to the Tiger clan without any hesitation. He ordered the Tiger clan to move.

Although the Tiger clan had the support of Lankyros, the experts of the clan knew that they were approaching their end. Their ruler had tried to harm the young Winged Tiger God, which was heresy. They would face retribution that could wipe out the entire clan. As a result, the people of the clan voiced no objections to Cangqiong’s order. They complied and silently moved their clan. They were extremely cooperative.

The Tiger clan only hoped that the Winged Tiger God would spare their innocent clansmen after it completed its inheritance.

Jian Chen arrived at the mountains, where the Tiger clan had

once resided, and let out all the magical beasts in the artifact space. An unpredictable change was about to happen to the saint artifact, something that could possibly destroy the entire object. It was no longer suitable for magical beasts to live in it.

However, the magical beasts had lived in the artifact space for too long. They had already adapted to the environment there, so when they suddenly emerged on the Beast God Continent, which was extremely unfamiliar to them, the high class magical beasts were fine while the weaker ones became troubled.

The artifact space was its own world, and its energy was different from the Beast God Continent. The relatively stronger magical beasts quickly adapted when they first emerged, but the weaker magical beasts actually suffered from peculiar effects and could no longer cultivate. Many low class magical beasts were actually unable to absorb the energy of the world, or they would risk blowing up.

Jian Chen did nothing after learning this. They needed to conquer this situation themselves. If these magical beasts wanted to continue thriving on the brutal Beast God Continent, they would be baptized by many battles. He could only help them so much.

Soon after the magical beasts had settled down, the mountains received their first wave of guests. They were members of the Peng clan and the leader was a Class 8 Magical Beast. He had brought many Class 7 Magical Beasts in human form with him along with great gifts. They were very polite.

Jian Chen did not take part in anything. He observed everything from the peak of a mountain. There had been fighting and slaughter in the artifact space where the magical beasts used to live, but it was nothing compared to the brutality of the Beast God Continent. Jian Chen felt slightly guilty given how changes were happening to the saint artifact, and he had to move them all onto the brutal Beast God Continent. He decided to watch over them for

a few days before leaving.

After all, many of the magical beasts who lived in the saint artifact had treated it as home.

The esteemed guests of the Peng clan got along well and befriended the new magical beasts very soon. If an outsider had watched them, they would have believed that they were good friends who had only just been reunited.

After learning that the magical beasts had always stayed in the jail-like artifact space, the guests of the Peng clan did not show any prejudice or scorn. Instead, they enthusiastically explained everything about the Beast God Continent to them, rambling endlessly.

Very soon, a Class 7 Magical Beast found Jian Chen to vent its grievances. Because they had remained in the artifact space for far too long, some unique abilities of magical beasts had disappeared from them. The magical beasts on the Beast God Continent all possessed the ability to devour monster cores and refine the energy within, but they no longer possessed that ability.

Jian Chen frowned before gently sighing. There was nothing he could do to help them with these matters. All he could do was tell Cangqiong to secretly take care of them. The new environment of the Beast God Continent was what truly suited magical beasts. They had existed in the artifact space for too long, and so some of their abilities had changed. They needed to adapt themselves after arriving here.

However, to Jian Chen's surprise, three Class 8 Magical Beasts hurried over from different directions and joined the small group. The three magical beasts had lived in the artifact space in the past and had broken out with Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu but had gone their separate ways.

Chapter 1451: The Seal Breaks (One)

The magical beasts from the artifact space were familiar with the three Class 8 Magical Beasts because they were their seniors. The Class 8 Magical Beasts had once been respected and feared and several Class 7 Magical Beasts had even gained their protection in the past.

After all, there had been around a dozen Class 8 Magical Beasts in the artifact space. There had been some competitions and enmity between some of them.

However, all the high class magical beasts that had just entered the outside world were extremely excited when the three Class 8 Magical Beasts joined. From the conversations they had had with the Peng clan, they had learned how brutal life was on the Beast God Continent. Even some of the Class 7 Magical Beasts would not be able to find a place where they could settle down permanently. However, the situation would be drastically different if they had the protection of three powerful Class 8 Magical Beasts.

From then on, the magical beasts from the artifact space all forgot about their past disagreements, as long as their disagreements had not reached a point of no return, and banded together against the foreign world. They formed their own tribe. The three Class 8 Magical Beasts reigned over the tribe, allowing the magical beasts from the artifact space to truly gain stable footing on the Beast God Continent.

They also secretly received care and concern from the Peng clan. As long as Cangqiong was around, no powerful clan would ever show any disrespect to the Peng clan on the Beast God Continent.

After all, the Beast God Continent was no longer balanced between three people. Cangqiong had become the only ruler on the Beast God Continent after Kaiser and Lankyros' had fled. The Peng clan had basically become the imperial clan of the continent.

Three days later, Jian Chen silently left. He left the Beast God Continent on the Zi Ying Sword, quickly flying over the ocean. This time, he did not travel in the direction of the Tian Yuan Continent, the Wasteland Continent, or the sea realm. He headed toward the arctic.

As soon as he approached the ocean in the north, the temperature plummeted. He was very close to the arctic and the Ice Goddess Hall. The sea below was covered with large icebergs. In the distance, the icy tundra of the north was vaguely visible.

Jian Chen hovered above the cold sea. The Zi Ying Sword hung in the air, remaining thirty meters long, while shining with a resplendent violet light. Jian Chen sat on it, resting with his eyes closed. The saint artifact let out a faint, golden light as it hovered before him.

Most of the seal in the artifact space had already collapsed, and the day when it would be completely eaten away was drawing closer and closer. Strands of Radiant Saint Force origin energy that had been accumulated over countless years would drift out from time to time. The seal had already become so damaged that it was unable to keep the origin energy sealed in.

Jian Chen silently waited on the Zi Ying Sword. Although his eyes were closed and he seemed like he was cultivating, he was actually devoting his attention to what was happening within the artifact space.

Two hours later, the space a hundred meters away from Jian Chen violently distorted. With a gentle bang, there seemed to be something smashing against the space in an extremely brutal method, creating a blurry gate. Soon, a dazzling, golden light poured out and, almost the same instance the light appeared, a tall figure appeared.

Tie Ta arrived before Jian Chen in a flash. As he looked at Jian Chen who sat on his sword, he said with his deep, gentle voice,

“Jian Chen, I’m here.”

Jian Chen opened his eyes and stood up on his sword. The Zi Ying Sword immediately transformed into a streak of violet light and shrank to its original size before sticking to Jian Chen’s back. Jian Chen hovered high in the air as he looked at Tie Ta. He seemed rather stern, but just when he wanted to say something, the space a hundred meters away suddenly twisted once again. Three Space Gates formed at almost the same time and Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, and Feng Xiaotian emerged.

Feng Xiaotian was no longer a Saint King but a Saint Emperor. He had not reached the peak yet, but that was only a matter of time.

The three of them had once reached the Origin realm. Even though their strength had fallen and they could not return to the Origin realm, they still possessed saint artifacts. Their strength could not be compared to Saint Emperors.

As soon as the three of them appeared, they narrowed their eyes and stared at the space behind Jian Chen. A hazy woman, who was basking in a gentle, blue light, silently appeared thirty meters away from Jian Chen. She did not give off any presence at all, just like a ghost.

The sea goddess had come as well. She was a true Origin realm expert as well as the only champion from the ancient times that had managed to survive. The ancient Winged Tiger God and Mo Tianyun had vanished long ago, so they were labeled as dead by many people.

As soon as Tie Ta, Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, Feng Xiaotian, and the sea goddess appeared, all of them became stunned when they saw that several of the most powerful people in the world had arrived beside Jian Chen.

They had all been invited by Jian Chen, but they did not think that Jian Chen would invite the other strongest people in the world as well. This piqued their interest.

“Great-grandson, may I ask you what important matter you need to deal with, which requires you to call us all over,” Yang Lie quered Jian Chen. He glanced at the snowy tundra that was barely visible in the distance from time to time.

Jian Chen clasped his hands at them and said, “Please do not resist, I will take you into the artifact space.”

With that, Jian Chen got the saint artifact to suck everyone into the artifact space.

Tie Ta, Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, Feng Xiaotian, the sea goddess, and Jian Chen all appeared outside the hall where the seal was stored. As soon as they had appeared, Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, Feng Xiaotian, and the sea goddess discovered that the artifact space was extremely weak, unable to withstand their powers, which had surpassed Saint Emperor, so they immediately concealed their presences.

Jian Chen brought them into the hall. He said nothing, getting them to personally check the changes occurring to the seal.

Tie Ta, Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, Feng Xiaotian, and the sea goddess were all extraordinary people. They discovered the abnormality of the seal very soon and immediately became stern.

“There’s an extremely powerful force in the seal. This space should have collapsed the moment this force appeared, but the force is not destroying this space. Instead, it’s using a gentle method to eat away at the seal. This is strange,” Guihai Yidao said with a heavy heart.

“This supreme force can easily kill us when we were in our peak condition, so it’s definitely not something that Origin realm experts possess. It’s the energy from a Godhood expert, at the very least, and one that has reached the upper limits of Godhood. Jian Chen, have you seen that person in the Ice Goddess Hall?” Feng Xiaotian frowned.

Besides Tie Ta and Jian Chen, everyone narrowed their eyes and stared at Jian Chen when that person from the Ice Goddess Hall was mentioned.

Jian Chen shook his head, “I have indeed seen her, but the force in the seal is not left behind by her. Even the artifact spirit does not know where it came from, as if it appeared out of nowhere. My only worry right now is whether or not this force will destroy the saint artifact and reach the outside world once the seal collapses.”

“That’s right. This powerful force even makes me fearful. If it erupted in the outside world, the outcome would be unfathomable,” said the sea goddess. Her figure was obscured, but it was possible to tell how stern she was through her voice.

Chapter 1452: The Seal Breaks (Two)

“Jian Chen, you got us to come, to have a look at this force, and to try get rid of it?” Tie Ta asked.

Jian Chen nodded. “That’s right. I’ve called you all here exactly because of this. Although the force within the seal seems very gentle right now, it’s power is just shocking. We have to prepare against it. We will need to attack it together if the force becomes violent after it breaks free from the seal and see if we can obliterate it.”

“If that’s the case, let’s go to outer space. It shouldn’t cause too much damage if the force ends up erupting,” said the sea goddess.

“No, I believe this is the best place,” Jian Chen shook his head. He gazed into the distance. He seemed to be able to see outside the artifact space, looking at the Ice Goddess Hall hidden in the depths of the arctic.

“If this matter really develops into the worst possible situation, I believe she will interfere. If she doesn’t, the arctic will probably cease to exist,” mumbled Jian Chen. He would not have dared to take this risk if he had not known protector Shui’s exact strength because he would not have known if she could handle this force.

However, his worries completely disappeared after he learned from the greatest Godking of the God race, Audriana, that protector Shui ranked ninth on the Godking’s throne. If even someone as powerful as her could not deal with the force, nothing would change if he took the artifact deep into space and far from the planet.

If this power had completely erupted, the area affected would be so vast that even if it was in outer space, the planet would still be in range. The eruption would lead to a calamity, unless they sent it into deep space. However, they did not have enough time to accomplish that anymore.

They waited patiently in the artifact space. Every single one of them was stern and was staring at the force in the seal.

They did not leave the artifact space since there was no need to leave the artifact space. The artifact space was not enough to trap them, so if the force completely erupted and destroyed the whole place, they were extremely confident that would be able to leave in time.

They waited there for two days. Most of the seal had been eaten away by then. A large amount of Radiant Saint Force origin energy leaked from the seal as a stream, filling the entire hall. It was like a dense layer of mist, blurring everything in the structure.

At this moment, the Radiant Saint Force origin energy had reached a shocking density. If a Class 6 or 7 Radiant Saint Master was here, they would definitely go crazy with excitement.

The reason why there were so few Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters on the Tian Yuan Continent was because there was a lack of Radiant Saint Force origin energy. Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters had basically never appeared because of the absence of Radiant Saint Force origin energy.

Yet, at this moment, there was far more than a few dozen strands of origin energy. The amount reached into the hundreds, the thousands, or even tens of thousands. If the president of the union was here, he would have an extremely great chance of breaking through to the 8th Class.

Jian Chen was also a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master, but he was in no mood to bother with the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force that was drifting through the surroundings. He placed all his attention on the damaged seal. Right now, two-thirds of the seal had already collapsed and the force within would be freed once the remaining one-third collapsed. He had no idea what would end up happening.

Jian Chen, Tie Ta, Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, Feng Xiaotian, and the

sea goddess all held their breaths. They stared at the supreme force within the seal and completely ignored the dense origin energy in the surroundings. They were all in their peak conditions, ready to deal their strongest attack at any moment.

Two-thirds of the seal had been destroyed. It held on staunchly, but the remaining third collapsed even faster. After just four hours, the remaining part of the seal was completely eaten away.

The Radiant Saint Force origin energy that had been accumulated over countless years immediately gushed out like a broken dam. It wildly leaked out of the broken seal and, in a moment, the entire hall was filled with a shockingly dense white mist. Visibility became extremely limited, and even with their strength, the six of them could not see through the mist formed by the Radiant Saint Force origin energy.

Their faces all changed as they uncontrollably staggered a few steps back. They were on guard. Their vision was completely obscured now, so they could only use their other senses to observe the supreme force.

The Azulet swords had already begun to hover over Jian Chen's head, shining with an azure and violet light. Tie Ta had drawn his golden axe while Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, and Feng Xiaotian had all summoned their saint artifacts. The sea goddess held a trident.

However, the power of the weapons were completely hidden to prevent damaging the artifact space. If they needed to, their weapons could instantly erupt with their strongest might, enough to tear the world apart.

However, their cautious eyes all lit up very soon, becoming filled with shock. Their vision had been blocked by the Radiant Saint Force origin energy, preventing them from seeing the changes to the supreme force, but they could clearly sense that the force was weakening at an unbelievably rapid rate after it had eaten through the seal, like a vigorous young man becoming an old man at

death's door.

All of them were stunned by the strange changes, including Jian Chen. They had all thought about the situation they would have to face once the seal was broken. Even if the force did not end up erupting after the seal was gone, it should have lingered around at the very least and not weakened at such a rapid rate.

“What a strange force. It seems to only exist to destroy the seal. Not only has it caused no damage at all, but it's even dispersing by itself after it's eaten through the seal.” Yang Lie sighed in surprise as interest filled his eyes.

“It sure is strange. This force should turn into dense energy of the world after it disperses, but it seems to have vaporized instead. It hasn't left any traces behind, not even some energy of the world,” Guihai Yidao said as a strange light filled his eyes.

Jian Chen was stunned, but his face quickly became filled with excitement. The appearance of the force was strange, and its disappearance was strange as well since it did not leave behind a tremendous amount of energy, but the artifact space had not been destroyed. More importantly, the seal, which existed within the artifact space for a long, long time, had been removed. He could absorb all the Radiant Saint Force origin energy that the saint artifact had refined after all those years as he wished now.

Chapter 1453: Class 8 Radiant Saint Master (One)

“What makes me most curious is just where did this force come from? And who left it here?”

The six of them discussed these two questions. The origins of the force had already become a mystery, one that affected all of them.

Just a sliver of the force had shocked them all. They could not imagine what terrifying realm of cultivation the owner of the force had reached. More importantly, just when did the owner leave behind the force? Was it recently, during the ancient times, or was it during the ancient era when history had been erased? Maybe they had even come from the Saints' World?

But obviously, even after they racked their brains, they were unable to reach a conclusion. The artifact spirit had failed to sense when the force had appeared, which made it even more impossible to determine when it first appeared.

“I never thought that there would actually be so much Radiant Saint Force origin energy sealed in here. Great-grandson, with so much origin energy, it'll just be a matter of time before you reach Class 8 as a Radiant Saint Master,” Yang Lie said to Jian Chen.

“A Class 8 Radiant Saint Master has only ever appeared in the ancient times, and since then, none have ever appeared again. Jian Chen, looks like you'll become the second Class 8 Radiant Saint Master. There's always been a legend regarding Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters on the Tian Yuan Continent. It is said that they can revive people who have passed away from old age by using the Saint Weapons they have left behind. Even I don't know whether this is true or not because the Class 8 Radiant Saint Master in the ancient times never did anything like that.” The sea goddess stared at Jian Chen. If Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters really did possess such heaven-defying abilities, Jian Chen would definitely be able

to increase the overall strength of the world once he reached the 8th Class.

Whether it was an Emperor Armament, a King Armament, or a Ruler Armament, they were all extremely difficult to destroy. After so many years, the Tian Yuan Continent has given birth to many Saint Weapons, which have been left behind by Saint Rulers, Saint Kings, and Saint Emperors.

If all the owners of all these weapons were to be revived, it would be an extremely terrifying force.

Jian Chen's eyes became filled with eagerness when he thought about that. He could personally test whether or not Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters possessed such great abilities.

The force within the seal did not require protector Shui's assistance since it perfectly reached a resolution, which obviously relieved Jian Chen and the others. All of them soon bid farewell to Jian Chen, and Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, and Feng Xiaotian returned to the Tian Yuan Continent.

In the blink of an eye, only Jian Chen was left in the cold sky above the sea. He put the saint artifact away and stared at the icy tundra in the distance for a while before leaving.

Jian Chen returned to the Tian Yuan Continent on his sword and found a desolate mountain. He then entered the artifact space and prepared to go into seclusion.

His Radiant Saint Force had once stopped at Class 6 and was unable to reach Class 7 because he lacked Radiant Saint Force origin energy. This was why he had visited the Radiant Saint Master Union in the City of God. Only there would he be able to an opportunity to become a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master. Now, his Radiant Saint Force remained at Class 7. The reason was similar to when he was a Class 6 Radiant Saint Master: he lacked the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force.

Not every Radiant Saint Master could reach Class 7 or 8 with Radiant Saint Force origin energy, but without it, it was impossible to reach the 7th Class no matter how talented the Radiant Saint Master was, let alone the 8th Class.

The artifact spirit had reinforced the hall where the seal had been located in the artifact space, completely sealing in all the Radiant Saint Force origin energy so that none of it could leak out.

White mist filled the vast hall. It was formed from the pure Radiant Saint Force origin energy, and it was so plentiful that it was immeasurable.

Jian Chen sat in the hall and began absorbing the origin energy.

The cultivation process for Radiant Saint Masters was vastly different when compared to fighters. Fighters absorbed the energy of the world and used it to condense their Radiant Saint Force in their dantian and used it to forge their bodies so that they could obtain strength. Radiant Saint Masters cultivated the soul. They absorbed Radiant Saint Force origin energy into their soul to evolve it, refining the origin energy and storing it in their soul.

Radiant Saint Masters possessed weak bodies, but they also possessed powerful attacks, Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters in particular. If they used origin energy to cast Radiant Artes, they would be able to deal attacks on the level of a Saint Ruler. Only Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters could use the forbidden arte, God's Descent, which was a powerful technique that could even fend off Saint Kings. It was countless times more powerful than Saint Tier Battle Skills, but the only drawback was that its price was just too heavy.

Jian Chen sat in the center of the hall, absorbing the Radiant Saint Force origin energy as quickly as he could. Strands of visible, white mist constantly flowed into his forehead, entering his soul before being surrounded by it. He quickly refined these strands.

Jian Chen's soul had already reached the peak of Saint Emperor

now, so it could not be compared to when he had first reach the 7th Class. As a result, both his rate of absorption and refinement was extremely great. No other Class 7 Radiant Saint Master could match up to him.

His talent as a Radiant Saint Master was extremely impressive as well, so the origin energy was extremely compatible with his soul. As a result, he advanced at an extremely great pace toward the 8th Class.

If other Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters, while continuously refining origin energy, required a hundred years to reach the 8th Class, then Jian Chen only needed a few years or even less time than that.

As the of Radiant Saint Force origin energy merging with Jian Chen's soul rapidly increased, he could sense his soul morph bit by bit. Although it remained at the peak level of a Saint Emperor and showed no signs of increasing, it was undergoing a different growth, becoming even more powerful.

At the same time, both his rate of absorption and refinement gradually increased as his soul morphed. A small whirlpool, completely condensed from white mist, formed near his forehead, as if there was a suction force between his eyes endlessly pulling in origin energy.

Chapter 1454: Class 8 Radiant Saint Master (Two)

In the blink of an eye, half a month passed. Because Jian Chen's absorption and refinement rates were far greater than ordinary Radiant Saint Master, the progress he made during that time was equivalent to several years or several dozen years of work.

The dense, white mist within the sealed hall had become thinner now, allowing some visibility to return. Even though that was the case, Jian Chen could only see ten meters away from him.

Jian Chen could clearly sense that his soul was much, much more powerful than half a month ago after absorbing so much Radiant Saint Force origin energy. Since he was both a fighter and a Radiant Saint Master, his soul had not yet reached the Origin realm, but he could feel that his soul was no weaker than the Origin realm.

The origin energy that he had been refined had already been condensed into a faint liquid. It had fused with his soul but took up its own region.

The ball of liquid was only the size of a thumb, and it frequently changed between a tangible and intangible form. It had not consolidated completely, but it was growing closer to that stage.

Jian Chen felt that his abilities as a Radiant Saint Master had drastically increased, definitely several dozen times more powerful than they had been in past, but he was still at the 7th Class and had not reached the 8th Class.

"I have to reach Class 8 this time," Jian Chen thought inside. He had already made up his mind to become a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master. Immediately gritting his teeth, the speed at which he refined the origin energy increased yet again.

However, as he rapidly refined the origin energy, Jian Chen

became even more surprised. He would never have thought that the amount of origin energy required to reach Class 8 would be so terrifying. If it were not for the saint artifact, there would be no Radiant Saint Force origin energy in this world, so it was would probably be impossible for anyone to reach the 8th Class in just a few thousand years.

Unknowingly, Jian Chen had already cultivated in the artifact space for two months. The Tian Yuan Continent was in an uproar in the the mean time. The ten protector clans and Mercenary City were working together to inform the entire continent that they were collecting all the Ruler Armaments, King Armaments, and Emperor Armaments.

This did not only happen on the Tian Yuan Continent. Even the sea realm and the Wasteland Continent were given the same orders by the sea goddess and the war god.

The Beast God Continent was no exception either. Cangqiong had passed the same order to the magical beasts, telling them to collect all the Saint Weapons left on the Beast God Continent after human experts had passed away from old age.

The magical beasts, the Hundred Races, and the humans once held enmity for one another since intense battles had occurred long ago. Naturally, some of the Saint Weapons had ended up in the hands of the magical beasts and the Hundred Races. The sea realm had never been involved in the battles or wars between the continents, but quite a few humans still lived there. If some humans passed away in the sea realm from old age, they would obviously leave behind Saint Weapons.

Jian Chen had no idea what was happening as he cultivated in the artifact space. At this moment, he suddenly shuddered. The whirlpool above his forehead suddenly expanded to twice its size. The rate at he was absorbing the origin energy skyrocketed as well, causing all the origin energy in the entire hall to gently pulse. It all surged toward him as if he had summoned them.

Jian Chen's soul was undergoing an overwhelming change. It experienced a leap in quality. His powerful soul suddenly condensed into a ball before turning into a small person at a visible rate. His facial features were distinct and actually seemed the same as Jian Chen's actual face.

The tiny man was completely condensed from Jian Chen's soul. He was snow-white and let out a faint, white glow, giving off a divine feeling. Near the forehead of the tiny man, an even brighter speck of white light flickered. The light spread throughout Jian Chen's soul, causing the tiny man within his soul to vary in visibility.

The white speck was composed of concentrated Radiant Saint Force origin energy. It was filled with a tremendous amounts of origin energy, countless times more powerful than the origin energy used by Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters.

Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes and silently sensed the tiny man as well as the speck of white light on the man's forehead. He could not help but feel delighted.

He knew that he had finally broken through the 7th Class and had reached the mysterious realm of the 8th Class as a Radiant Saint Master. At the same time, his soul had grown, breaking through Saint Emperor and truly reaching the level of the Origin realm. It was much more powerful than the souls of ordinary Origin realm experts as well.

The current him did not even need to leave the artifact space to know what was happening outside. Even as he sat there, his soul could envelop a radius of a million kilometers of the outside world.

The only pity was that a breakthrough for his soul would not significantly increase in his battle prowess.

"I've reached the 8th Class. I wonder if Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters really are as great as the legends, where they can revive the masters of Saint Weapons," Jian Chen thought to himself. He

suddenly felt overwhelmed by an urge to find a Saint Weapon as soon as possible to see whether this rumor was true or not.

Unfortunately, he had yet to grasp the method. Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters required a corresponding method to revive dead people, and a method was probably required by Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters if they wanted to bring back the masters of Saint Weapons.

Jian Chen stood up and looked around the hall. He discovered that not all of the Radiant Saint Force origin energy had been absorbed. There was still a faint layer of mist lingering about. Even though there was not a lot left, there was at least a thousand strands of origin energy.

“I’ll leave the remaining origin energy to the president of the Radiant Saint Master Union. He’s already reached the peak of the 7th Class and isn’t far from the 8th Class. The remaining origin energy should be enough for him to reach the 9th Class,” Jian Chen thought. The president of the union had been his master in the past. Even though their master-disciple relationship had not been particularly deep, he would still treat his master well.

Jian Chen dismissed his thoughts. Just when he was about to leave, he suddenly froze. He looked at the center of the hall, which just happened to be in the center of the sealed region.

A head-sized orb gently hovered there. Strands of Radiant Saint Force origin energy surged within the orb, forming a white mist, which obscured it. It seemed just like a ball of white mist, so it was very easy for people to overlook it.

Jian Chen’s eyes suddenly narrowed the moment he saw the orb. He became surprised and cried out, “This is...”

Chapter 1455: Fortuitous Encounter to Class

9

In a flash, Jian Chen crossed several dozen meters like he had teleported, suddenly appearing before the head-sized, white orb. Surprise filled his eyes. They were fixated on the white orb that was obscured by the revolving white mist.

Jian Chen slowly extended his hand into the hazy mist and touched the orb. At that moment, Jian Chen's eyes became extremely bright, and he struggled to contain his excitement. His heart churned. He struggled to maintain his composure.

The head-sized orb was completely condensed from Radiant Saint Force origin energy. It had already become solid, as tough as a rock, while the origin energy hidden within had reached an extremely terrifying level.

Jian Chen could even clearly sense that the Radiant Saint Force origin energy within the orb was actually much purer than the mist he had absorbed.

Jian Chen's feelings became indescribable. He had just become a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master and his soul had just reached the Origin realm. It was an extremely great harvest for him, yet he had discovered a white orb condensed from even purer Radiant Saint Force origin energy. The amount within was far, far more than what he had absorbed over the past few days. His heart throbbed with joy. He felt like he was dreaming. It was just too good to be true.

The artifact spirit had sensed when Jian Chen had finished cultivating. The moment he entered the hall to congratulate Jian Chen, he suddenly saw the orb in the center of the room. He became stunned as a similar amount of shock flooded his face.

"It's completely condensed from origin energy. The origin energy

within is so tremendous that it's unbelievable. I never thought that there would be so much origin energy within the seal." The artifact spirit could not help but sigh in surprise. He seemed to think of something and immediately congratulated Jian Chen. "Congratulation masters. Congratulations on obtaining this item. If master absorbs all the origin energy within the orb, there is a great chance you will reach the 9th Class."

"Class 9..." Jian Chen softly murmured as his eyes glowed even brighter. They were filled with desire and anticipation. There had only ever been one Class 8 Radiant Saint Master throughout the history of the Tian Yuan Continent. A Class 9 Radiant Saint Master had never appeared.

However, Jian Chen's gaze returned to how it was before very soon. To him, there was no major difference between Class 8 and 9. He yearned for Class 8 because it was rumored that they could revive Saint Weapons, and there were many Saint Weapons that had accumulated over countless years on the Tian Yuan Continent. If he could revive the masters of all these Saint Weapons, they would increase the power of the world without a doubt. They would be of great help when fending off the invasion of the foreign world.

If Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters were not in possession of this ability, Jian Chen would not have desired to reach the 8th Class so much. His battle prowess had already reached the Origin realm while Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters could only rival Saint Emperors at most. They could only kill Saint Emperors by offering a thousand years of their life even when using the forbidden arte.

He could kill Saint Emperors as easily as squashing ants, so why would he pay up a thousand years of his life?

According to Jian Chen's assumptions, Class 9 Radiant Saint Masters were only equivalent to Saint Emperors on the Tian Yuan Continent. As a result, reaching the 9th Class did not mean much at all to Jian Chen.

“Artifact spirit, do you know what the difference between a Class 8 and a Class 9 Radiant Saint Master is?” Jian Chen asked. He had heard a little about Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters from rumors, but he knew nothing about Class 9 Radiant Saint Masters. There were no legends on the Tian Yuan Continent regarding these existences at all.

The artifact spirit shook his head, “Master, I do not know. I too have never heard anything about a Class 9 Radiant Saint Master.”

“Legend has it that Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters can revive people through Saint Weapons. Do you know the exact method?” Jian Chen asked.

The artifact spirit hesitated and said, “Master, I do know a little. The Class 8 Radiant Saint Master from the ancient times left it here, but it’s incomplete. With the incomplete method, it’s not enough to revive the masters of Saint Weapons.”

Jian Chen was disappointed. After a moment of silence, he said, “Give it to me.”

“Yes, sir!”

The artifact spirit gave the incomplete method to Jian Chen. He gave Jian Chen an extremely old piece of Class 9 Magical Beast hide. It was filled with words, recording the method to revive the masters of Saint Weapons.

Jian Chen read through it before gently sighing. He silently put the beast hide away. The artifact spirit was right. The method really was incomplete. He would not be able to revive the masters of Saint Weapons with this incomplete method.

“I’ll temporarily leave this orb of Radiant Saint Force origin energy here.” Jian Chen glanced at his chance of reaching the 9th Class before leaving the artifact space without any reluctance.

Jian Chen put the saint artifact away after arriving in the outside world. He then left on the Zi Ying Sword, appearing as a long

streak of light. Along the way, he expanded his soul, instantly enveloping a radius of a million kilometers. The area his soul covered did not seem to be his limit either. As his soul continued to expand, the area it covered rapidly increased as well, enveloping a large portion of the Tian Yuan Continent as well as quite a lot of sea.

Jian Chen stood in an extremely remote place, but he could observe the ruins of Mercenary City through the senses of his soul. He could see the Gesun Kingdom, the Changyang clan in Lore City, and everything in Flame City, including the Bright Moon Divine Hall, which stood silently in the back courtyard of the city lord's estate like a palace.

The moment Jian Chen's soul enveloped the Bright Moon Divine Hall, fairy Hao Yue opened her eyes. At that moment, her eyes seemed to be able to pierce through space, allowing her gaze to extend indefinitely. It landed on Jian Chen several million kilometers away.

"Greetings to you, fairy Hao Yue," Jian Chen's voice seemed to appear out of nowhere as it echoed outside the divine hall. It did not penetrate the structure, but fairy Hao Yue heard it loud and clear.

Jian Chen's soul was unable to penetrate the divine hall, but he could sense a gaze on him that came from the divine hall even with the great distance.

"Jian Chen, I never thought that you'd break through so quickly again. You have really surprised me," fairy Hao Yue gently sighed in surprise within the Bright Moon Divine Hall.

Her voice was not loud, but it managed to travel several million kilometers and was heard by Jian Chen, as if she was just nearby.

"Fairy Hao Yue, you surprise me as well," Jian Chen gently smiled, but he felt secretly shocked. Only now did he discover that fairy Hao Yue's soul was no weaker than his own.

“Jian Chen, please pay a visit to my Bright Moon Divine Hall if you go to Flame City,” fairy Hao Yue nonchalantly requested.

“Most definitely,” Jian Chen responded before recalling his soul. He ended the conversation he was having with fairy Hao Yue from several million kilometers away.

Chapter 1456: Seven Colors of the Soulcore (One)

“The soul of someone from the Origin realm really is terrifying. Before I had broken through, my soul could only cover two to three hundred thousand kilometers, but now that I have broken through, it’s suddenly increased by several dozen times the amount before. I can now envelope several million kilometers, which is already most of the Tian Yuan Continent.” Jian Chen gently sighed inside. He would have never imagined that it was possible to hold a conversation across several million kilometers, like what he had just done with fairy Hao Yue.

Even though the difference between Saint Emperor and the Origin realm was a single level of cultivation, the difference in actual abilities was overwhelming. Saint Rulers, Saint Kings, and Saint Emperors were all part of Sainthood, and surpassing Saint Emperor would be crossing into a whole new realm of cultivation.

Although the difference between each cultivation level within Sainthood was very large, it was not impossible to make up for the difference using powerful battle skills or with numbers. However, there were no battle skills or any number of people that could make up for the difference between Saint Emperor and the Origin realm.

All those below Saint Ruler were ants. This was a saying because Saint Rulers comprehended the mysteries of the world and had the power to freeze space. They could immobilize several hundred Heaven Saint Masters in a single moment. As a result, Heaven Saint Masters were unable to threaten Saint Rulers at all. The difference between Saint Emperor and the Origin realm was similar.

Saint Rulers, Saint Kings, and Saint Emperors all used Saint Force as well as some Spatial Force. Origin realm experts used

origin energy. This was a power that surpassed Saint Force.

Jian Chen rode the Zi Ying Sword and found his way using the senses of his soul. He was surrounded by the violet light from the Zi Ying Sword as he tore through the air at an unbelievable speed. He advanced toward the City of God in the Holy Empire.

Soon, Jian Chen arrived in the City of God. He did not want to create a disturbance with his arrival, so he entered the city silently. He flickered a few times through the crowd and entered the headquarters of the Radiant Saint Master Union. Even though the security was tight, it was nothing more than a display to Jian Chen.

The president of the union and the grand elder currently stood on the highest floor in the headquarters. They watched people surge to and fro outside. The two of them were the most respected leaders of the union as well as the two most powerful Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters.

However, the president and grand elder's face were riddled with worry because of the recent times. They never displayed the easiness that had once filled their faces.

"The tunnel to the World of Forsaken Saints is rapidly stabilizing. As time goes on, the time of the next wave of the invasion will get closer and closer. We may have had Jian Chen's help, allowing many people to break through and our strength to skyrocket, but I feel like we're still not the foreign world's opponent even with that. Once we are defeated..." The president of the union said with a heavy heart. He and the grand elder had always been worrying about this problem.

The grand elder, dressed in white robes, stood beside with his hands behind his back. He stared at the streets in the distance in a trance. After a moment of silence, he produced a long sigh. "We may have Origin realm experts on our side, but there's only so many of them. They are nowhere near enough to rival the World

of Forsaken Saints. In the next battle, it'll be very difficult for us to be victorious. Even if our Origin realm experts can stop the foreign world's Origin realm experts, we still won't be able to match up to them in a battle with people below the Origin realm. We can see this from how the World of Forsaken Saints mobilized several hundred Saint Emperors so easily."

"As it stands right now, unless we have an expert so powerful that he or she can turn the situation around, probably only a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master can make a difference when the next wave of invasions come. It's rumored that Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters can revive the former masters of Saint Weapons. After all these years on our continent, quite a few Saint Rulers, Saint Kings, and even Saint Emperors have left behind their Saint Weapons after passing away in meditation. If we can revive all of them, they would be an extremely terrifying force," said the president.

"How difficult would it be to reach Class 8? Your talent's no less than that prodigy from the ancient times, but even with your talent, you've only reached this level after several thousand years of cultivation. Class 8 is still very distant from you. Jian Chen may also be a Radiant Saint Master and his talent is greater than yours, but he hasn't cultivated for a thousand years. He's still not going to be able to reach the 8th Class. The World of Forsaken Saints would never give us a thousand years to prepare." The grand elder sighed.

"Who said you need a thousand years to reach the 8th Class?"

A voice suddenly materialized from behind, right after the grand elder had finished speaking.

The president and grand elder froze because of the sudden voice. Their faces drastically changed. They had failed to discover someone entering the room even with their strength.

However, the two of them soon realized that the voice was familiar. Their expressions were immediately replaced with jubilation as they both turned around suddenly. They saw Jian

Chen standing straight behind them.

“Turns out it’s you. Come in, come in.” The grand elder smiled from the bottom of his head. He did not behave too politely, welcoming Jian Chen like family. The gaze he sent toward Jian Chen was filled with delight.

Even now, the grand elder still could not forget the moment he had given Jian Chen that purple medal. Back then, Jian Chen was still very weak, but the grand elder saw how extraordinary he was, so he gave him a purple medal. However, what he did not think was that in just a few decades, the pitifully weak fighter would become the sovereign of the Tian Yuan Continent.

The president smiled at Jian Chen as well. He was filled with emotion. Before him was not only the human sovereign but his disciple as well.

“Jian Chen, you just said that reaching Class 8 doesn’t doesn’t require thousands of years. May I ask when a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master can reach the 8th Class then? With the current situation, a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master is just far too significant to us,” the grand elder sternly inquired.

Jian Chen smiled and did not explain much. He sent the grand elder and president into the artifact space.

The grand elder and president stood within the hall filled with Radiant Saint Force origin energy in a daze. They did not return to their senses even after a very long time.

What they saw around them was Radiant Saint Force origin energy that had condensed into mist. Even though it was very thin, they still found it extremely shocking in their eyes.

Chapter 1457: Seven Colors of the Soulcore (Two)

“There’s actually this much origin energy here. It’s absolutely astounding. The origin energy here is enough to create several hundred Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters,” the president of the Radiant Saint Master Union emotionally commented.

However, the president and grand elder became completely stunned at this very moment. Their eyes became as wide as bells and were fixated on something at the center of the room. They had become dazed.

A head-sized white orb hovered there. Pure strands of origin energy surged within it, turning into thick mist, which obscured the orb. It would have been very difficult to discover the orb if they had not been looking around carefully.

The president and grand elder were unable to look away once they had discovered the head-sized orb. They were enraptured. Only a while later did they move their feet with numb faces, subconsciously moving toward the orb. Soon, they slowly extended their trembling hands toward it.

The moment they touched the orb, their bodies immediately jerked as they became overwhelmed with shock. The head-sized orb that constantly surged with origin energy was actually completely condensed from Radiant Saint Force origin energy. The amount hidden within it was so tremendous that it was unimaginable.

The president and grand elder stood there in a daze. Even with their mental fortitude, they were completely speechless from the shock.

Only after a while did they finally return to their senses. They both gasped while the gazes used to examine the orb continued to

bear some uncontainable shock and disbelief.

“Jian Chen, are you currently Class 7 or Class 8?” The grand elder looked at Jian Chen, still shaken. A gleam of light flickered through his eyes. He was filled with great anticipation.

Jian Chen smiled mysteriously and raised his right hand. A strand of milky-white light suddenly appeared at the tip of his finger. It was not normal Radiant Saint Force but a strand of origin energy.

The only difference was that the origin energy Jian Chen had used did not originate from his forehead, it had appeared from his finger. At the same time, the strand of origin energy was just far more powerful than the Radiant Saint Force origin energy used by the president and grand elder.

The president and grand elder’s eyes suddenly narrowed. They became fixated on the strand of origin energy on Jian Chen’s fingertip. They gradually became overwhelmed with excitement.

“Class 8! Class 8! This is the origin energy possessed by Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters!” The president involuntarily exclaimed as his eyes began to burn with interest. Even the grand elder behaved the same.

All Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters desired to reach the 8th Class before they passed away, just like how Saint Rulers desired to become Saint Kings and how Saint Kings wanted to become Saint Emperors. The only pity was that the world did not possess natural Radiant Saint Force origin energy, so reaching the 8th Class was almost impossible.

Even in ancient times, only a single Class 8 Radiant Saint Master had appeared, and he had only broken through successfully by using the saint artifact.

“The second Class 8 Radiant Saint Master has finally appeared on the Tian Yuan Continent.” The grand elder signed emotionally.

His eyes were filled with extremely mixed emotions as he gazed at Jian Chen. The Tian Yuan Continent had never seen a person who was both a fighter and a Radiant Saint Master, yet not only had the person right before them surpassed Saint Emperor and become the sovereign of the humans, but he had even reached the 8th Class with his Radiant Saint Force, becoming the second Class 8 Radiant Saint Master in all of history.

Suddenly, the president's face changed. He excitedly asked Jian Chen, "Jian Chen, since you're a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master now, do you have the power to revive Saint Weapons?"

Jian Chen's face sank, and he gently shook his head. He sighed, "A corresponding secret method is required to revive Saint Weapons. Although I've obtained a part of it from the artifact space, it's incomplete. It's not enough to revive Saint Weapons. President, grand elder, does the union have this secret method?"

The president and the grand elder both sighed. Despair filled their faces. The president said, full of pity, "Our union does not have such a powerful secret method, and according to my understanding, that Class 8 Radiant Saint Master in the ancient times could not revive Saint Weapons either. It's evident that the great Radiant Saint Master did not possess the complete secret method either."

Jian Chen fell silent. He was extremely disappointed. Reaching Class 8 as a Radiant Saint Master did not increase his strength at all. The only attraction that had caught his eye was the ability to revive Saint Weapons, yet now, he did not even have the complete method. Reaching Class 8 was basically pointless.

Jian Chen temporarily left the saint artifact in the union and let the president and grand elder cultivate inside. He hoped they could reach the 8th Class as well.

Not only was Class 8 their dream cultivation level, but their lifespans would dramatically increase once they reached it as well.

Other than that, Jian Chen let the Class 6 Radiant Saint Master he had befriended in the past, Quan Youcai, into the artifact space as well. He even mentioned that the first young lady of the Kara clan, Kara Liwei, would be able to enter the artifact space to cultivate as well.

Jian Chen only stayed at the union for a few hours before leaving. He made his way to the Fragrance River outside the city all by himself. He stood by the river and stared blankly at the surface of the water. He could not help but think of everything that had happened in the past.

Not only had he experienced an intense battle on Fragrance River, but he had even met fairy Hao Yue there, allowing his fiancée, You Yue, to become her disciple.

“The Fragrance River carries a period of deep memories. I wonder how much longer this familiar river, these familiar riverbanks, and these boats can last.” Jian Chen sighed emotionally after a long time. Eventually, he shot into the sky as a violet streak of light, disappearing into the horizon in the blink of an eye.

Jian Chen returned to Flame City on the Zi Ying Sword. He greeted You Yue, Bi Lian, and his old friends before making his way to the back courtyard of the city lord’s estate.

There were no guards there, only silence. A single divine hall stood there, radiating with a hazy glow, like gentle moonlight. Even the resplendent light from the sun in the sky was unable to obscure the glow.

“Jian Chen has come to visit fairy Hao Yue!” Jian Chen stood at the entrance of the Bright Moon Divine Hall and clasped his hands at the structure.

“Come in!”

As fairy Hao Yue’s voice rang out, the doors to the divine hall

slowly sprung open. A cool presence immediately gushed out of the divine hall.

Jian Chen stepped into the divine hall with the Azulet swords on his back. He reached the top floor of the grand hall. It was empty aside from the throne that stood on one end of the room.

At this moment, fairy Hao Yue's illusionary figure silently appeared with a flash of light. She sat on the throne at the end of the room and looked down at Jian Chen from above. Her eyes were bright and carried some appreciation for him.

“Jian Chen greets fairy Hao Yue!” Jian Chen bowed at her. He did not mind how fairy Hao Yue sat high above him. He was not even a fraction of her age and she was also the master of his fiancée, You Yue. She had also assisted him in the past, trapping the Changyang protector clan. Thus, he needed to bow when greeting her no matter what.

Chapter 1458: Seven Colors of the Soulcore (Three)

Fairy Hao Yue sat on the throne at the end of the room. Even though she was just a figure condensed from her soul, she seemed rather dignified as she sat there.

Fairy Hao Yue did not stand up. Extending a finger, a powerful force surged from the divine hall before condensing into a chair by Jian Chen's side.

The chair was completely white and glowed with the faint light of the moon. It was completely condensed from energy, but it was tangible and as tough as steel.

Jian Chen did not hold back and sat down. He calmly gazed at fairy Hao Yue, who sat above him.

“Jian Chen, do you know why I've told you to come to my divine hall?” Fairy Hao Yue inquired indifferently.

“It must be something important for you to tell me to come to your divine hall. Please enlighten me as to what it is,” Jian Chen responded.

Fairy Hao Yue stared at him silently for a while before speaking, “You've reached Class 8 as a Radiant Saint Master. While there's always been a rumor on the Tian Yuan Continent that Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters can revive the masters of Saint Weapons who have passed away in meditation, allowing them to roam the world once more, this rumor comes from the ancient times and has never been proven. Even the Class 8 Radiant Saint Master that appeared in the ancient times failed to do something like that.”

Jian Chen thought that fairy Hao Yue did not believe the rumor. He immediately replied, “You're right. However, Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters really can revive Saint Weapons. It's just that it's not enough just by themselves; they need a corresponding secret

method, just like how Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters can raise the dead as long as their souls are intact. The reason why the Class 8 Radiant Saint Master in the ancient times could not revive Saint Weapons was because he did not have the complete secret technique. It's not that the rumor is false."

Fairy Hao Yue stared at Jian Chen deeply. She slowly said, "Jian Chen, you don't need to explain these things to me. Of course I know that the rumor isn't false. I may not be a Radiant Saint Master, but my understanding of them actually far surpasses yours."

Jian Chen's interest was piqued when he heard that. His face immediately became filled with anticipation, and he asked with clasped hands, "May I ask why fairy Hao Yue has suddenly brought up this matter regarding Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters?"

"Jian Chen, you should have guessed part the reason why. Now that you've reached the 8th Class, I've called you over to gift you something you need," fairy Hao Yue said. With a wave of her hand, a scroll made from beast hide immediately flew over from the depths of the divine hall, arriving before Jian Chen.

Jian Chen examined the beast hide. It belonged to a Class 5 Magical Beast and the faint smell of blood still lingered on it. He could tell with a single glance that it had only been removed from a magical beast recently.

Jian Chen accepted the scroll floating before him and slowly opened it with some doubt and anticipation. Immediately, a dense wall of characters was presented before Jian Chen.

Jian Chen held the scroll open with his hands and immediately began to read the contents. He became shocked after a single glance. He could not contain his excitement and joy.

"T-this is actually the method to revive Saint Weapons, and it's complete!" Jian Chen could not help but cry out loud as disbelief flooded his face.

Even the great Class 8 Radiant Saint Master from the ancient times did not possess the secret method to revive Saint Weapons. All he possessed was an incomplete copy. Meanwhile, fairy Hao Yue, who was clearly born after the ancient times, possessed the complete method that had not even appeared in the ancient times. It was impossible for him to not be shocked.

“Correct. This is the secret method that reveals how to revive Saint Weapons. However, it’s only of some use here.” Fairy Hao Yue gently sighed.

“Fairy Hao Yue, may I ask where you obtained this secret method?” Jian Chen asked.

“Jian Chen, you already know that I’m not from this world and have reincarnated from the Saints’ World. My father was the master of the Moon God Hall, and there was a Radiant Godking in our Moon God Hall. This is why my understanding of Radiant Saint Masters is far greater than yours, even though I am not one.

“Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters possess the ability to revive Saint Weapons, but the revival process isn’t as perfect as it’s been rumored to be on the Tian Yuan Continent. You will know the exact reason soon.”

Jian Chen frowned slightly. He found what fairy Hao Yue had just said to be rather confusing. Was there some hidden mystery behind the revival of Saint Weapons?

“Radiant Saint Masters are not as weak as you’ve imagined them to be. Their power is displayed later on. In the Saints’ World, there are very few people who can match up to a Radiant Saint Master if they possess a similar cultivation. Jian Chen, since you’ve already reached the 8th Class, you have to condense a soulcore. However, this soulcore will only be in its initial form. Once you reach the 9th Class, the soulcore reach completion and bloom as a flower of seven colors. You will be able to condense the power of your soul at that time, and once you have that ability, you will have unearthly

powers. At that time, you will become a famed expert across an entire plane. As a result, do not forsake your cultivation as a Radiant Saint Master. A Radiant Saint Master may not be as great of a cultivator as the Chaotic Body at the same level, but it is not much weaker either.” Fairy Hao Yue explained in a stern voice.

Jian Chen was taken aback when he heard that. He had never imagined that Radiant Saint Masters were actually so powerful. After all, Radiant Saint Masters below the 7th Class did not even have the power to protect themselves against fighters.

“You have now gained the secret method to revive Saint Weapons. You should go do what you need to do, but reviving Saint Weapons just as a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master will still be rather arduous. As a result, it’s best if you increase your abilities as a Radiant Saint Master. If you can perfect your soulcore and reach the 9th Class, the revival process will become much easier.”

“Thank you for the guidance, fairy Hao Yue. I will definitely repay your kindness manyfold in the future,” Jian Chen bowed to fairy Hao Yue before leaving the divine hall.

Jian Chen immediately announced his status as a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master after returning to the city lord’s estate. At the same time, he began collecting Ruler Armaments, King Armaments, and Emperor Armaments from everywhere so that he could immediately prepare for the revival of the former masters, having them help fend off the foreign world.

At the same time, Jian Chen felt extremely curious about the unknown mystery hidden behind the revival process.

“What! The greatest human expert, sovereign Jian Chen, is actually a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master as well...”

“This is impossible. In all of history, no one has ever been both a fighter and a Radiant Saint Master...”

“Not only has sovereign Jian Chen surpassed Saint Emperor, but

he's even reached Class 8 as a Radiant Saint Master. I-is this true?"

The entire continent was thrown into an uproar as soon as the news was announced. All of them were shocked by Jian Chen's identity as a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master. After all, Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters were even rarer than Origin realm experts.

In ancient times, four people existed who had surpassed Saint Emperor, yet there had only been a single Class 8 Radiant Saint Master. Even though the Class 8 Radiant Saint Master's battle prowess was nowhere near as great as an Origin realm expert, it was still not enough to overshadow the respected status they deserved.

They deserved respect because of a rumor from the ancient times on the Tian Yuan Continent. This rumor stated that Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters had the ability to revive Saint Weapons, allowing their former masters to roam the earth once more.

Chapter 1459: Revival through Saint Weapons (One)

Not only had the human sovereign's breakthrough to a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master rock the continent, but the news also reached the Beast God Continent, the sea realm, and the Wasteland Continent as quickly as it could, leading to great uproars among the three other races. Everyone discussed the matter of Jian Chen reaching the 8th Class with great interest.

If Jian Chen was only a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master, his identity as both a Radiant Saint Master and fighter would not have been able to create such a commotion. However, his identity held a whole new significance now that he had reached Class 8. Not only had the rumors about Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters spread across the Tian Yuan Continent, but a few experts of the three others races, as well as a few ancient clans and organizations, had heard them as well.

The ability to revive Saint Weapons was labeled as heaven-defying. Many people believed that if the Tian Yuan Continent was in possession of a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master, they would definitely become the most powerful among the four races.

If a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master had appeared on the Tian Yuan Continent in the past, the magical beasts and the Hundred Races would have tried to assassinate him regardless of the consequences, because countless Saint Weapons from Sainthood experts had appeared all over the continent. If all the experts of these weapons were revived, the Tian Yuan Continent would be in possession of a chilling force. At that time, even if the Beast God Continent and the Wasteland Continent worked together, they would not be the Tian Yuan Continent's opponent at all.

However, the threat of the foreign world had united the four races for the first time. Under this situation, not only did the

appearance of a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master fail to make the people of the Beast God Continent and Wasteland Continent worry, but it instead filled them with delight.

“My clan originally possessed a King Armament. It was obtained by one of my clan’s ancestors several tens of thousand of years ago, when he fought against a human Saint King and took it as a trophy of the battle after he killed the human. It’s been stored in my clan’s treasury for all these years, but a few months ago, the great war god sent the command to collect all the Saint Weapons created by human experts, so we handed it over to the War God Hall. Otherwise, I could have used this opportunity to trade for some benefits with the human sovereign.” An old man, who was part of a large tribe on the Wasteland Continent, mumbled to himself after receiving the news.

Many people voiced similar thoughts in the sea realm. Although these weapons would only remain when Sainthood human experts passed away during meditation, there were still a few that had ended up with various organizations in the sea realm due to variety of reasons. A fraction of humans would stay in the sea realm and cultivate there until they passed away, so there were quite a few Saint Weapons left in the sea realm, far more than on the Wasteland Continent. However, since their great sea goddess had personally issued an order for all the clans and organizations to hand over the Saint Weapons they had collected, they had all sent them to the Sea Goddess Hall as quickly as they could. No one dared to defy the order.

However, it was exactly because of this order that many clans and organizations began to regret handing over their Saint Weapons. They did not benefit at all by handing them over to the Sea Goddess Hall. The human sovereign Jian Chen had personally given the order to collect Saint Weapons, so many people immediately began to think about how they could earn a reward if they gave the weapons to Jian Chen.

On the Beast God Continent, the Tiger clan that had once stood as one of the most powerful clans began to feel regret as well. The current grand elder of the clan stood on a mountain as he gazed in the direction of the Beast God Hall. He constantly sighed. “No wonder the peng emperor commanded the entire Beast God Continent to gather the human Saint Weapons. Turns out he already knew that the human sovereign had become a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master. Sigh, my clan also had a few of these human Saint Weapons. Just the Emperor Armaments numbered four. They were all trophies of battles from the past, but they’ve all been collected by the peng emperor. If our clan had personally delivered the Emperor Armaments to the human sovereign, we could have gotten him to add a few words for us to the beast god. It wouldn’t have been difficult to save our clan from being devastated.

“Peng emperor, this might be our only chance at surviving. Are you unwilling to give us a chance like this? The emperor may have committed heinous crimes, but many of our clansmen are innocent...”

The grand elder was grief-stricken. He also showed vague signs of despair. Even though he knew that the end of the clan would coincide with the day the Winged Tiger God emerged from seclusion, the clan did not choose to flee. Even if they fled to the ends of the earth, it would be useless against an expert who had surpassed Saint Emperor.

Soon after Jian Chen announced the news that he was collecting Saint Weapons at Flame City, the ten protector clans and Mercenary City all paid him a visit. They all offered up a Space Ring before leaving, and soon after they left, Cangqiong, Yadriam, and a Saint Emperor hall elder of the War God Hall, all came as well. They also offered up a Space Ring each.

Within the Space Rings were all the Saint Weapons they had collected from their own territories. They all offered them to Jian Chen without holding back at all.

Jian Chen became stunned when he saw how the Space Rings were filled with so many Saint Weapons. Soon after, his face was replaced by a smile. He clasped his hands at them and thanked them. After conversing with them a little, he entered a secret room with the Space Rings and immediately entered seclusion.

As Jian Chen sorted through the Saint Weapons in the Space Ring, he could not help but gasp, even with his mental fortitude. From all the Space Rings, just the number of Emperor Armaments ranged in the hundreds. There were over ten thousand King Armaments while the Ruler Armaments had exceeded the King Armaments by tenfold. There was over a hundred thousand of them.

These Saint Weapons had been accumulated over several hundred thousand years, possibly even over a million. Although there were many of them, they amounted to a tiny fraction, less than a hundredth, of all the Sainthood experts that the Tian Yuan Continent had given birth to.

Each protector clan had fused over a hundred Emperor Armaments into their ancestral weapons and all the former masters of the weapons belonged to their clan.

Jian Chen sat down in the secret room. He calmed himself before grabbing a Ruler Armament. His eyes revealed his eagerness as he mumbled, "Let's try with a Ruler Armament first and see what the outcome is really like after its master has been revived."

Chapter 1460: Revival through the Saint Weapons (Two)

A head-sized luminous pearl was lodged into the roof of the room where Jian Chen had settled down. It gave off a gentle light, which illuminated the room. Jian Chen sat in the center of the secret room. He silently reviewed the method of reviving Saint Weapons, thinking through every step it involved. He was making the final preparations for the process he was about to undergo.

A while later, Jian Chen's eyes suddenly snapped open. They were bright, causing the room to lighten up slightly.

He slowly raised his right hand as he stared at the tip of his right index finger. A ball of white light had suddenly appeared there. Although the light was extremely gentle, it illuminated the entire room like sunlight, causing the luminous pearl in the ceiling to darken.

This was the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force. Although this energy was stored in the soul, after reaching the 8th Class, Jian Chen could use this origin energy as he wished. He could now summon it through his hands.

Jian Chen used the Radiant Saint Force origin energy on the tip of his right finger as a pen, slowly drawing complicated and mysterious inscriptions in the air. He moved very slowly, devoting his complete attention to the process. He was afraid that something would go wrong somewhere and lead to failure.

The inscription he drew in the air did not disperse. Instead, it lingered, glowing with a faint white light. Each inscription contained a sliver of the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force.

Jian Chen drew a total of thirty-six inscriptions. Each inscription was different and they grouped into a formation in the air.

A thin bead of sweat had already appeared on Jian Chen's

forehead. Drawing the inscriptions seemed extremely difficult to him.

Jian Chen finally let out a breath of relief as he stared at the thirty-six inscriptions in the air. He thought to himself, “Every Saint Weapon contains the souls of their previous masters formed from their three vital energies. If I want to revive the Saint Weapon, I need to awaken the fragile soul in the weapon first. Then I must use a secret method to melt the weapon and use its power to condense a body of energy. That way, the fragile soul within the Saint Weapon can be revived. If I want to awaken the soul in the Saint Weapon, I need to send these thirty-six inscriptions condensed from Radiant Saint Force origin energy into the Saint Weapon. Condensing these inscriptions is the hardest step according to the method. I never thought I would succeed on my first try.” Jian Chen could not help but faintly smile as he stared at the formation he had created from the thirty-six inscriptions.

But, the next moment, his face suddenly froze. The thirty-six inscriptions rapidly faded in the air, disappearing completely in just a few short seconds.

“I failed?” Jian Chen became stunned before gently sighing. The Radiant Saint Force origin energy within the inscriptions had actually vaporized, making him lose some of the energy.

However, he had only lost a sliver of it. It was nothing great to him, a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master.

“This step really behaves how the secret method recorded it to be. It is far more complicated than it seems. However, why did I fail just then?” Jian Chen did not lose heart at all. Instead, he sank into his thoughts and closely examined the reason why he had failed.

After that first failure, Jian Chen tried time and time again, ignoring his exhaustion. Condensing the thirty-six inscriptions

was not difficult to him. What he found difficult was how he could not find the reason why the inscriptions would disperse once the formation was created. For a time, even Jian Chen had no idea what was going wrong.

In the blink of an eye, seven days passed. Jian Chen tried time and time again, but the result remained failure after failure. However, he would sink into his thoughts after each failure and search for a reason. Finally, he discovered the reason behind all his failures after seven days of continuous trial.

“The formation created by the thirty-six inscriptions can awaken the fragile soul within the Saint Weapon. Not only do these inscriptions need to contain Class 8 Radiant Saint Force origin energy, but they also need a sliver of soul and life from the caster,” Jian Chen reached an understanding. Without the slightest hesitation, he immediately fused a sliver of his soul into the thirty-six inscriptions and used the Zi Ying Sword to cut his finger. He let a drop of blood drip out and then split it into thirty-six portions.

This was no ordinary blood. It was blood from the Chaotic Body. It possessed great pulses of energy and life. Even though it was just a drop of blood, it possessed the power to kill a Saint Ruler.

Jian Chen fused a drop of his blood and a sliver of his soul into the thirty-six inscriptions, immediately causing them to shine brighter. Their color changed from white to a faint red as they let out a dazzling red light. At that moment, the inscriptions seemed to gain the presence of life.

This time, the inscriptions remained and didn't disperse. They created a perfect formation and became whole.

Jian Chen's eyes suddenly lit up. With eagerness and excitement, he immediately sent the formation into the Ruler Armament he had prepared beforehand.

As soon as the thirty-six inscriptions came in contact with the Ruler Armament, they disappeared. They quickly surrounded the

fragile soul within the Ruler Armament under Jian Chen's control, slowly fusing with it and awakening it.

A while later, the fragile soul completely absorbed the thirty-six inscriptions. The Radiant Saint Force origin energy within the thirty-six inscriptions awakened and rapidly nourished the sliver of the soul that was left, allowing it to recover very quickly. The droplet of blood gave it life.

Jian Chen could clearly sense the changes occurring the fragile soul in the Saint Weapon. He contained his swelling excitement and continued to use the secret method, condensing the solid weapon into a new ball of pure energy.

Whether it was a Ruler Armament, a King Armament, or even an Emperor Armament, they were all condensed from the Saint Force that had resided within their owner. What Jian Chen was doing now was returning the Saint Weapon back to its original shape, condensing a body of energy.

Jian Chen did not come across any difficulties with this step, proceeding through everything extremely smoothly. The Ruler Armament had transformed into a ball of pure energy before morphing into the shape of an old man.

The old man's appearance was distinct. Although he was only condensed from energy, he seemed no different than someone with flesh and blood. However, his presence as a Saint Ruler constantly rushed against the walls of the room, causing the room to shake, while his eyes were in a daze, without any emotions at all.

"A Saint Ruler of the Sixth Heavenly Layer. Just as I expected. Although I can revive people through Saint Weapons, their strength will fall after being revived. It won't be at the Ninth Heavenly Layer," Jian Chen mumbled to himself. He examined the old man before him in interest, failing to contain his joy.

This was because it was he who had revived this old man from a

Saint Weapon with his abilities as a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master.

However, Jian Chen noticed something wrong with the old man very soon. His dazed and empty gaze did not seem like a normal person at all.

“No self-awareness, just like a puppet!” Jian Chen realized what the problem was very soon. He was immediately surprised and greatly shocked. At the same time, he could sense an extremely familiar presence coming from this old man. It was actually the presence of his blood and soul.

Chapter 1461: Class 9 Radiant Saint Master (One)

“I used a sliver of my soul and a drop of my blood to awaken the slumbering, fragile soul within the Saint Weapon, yet the form it takes after it awakens actually bears traces of my presence. It doesn’t possess any presence that belongs to itself...”

“Not only does this old man lack a soul, but he lacks self-awareness as well. He seems like a puppet. Did something go wrong during the revival process? Or is this just how a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master revives a Saint Weapon?”

“When I obtained the complete secret technique from fairy Hao Yue, she did mention that Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters could perform the revival, but the process would not be as perfect as it was rumored to be on the Tian Yuan Continent. In other words, a drawback exists in the revival. Is this the drawback?”

Jian Chen pulled out another Saint Weapon from his Space Ring when he reached this conclusion. He decided to find the answer of his question by using this second Ruler Armament.

This was because he was still filled with some hope. It was extremely likely that the first Ruler Armament had ended up defective because he messed up.

Jian Chen was much more familiar with the revival process of the second Ruler Armament after the experience he had gained from the first one. Very soon, the second Ruler Armament condensed into a burly, middle-aged man before his eager gaze.

In the end, Jian Chen was still disappointed. The middle-aged man was the same as the old man. He lacked self-awareness, and his eyes were empty, without an intelligent light whatsoever.

Jian Chen sighed gently. He felt like the situation he was dealing with was rather pitiful. Although he had completed the

unprecedented process of reviving people through Saint Weapons, those who were revived did not possess the self-awareness they once had. As a result, the strength they could display was extremely limited, which was not something he wanted to see.

These puppets would probably become his special army, unable to betray him at all, but he would much rather have living people than loyal puppets.

This was because the current world needed power far too much.

Afterward, Jian Chen studied the two puppets further. He found the advantages and disadvantages of the puppets. To his relief, although the puppets lacked self-awareness, they still possessed some of their former battle experience and did not feel pain, much less fear. Their advantage would become clear once a life-or-death battle occurred.

“Looks like we can only treat them as weapons in human form,” Jian Chen mumbled to himself. The gaze he gave the two puppets was filled with mixed feelings.

No one would have ever thought that the people revived through Saint Weapons would end up like this.

Jian Chen dismissed his feelings and immediately began to revive a third Saint Weapon.

Although reviving them into puppets would be disrespecting and committing a sin against the creators, the Tian Yuan Continent needed power just far too urgently. As a result, Jian Chen disregarded these thoughts during this period of time.

In the blink of an eye, seven days passed. Aside from the two Ruler Armaments he had revived, Jian Chen had also revived three King Armaments and an Emperor Armament. Three Saint King puppets and a Saint Emperor puppet had appeared in the room. These puppets struggled to maintain their former strength, all losing three or four Heavenly Layers.

“Reviving Ruler Armaments is not difficult with my powers as a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master. King Armaments are a little difficult, and I can just barely manage Emperor Armaments. I almost failed during the revival of the Emperor Armament just then. If I continue at this rate, I wonder when I’ll be able to revive all the Saint Weapons in the Space Rings. By then, the World of Forsaken Saints probably would have invaded long ago. Looks like I need to reach the 9th Class. Once I break through and become a Class 9 Radiant Saint Master, my soulcore will be complete and even reviving Emperor Armaments will become much easier,” thought Jian Chen. He slowly stood up, opened the door to the room, and left.

Jian Chen did not take the Saint Weapon puppets with them. He left them in the room because he felt like their existences should not be known by others.

Jian Chen did not disturb Bi Lian and the others as he silently left Flame City. He made his way to the City of God once again and entered the headquarters of the Radiant Saint Master Union. He returned to the artifact space to continue cultivating.

Within the artifact space, the union president, grand elder, Quan Youcai, and Kara Liwei all sat in different corners of the hall. The mist-like Radiant Saint Force origin energy was being absorbed by the four of them at a visible rate.

Their rate of absorption was not as fast as Jian Chen, so the Radiant Saint Force origin energy had not decreased by much after they had cultivated for a dozen days.

However, Kara Liwei and Quan Youcai had reached the peak of Class 6 long ago. Although it had only been a few days, Jian Chen could already tell that they were extremely close to breaking through.

Although the president of the union had remained at the peak of the 7th Class for several hundreds of years, the disparity between

the 7th and 8th Class was just far too vast. Even when Jian Chen was absorbing the origin energy, he still needed some time to break through.

Jian Chen concealed his presence and silently made his way to the center of the hall. A white orb, completely condensed from Radiant Saint Force origin energy, hovered there. He stared at it for a while before sucking in a deep breath. He sat in the air. He gently pressed his hands against the orb.

The origin energy that revolved around the orb began to violently surge. It seemed to be disturbed, approaching Jian Chen's forehead without anyone's control. An invisible whirlpool seemed to have formed in front of Jian Chen's forehead, sucking at the mist and pulling it all in. In the end, it actually formed a white streak that connected the orb to Jian Chen's forehead.

At the same time, even the pure origin energy within the white orb began to endlessly surge out. It was all absorbed by Jian Chen like a whale taking in water.

The white speck of light in Jian Chen's soul, the soulcore, began to swell at a gradual rate. The origin energy hidden within it was increasing at all times.

Chapter 1462: Class 9 Radiant Saint Master (Two)

Time passed silently. In the blink of an eye, half a year passed by. Jian Chen, the president, the grand elder, Kara Liwei, and Quan Youcai all devoted themselves to their cultivation. They did not pay attention to what was happening in the outside world. They had all entered a mindless state of cultivation. They all wanted to break through in the shortest amount of time possible and contribute to protecting the world during the next battle.

It was completely silent in the artifact space during that period of time. The artifact space had lost its liveliness after Jian Chen chose to resettle all the magical beasts that had lived there before. The roars of beasts, which would ring out from time to time, had disappeared long ago. The entire place sank into a dead silence with a suffocating atmosphere.

Compared to the artifact space, the outside world was extremely bustling. During the half a year, where Jian Chen was cultivating, the conversations regarding him never stopped on the Tian Yuan Continent, the Beast God Continent, the sea realm, or the Wasteland Continent. Almost all the Saint Weapons across the four races had ended up with Jian Chen, so they obviously all were worried about whether or not Jian Chen could revive the Saint Weapons.

After all, the revival of experts who had been dead for a long time and had only left behind a weapon was still something that many people found unbelievable. This information only came from a rumor that originated during the ancient times, and there were no records of people being revived from Saint Weapons. Even the only Class 8 Radiant Saint Master in history had failed to do revive someone from a Saint Weapon, so many people still remained skeptical. There were even some people who did not believe that

the rumor was true at all.

Many people across the four races silently waited for Jian Chen's news. They looked forward to when Jian Chen would reappear and answer their questions. It would be fine if Saint Weapons could not be revived, but if they could, then the power of their world would increase by several fold without a single doubt. This increase in power would be extremely helpful when fending off the next invasion.

The head-sized orb before had already shrunk by a quarter of its original size after half a year of absorption. Jian Chen's soul core, which was condensed from Class 8 Radiant Saint Force origin energy, had grown a lot. The origin energy within it was several times denser than when he had first broken through.

This was not just an increase in quantity but an increase in quality as well. After all, the origin energy within the orb was much purer than the strands in the air.

The president, grand elder, Quan Youcai, and Kara Liwei sat in the corners of the room. After half a year of cultivation, over half of the origin energy permeating the hall had been absorbed. They refined the origin energy far slower than Jian Chen. Even the four of them combined were not as fast as Jian Chen when he was at still a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master.

At this moment, the president of the Radiant Saint Master Union began to shine bright. An extremely dense white light expanded from his head, enveloping him in a single instance.

This was a sign that he was about to break through to the 8th Class. The president had finally reached the 8th Class as he had always dreamed. All the Radiant Saint Force origin energy he had accumulated throughout his life and had absorbed from the artifact space surged wildly into his soul. It gathered at a single point before condensing into a tiny soulcore.

The president roused from his cultivation soon after his soulcore

had been condensed. The moment he opened his eyes, his appearance changed as well. Even though he was still an old man who seemed to be in his seventies, his face was ruddy and filled with energy. An obvious amount of wrinkles also vanished from his face. The withering life within his body suddenly began to bubble again.

The president's face was filled with excitement and joy. He had waited for this day for just far too long. He had worked arduously for over two thousand years just to reach the 8th Class.

Not only did becoming a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master mean attaining the president's greatest wish, but it also meant an increased lifespan.

Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters were akin to Saint Rulers. They could live three thousand years while Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters possessed the same lifespan as a Saint King.

He was still the president of an entire union after all, so he quickly calmed down. He looked around and discovered Jian Chen cultivating in the center of the room with a single glance. His eyes suddenly narrowed.

"Jian Chen's already become a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master, but he's absorbing the purer origin energy there. Does he plan on reaching the 9th Class in a single stroke?" The president thought and immediately gasped. His eyes soon began to shine brighter as he looked at Jian Chen in anticipation.

"Class 9 Radiant Saint Masters have never appeared in the history of the Tian Yuan Continent. Even I, the president of the Radiant Saint Master Union, have no idea what a Class 9 Radiant Saint Master is like. Is Jian Chen planning on becoming a legend as a Radiant Saint Master?" The president suddenly found that his heart had begun to thump uncontrollably. He did not leave and sat back down where he was. His eyes lit up as he stared at Jian Chen. He wanted to witness the birth of a legend, the legend of a Class 9

Radiant Saint Master.

In the blink of an eye, another half a year passed. Quan Youcai and Kara Liwei both successfully reached the 7th Class, but they did not leave either. They sat there silently, just like the president, staring at Jian Chen. They wanted to see whether he could reach the 9th Class as well.

Kara Liwei was several hundreds years old, but she looked like a woman in her twenties. She was noble, refined, and beautiful. As she stared at Jian Chen's handsome, refined face, she fell into a daze. Complicated emotions filled her eyes along with respect and admiration.

Very soon, another half a year passed. The grand elder had successfully reached the 8th Class as well. When he learned that Jian Chen was attempting a breakthrough to the 9th Class, he did not leave either and stayed behind.

Even the artifact spirit had come, sitting silently at the main entrance of the hall.

Jian Chen had already been cultivating for one and a half years in the artifact space, and the orb was less than a third of its original size.

When he had cultivated for exactly two years, the artifact spirit, who was sitting at the entrance, suddenly opened his eyes. At the same time, the president and grand elder's eyes narrowed.

The next moment, an extremely powerful pressure suddenly radiated from Jian Chen's body. It was a pressure that originated from the soul. The president, grand elder, artifact spirit, Kara Liwei, and Quan Youcai immediately revealed a different expression and left the hall in a hurry, traveling far away from Jian Chen.

To their shock, they found that their souls trembled before the pressure. Not only had the pressure suppressed them to the point

that they could not move, but they even felt like their souls were about to collapse, as if just the pressure would be enough to squash their souls if they continued to endure it. If it became slightly stronger, they would have ended up dead.

“I-is this the pressure of an Origin realm expert or the pressure of a Class 9 Radiant Saint Master...” The president cried out uncontrollably as shock filled his eyes.

Before he could finish what he was saying, a dazzling light exploded from Jian Chen’s body. The light was no longer gentle, now filled with brutality. It outshone the sun as it endlessly stretch into the distance. At that moment, the entire artifact spirit had become enveloped by the light.

Kara Liwei and Quan Youcai could not help but grunt painfully. The two of them closed their eyes in a hurry and covered them soon after. A streak of blood flowed slowly, barely visible between their fingers.

The grand elder and president closed their eyes as well. As they rapidly retreated, they used their hands to cover their eyes, but there was also some red between the cracks of their fingers.

When the light appeared, the artifact spirit grew faint before quickly consolidating again. He immediately stared at Jian Chen in shock before vanishing with a flash. He had traveled far away from Jian Chen.

Chapter 1463: Class 9 Radiant Saint Master (Three)

“What’s this? Has something gone wrong with Jian Chen’s cultivation?” Quan Youcai backed off hurriedly as he loudly asked a question. His voice was filled with worry.

“That light is Radiant Saint Force origin energy, but it’s normally always gentle. Why has it become brutal all of a sudden? H-has Jian Chen successfully become a Class 9 Radiant Saint Master?” The president asked with a deep voice. His face was filling with shock.

“A Class 9 Radiant Saint Master. A Class 9 Radiant Saint Master. They’ve never appeared in all of history. Am I going to witness the birth of a legend today? Is the difference between Class 8 and 9 this brutal origin energy?” The grand elder murmured. He was excited and his voice was trembling.

At this moment, the four of them dared not to open their eyes. They all used their hands to cover their eyes to block the sharp light.

Even though two of them were Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters, equivalent to Saint Kings on the Tian Yuan Continent, they still did not look at the light with their naked eyes. Not only was this light brighter than the sun and could cause drastic injuries to the eyes, but the light could attack their souls as well. It could injure their souls by seeping through their eyes.

Even though they had covered their eyes, they still felt like their hands, faces, and even bodies were being stabbed at by something small and sharp, as if the light had turned into countless needles.

Although it was not enough to injure the four of them, the unexpected change still shocked them. After all, they were Radiant Saint Masters and had cultivated for many years. They understood

Radiant Saint Force extremely well. They would never have thought that Radiant Saint Force could contain such a surprising might.

The pressure from Jian Chen grew stronger and stronger. The soulcore in his soul had grown by a lot, passing the initial phase of completion.

However, his soulcore was still not perfect, but at this moment, his soulcore let out a great brilliance. The light passed through his body and appeared like a miniature sun, illuminating the entire artifact space.

Although the light was Radiant Saint Force origin energy, it was no longer gentle. It was brutal.

Meanwhile, the soulcore gradually fused with his soul. This fusion was a true fusion where the two combined into one.

As they fused, Jian Chen's soul rapidly grew. It made a leap in power as the pressure he gave off, which affected the souls of people, rapidly increased.

The president, grand elder, Quan Youcai, and Kara Liwei backed off time and time again, now several dozen kilometers away from where Jian Chen was. Only there could they endure the pressure emanating from Jian Chen. The artifact spirit had already disappeared long ago and had not appeared since.

Jian Chen's fusion between soul and soulcore lasted for three whole days. The light from Jian Chen's body gradually disappeared after that and the pressure vanished as well.

Jian Chen remained seated where he was. He silently sensed the changes that had occurred. The first thing he noticed was what had happened to his soul. Before he had reached the 8th Class, his soul had still been at the peak of Saint Emperor, and after breaking through, he had stepped into the Origin realm.

Yet now, his soul had powered up after becoming a Class 9

Radiant Saint Master with the fusion between his soulcore and soul. It had become several times more powerful than before.

At this moment, the president, grand elder, Quan Youcai, and Kara Liwei all returned to the hall from several dozen kilometers away. They gathered in the hall once again and all stared at Jian Chen.

There were some dried traces of blood lingering at the corner of their eyes. Their eyes were all slightly bloodshot while Quan Youcai and Kara Liwei were particularly affected. Their eyes seemed scarlet.

The artifact spirit silently appeared as well. He stood with the four of them as they all gazed at Jian Chen. His face was filled with caution, as if he was prepared to flee if Jian Chen began to shine again.

He was a spirit, so the white light, which could directly attack a soul, was extremely harmful to him. The light would affect him more than it would impact Kara Liwei and Quan Youcai.

Jian Chen finally opened his eyes. The breakthrough this time was different. He had not been able to contain his excitement when he had reached the 8th Class, but he was extremely calm after breaking through to the 9th Class.

“Jian Chen, have you broken through successfully?” Quan Youcai could not help but ask. Even though he already knew the answer to the question, he wanted confirmation from Jian Chen.

Jian Chen nodded with a smile. As he gazed at their bloodshot eyes, he obviously knew that they had become that way because of him. He immediately felt apologetic inside and a powerful white light emerged from him, enveloping the four of them.

This white light was bright, but it was extremely gentle, unlike the brutal light from before, which had been filled with offensive powers.

The four of them immediately felt a comfortable feeling well up in every corner of their body, coming from the gentle, white light. Their bodies felt light and at ease, as if their constitutions had been modified. The bloodshot redness in their eyes vanished in a short moment. Their eyes were completely healed.

Very soon, the white light disappeared. However, to their shock, their constitution had changed slightly in just that short moment. It was like a person with an ordinary talent had consumed a thousand-year-old heavenly resource, modifying their constitution for the better.

The four of them became extremely shocked when they discovered this change. Even the president and grand elder struggled to remain calm. They had already guessed that a Class 9 Radiant Saint Master would be very powerful, but they had never imagined that their power would be so great that they could modify the constitution of people in just a short moment.

“I’ve purified your bodies with a strand of Class 9 origin energy, assisting you by laying down your future path. Cultivation will be all the more easy now,” Jian Chen said. After he had completed his soulcore and completely fused it with his soul, he seemed to have opened a new gate. He understood many things now, and his control and usage of Radiant Saint Force origin energy had reached a whole new level.

The president and grand elder simultaneously gasped. They stared at Jian Chen with mixed feelings. A Class 9 Radiant Saint Master had never appeared throughout the history of the Tian Yuan Continent, yet this level had been attained by the young man right before them. This filled them with indescribable feelings.

Chapter 1464: Martial Soul Force (One)

Jian Chen removed some Ruler Armaments and King Armaments from his Space Ring and gave them to the grand elder and president. He also told them about the method of reviving the Saint Weapons as well as the experience he had gained from his attempts.

Now that both the president and grand elder had reached the 8th Class, they possessed the ability to revive Saint Weapons. The pressure on Jian Chen would be reduced with their help. At the very least, they would him save a lot of time.

What they lacked most was time, seeing how the next wave of the invasion from the foreign world could come at any moment!

The president and grand elder accepted the beast hide that recorded the method of revival like it was a treasure. They held it carefully in their hands as joy filled their hearts.

Quan Youcai and Kara Liwei enviously stood on one side. They also felt the urge to reach Class 8.

After a moment of hesitance because Jian Chen was taking in the grand elder and president's excited faces, he revealed the secret of the puppets to them so that they could prepare themselves mentally.

Their reactions were just as Jian Chen had expected. They became stunned. Jian Chen did not give them any time to react, leaving the artifact space with a wave of his hand. The four of them had been sent out as well.

When the president, grand elder, Kara Liwei, and Quan Youcai returned to the union headquarters, Jian Chen was already gone. He had left first. Kara Liwei and Quan Youcai were dejected since they wanted to thank him.

Jian Chen visited Lore City first and sent his mother into the

artifact space. The white orb had not been completely absorbed by Jian Chen. It was egg-sized now.

“Mother, cultivate without worrying in here. Here is an orb condensed from Radiant Saint Force origin energy. If you can absorb all of it, you may not reach the 8th Class, but there is more than enough to reach the 7th Class,” Jian Chen softly said to Bi Yuntian before passing the solid orb to her.

Bi Yuntian was over fifty years old but only seemed to be in her twenties or thirties. She wore a luxurious white dress and a snow-white cloak on her back. She seemed graceful and kind.

Bi Yuntian immediately looked at the egg-sized orb that was constantly emitting strands of origin energy. Curiosity filled her eyes before she carefully accepted it. She examined it closely and asked, “Xiang’er, is this origin energy of Radiant Saint Force?”

The origin energy of Radiant Saint Force was a power that only Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters could possess. Although Bi Yuntian had seen it before because of her special status, this was the first time she could sense the mysteries of the power at such a close range.

“Correct, this is Radiant Saint Force origin energy, but it’s much purer than ordinary origin energy. Class 6 Radiant Saint Masters only need to fuse a strand of it into their soul and their souls will morph, allowing them to step into the 7th Class. Their souls will condense and will be unbound from the body, just like Saint Rulers. Mother, you may not have reached the peak of the 6th Class and are unable to fuse a strand of origin energy, but the Radiant Saint Force in the artifact space is many times denser than the outside world. If you keep the orb near you, you will cultivate even faster. You’ll be able to reach the peak of the 6th Class quickly, and at that time, you’ll be able to absorb the origin energy within the orb to reach the 7th Class,” said Jian Chen.

“Class 7,” Bi Yuntian murmured. Her eyes were filled with

excitement and anticipation, but she calmed down. She looked at Jian Chen lovingly and gently said, “Xiang’er, I’m already very satisfied and proud of you being able to reach such heights. Becoming a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master is no longer important to me. You should keep this orb with you. You need it more than me.” Bi Yuntian passed the orb back to Jian Chen.

Jian Chen gently shook his head and smiled, “Mother, I’ve already reached the 9th Class. This orb is no longer any use to me, so just keep it. Take it and cultivate at ease here so that you can become a Class 7 sooner.”

“What! You’re already a Class 9...” Bi Yuntian was immediately shocked when she heard that Jian Chen had already reached the 9th Class. She stared at him in amazement. Disbelief was written all across her face.

Just like that, Bi Yuntian temporarily settled down in the artifact space. She did what Jian Chen wanted her to do, cultivate and work toward becoming a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master.

Jian Chen left the artifact space after having settled this matter with his mother. The tower-like saint artifact immediately shot into Jian Chen’s forehead and disappeared.

Jian Chen returned to Flame City. When he was about to enter the same secret room to revive Emperor Armaments, he suddenly heard fairy Hao Yue’s voice. “Jian Chen, please come to me Bright Moon Divine Hall.”

Jian Chen was taken aback, but without any hesitation, he entered the back courtyard of the city lord’s estate in just a few flashes. He arrived before the entrance of the divine hall.

The entrance opened automatically and Jian Chen stepped inside. He disappeared very quickly into the divine hall.

He found fairy Hao Yue in the same hall he had met her in before. She sat on a high throne as an illusionary figure, looking down on

Jian Chen who sat below. Her gaze seemed to be able to pierce everything. She stared at Jian Chen closely, as if she could see everything inside and outside him.

Fairy Hao Yue sighed in surprise after some time. She said, “I never thought that you would become a Class 9 Radiant Saint Master so soon. This is something I must congratulate you on accomplishing. If you hadn’t advanced as a Radiant Saint Master, your soul would still be at the level of a Saint Emperor. The complete soulcore at Class 9 just happens to be at the same level as your soul, which is why the two could fuse perfectly, allowing your peak Saint Emperor soul to reach its current power at early Returnance. You must be able to refine Martial Soul Force now.”

Jian Chen was shocked after listening to her. Only now did he understand why his soulcore and soul had fused so perfectly. As it turned out, it was because his Class 9 soulcore was the same level as his peak Saint Emperor soul. The two of them could only meld together perfectly when they were at the same level.

Although his soul had stepped into the Origin realm when he had reached the 8th Class, that was because of his incomplete soulcore. If he did not create a soulcore, his soul would have remained at the peak of Saint Emperor. The two of them would never have properly fused together.

“Fairy Hao Yue, may I ask you what Martial Soul Force is?” Jian Chen asked while modestly clasped hands. Although fairy Hao Yue was not a Radiant Saint Master, her understanding of Radiant Saint Masters was enough for her to guide him, a Class 9 Radiant Saint Master.

Chapter 1465: Martial Soul Force (Two)

“Martial Soul Force is a power that emerges once the soulcore fuses with the soul. It’s not something that can be possessed by people who are not both fighters and Radiant Saint Masters. Martial Soul Force will radiate uncontrollably when the soulcore and soul fuses together. You’ve undergone that process already, so I think you understand what this Martial Soul Force is a little,” explained fairy Hao Yue.

A gleam of light flashed through Jian Chen’s eyes. He asked, “Is this Martial Soul Force a type of pressure that targets the soul?”

“Martial Soul Force is an extremely wondrous power. Through my understanding, it is similar to soul attacks and specializes in harming the souls of others, but it is far more terrifying than ordinary soul attacks. However, since there are far too few cultivators who are both fighters and Radiant Saint Masters in the Saints’ World, even I have not personally seen people use it. I’ve only heard of them, so my knowledge regarding Martial Soul Force is limited. If you want to understand it in further detail, you can only investigate it yourself.

“But I once heard a rumor that a single Overgod, who was both a fighter and a Radiant Saint Master, managed to slay several hundred Gods in a single moment and heavily injure over ten other Overgods with Martial Soul Force alone. Two of these Overgods even ranked within the top three thousand on the Overgod’s Plaque. You should know how powerful Martial Soul Force is now.” Fairy Hao Yue closely observed Jian Chen.

Jian Chen was shocked. It was not rare for a single person to take on many others on the same cultivation level. He could do it right now. However, to heavily injure them in a single moment and kill several hundred people who were only one cultivation level lower was far too shocking. After all, the time taken was just far too short.

At the very least, when he had first forged the Azulet swords, he had claimed that he was invincible among Saint Emperors and could take on Origin realm experts, but he definitely would not have been able to kill several hundred Saint Kings and over ten Saint Emperors in a single moment.

Jian Chen's breathing became rather ragged. He became extremely excited and was in shock thinking about how powerful Martial Soul Force was. If he possessed this ability and the astonishing battle prowess of that Overgod mentioned by fairy Hao Yue, he would not need to fear the invasion of the World of Forsaken Saints even if the invasion force possessed an absolute advantage with regards to the number of Saint Emperors and even Origin realm experts that would come.

According to the glorious battle record of that Overgod from the Saints' World and with Jian Chen's soul now at the Returnance realm, he would be satisfied with the ability to heavily-injured Receival experts, not even Returnance experts. At the same time, it was extremely likely that he could kill Saint Emperors like how that Overgod had killed Gods, ending the lives of hundreds in a single moment.

"Martial Soul Force is very powerful. Even the Saints' World has publically recognized it, which is why those who are both Radiant Saint Masters and fighters are known to be impossible to fight. Only the prodigies groomed by a few large organizations have the right to stand up to them in battle. However, there are very few people who can use Martial Soul Force. With my estimation, it would be difficult for you to find even ten people who can use it across the entire Saints' World."

Fairy Hao Yue fell silent for a while. She then gazed at Jian Chen and continued, "There's one more thing. Throughout the countless years that the Saints' World has been around, I have never heard of a user of Martial Soul Force who has reached the level of Grand Prime."

Jian Chen was unaffected by this revelation. His face did not change because it was impossible to break through to Grand Prime. He practiced the Chaotic Body. In the history of the Immortals' World, no one had reached Immortal Exalt with the Chaotic Body either.

Seeing no response from Jian Chen, fairy Hao Yue thought he did not know what a Grand Prime was, so she said, "Jian Chen, you're now in possession of strength in the Origin realm, so it's time for you to understand a little of the basic information regarding the higher world. The cultivation realms in the Saints' World are split into five major realms: Mortal realm, Sainthood, Origin realm, Godhood, and Primordial realm.

"The Mortal realm corresponds to those below Saint Ruler on the Tian Yuan Continent. Sainthood is Saint Ruler, Saint King, and Emperor while the Origin realm is Receiving, Returnance, and Reciprocity. Your current strength is in the Origin realm, but I am not sure how to rank you with the cultivation method your practice. It's very difficult for me to determine your exact strength. The only thing I can determine is that your soul has already reached the level of Returnance.

"Beyond the Origin realm is Godhood. It has four minor cultivation realms: Deity, God, Overgod, and Godking. Beyond that is the final major realm of cultivation, the Primordial realm!

"The Primordial realm is split into three minor cultivation realms: Infinite Primes, Chaotic Primes, and Grand Primes. Grand Primes are peak existences in the Saints' World. The status they hold there is equivalent to Saint Emperors on the Tian Yuan Continent. They are the strongest in the higher world and have reached the end of the path of cultivation. Jian Chen, you are destined to never reach the apex as both a fighter and Radiant Saint Master. If you go to the Saints' World in the future, even if you devote your entire life to cultivation, you will never be able to hold a supreme status like on the Tian Yuan Continent regardless

of how shocking your talent is. Do you not feel disappointed because of that?”

Jian Chen smiled at ease, “Fairy Hao Yue, I’m still far from Godhood, so isn’t Grand Prime just too distant for me right now? And I’ve never purposefully pursued status throughout my life, let alone care about it. In the past, I only worked hard to live. My goal was to not be felled by the blade of my enemies as well as to gain enough strength to protect my friends and family.”

Fairy Hao Yue wanted to praise him. “It’s best if you can maintain a mindset like that. However, your talent is so great that you could even be ranked among the prodigies groomed by large clans. Even if you can’t become a Grand Prime in the future, you can reign supreme below Grand Prime and still dominate.”

“I thank you for your praise.” Jian Chen clasped his hands with a smile.

“Alright, Jian Chen. I haven’t called you over to only tell you about Martial Soul Force. Even I’ve never seen it before, so the main reason I called you here is to personally witness the wonders of Martial Soul Force and see whether it’s as powerful as it’s rumored to be,” fairy Hao Yue said.

“I will demonstrate Martial Soul Force since you want to see it. However, as I am unfamiliar with it, I may not be able to control it, so please be careful, fairy Hao Yue,” said Jian Chen.

Fairy Hao Yue snickered, “I may only be a soul now, but I’m not something you’ll be able to harm within this divine hall.”

Chapter 1466: Sparring with Fairy Hao Yue

Jian Chen said nothing more. He slowly closed his eyes. Martial Soul Force was only a name from the Saints' World. To Jian Chen, this so-called Martial Soul Force was only the power of his soul. It was the power of his new soul, which had perfectly fused the soul of a fighter and the soulcore of a Radiant Saint Master.

This was akin to Yin and Yang Qi. Once they fused, they would change and create chaos.

A while later, Jian Chen's eyes suddenly snapped open. At that moment, his gaze became extremely shocking. A tremendous pressure radiated from him, surging into the surroundings like a storm.

The pressure targeted the soul. A devastating force seemed to permeate the pressure. Once people with weaker souls were enveloped by the pressure, their souls would be crushed to pieces in a single moment.

A gleam of light flashed through fairy Hao Yue's eyes. Her illusionary body radiated clear moonlight as a blurry, full moon slowly rose behind her, shining bright. Fairy Hao Yue just happened to stand in the center of the moon. Her hair swayed and clothes fluttered despite the still air. She seemed like a goddess under the moonlight, dignified and sacred.

At the same time, the supreme power hidden within the divine hall began to secretly move. It rapidly surged, forming a transparent barrier of moonlight between Jian Chen and fairy Hao Yue. It seemed to cut the hall into two regions.

As soon as the barrier formed, Jian Chen's Martial Soul Force gushed forward. In a single moment, the invisible force viciously smashed against the barrier, but to Jian Chen's surprise, the Martial Soul Force passed through the barrier as soon as it came in contact with it. Like a wild horse, it charged toward fairy Hao Yue,

who sat on the throne. The barrier she had cast failed to stop it. It was like the barrier did not exist at all.

“The rumors are indeed real. Martial Soul Force is extremely difficult to stop and ordinary methods are useless against it,” fairy Hao Yue murmured as she sat still on the throne. She soon opened her arms, and immediately, the full moon behind her grew brighter. It erupted with powerful Moonlight Force, enveloping a region with a radius of twenty meters.

The region had become an independent domain, a world of its own. Separate laws seemed to exist within the region.

Jian Chen’s Martial Soul Force passed through the moonlight barrier and smashed into fairy Hao Yue’s domain. It caused the domain to shake violently as the laws were thrown into chaos. It showed signs of collapsing.

Fairy Hao Yue narrowed her eyes. The next moment, the Moonlight Force from the full moon behind her grew stronger, pouring even more power into the domain and strengthening it just as it was about to collapse. The domain rapidly stabilized and stopped the Martial Soul Force.

Seeing how his Martial Soul Force had been stopped and could not shake the Moonlight Force around fairy Hao Yue, Jian Chen’s eyes immediately narrowed, and at the same time, he lowered his guard. He no longer needed to worry about the Martial Soul Force injuring fairy Hao Yue.

“Since my Martial Soul Force cannot harm fairy Hao Yue, why don’t I stop holding back and use my full power to see what level my Martial Soul Force has reached and whether or not it can be used to deal with Returnance experts. At the same time, I can start to understand this new power,” Jian Chen thought. He immediately stopped holding back and began using the Martial Soul Force with all he had.

Immediately, the pressure in the hall skyrocketed, especially the

region where fairy Hao Yue was. The pressure condensed there was so powerful that even Receiving experts would end up paling. If Saint Emperors entered that region, they would not be able to last more than ten seconds before their souls collapsed. They would end up dead.

This was because this pressure was an attack using Martial Soul Force, one that targeted the soul.

However, fairy Hao Yue sat there steadily, facing an attack that could easily kill a Saint Emperor. The domain around her automatically strengthened and remained steady, withstanding the storm-like barrage. No matter how Jian Chen increased his Martial Soul Force, he was not able to shake her domain at all.

This stalemate lasted for several seconds. Jian Chen ran out of steam first and needed to stop. He recalled his Martial Soul Force. He discovered that using it as an attack took an extremely heavy toll on his soul. For the short moment he had used it against fairy Hao Yue, he had expended over sixty percent of the power in his soul, which Jian Chen found unbelievable.

After all, his soul had now reached the Returnance realm. It was no longer a peak Saint Emperor soul like before.

Jian Chen stopped and the Moonlight Force around fairy Hao Yue disappeared as well. Very soon, the hall fell quiet again. Fairy Hao Yue sat on the throne without any changes appearing on her face. Jian Chen, who sat below, seemed rather exhausted.

“This Martial Soul Force really is wondrous. In the Saints’ World, many people have only heard of this power because almost no one can use it. I never thought that I’d experience this fortuitous encounter by falling to a lower world and witness the legendary Martial Soul Force.” Fairy Hao Yue sighed emotionally. The gaze she used on Jian Chen became rather complicated. She knew that from now on, there would be one more person who could use Martial Soul Force in the Saints’ World.

Jian Chen gently sighed and bitterly smiled. “Is there any need for you to praise Martial Soul Force so much. In my opinion, Martial Soul Force is wondrous, but it’s only so special. Even you can shrug it off so easily.”

“You’re wrong. Jian Chen, there are two reasons why Martial Soul Force is unable to harm me. One reason is that you do not know how to use it properly. There are corresponding methods and techniques for using it, and only with those methods and techniques can you push its power to its limits. Secondly, I used my domain. As long as my domain does not fall, nothing can work against me. Even soul attacks are useless.

“I may just be a soul now and need to use the divine hall’s power to cast my domain, but I can take on Returnance experts within my hall,” fairy Hao Yue nonchalantly explained.

Jian Chen finally understood. He knew that fairy Hao Yue had only been a Saint Emperor when she had had a body and had not broken through to the Origin realm, which was why her body had fallen apart after her lifespan of ten thousand years came to an end. Only her soul remained, but she was still from the Saints’ World after all. Her comprehension of the mysteries of the world were far beyond Saint Emperor and even beyond the Origin realm. Even though she only possessed the cultivation level of a Saint Emperor, her battle prowess was on a whole different scale.

No one visited the extremely distant moon that appeared every night, even during ancient times when Saint Emperors were common. Only fairy Hao Yue had been there before and collected materials from it to construct the Bright Moon Divine Hall. This ability was more than enough to showcase how extraordinary fairy Hao Yue was.

Chapter 1467: Changes to the Tunnel

“Jian Chen, you’ll have to look into Martial Soul Force yourself. You lack a method to use it right now. Normally, if you use it with your soul at Returnance, you can heavily injure Returnance experts and kill Receival expert, yet the Martial Soul Force you used earlier could only threaten Saint Emperors even though it could bypass standard defenses. You won’t even be able to heavily injured Receival experts.” Fairy Hao Yue gave Jian Chen a serious warning.

“I understand. I will definitely investigate Martial Soul Force and hopefully find a way to use it so that I can strengthen its power,” Jian Chen replied in a firm voice. Throughout the current world, even if the four races pooled their strength together, only Tie Ta, the sea goddess, Xiao Jin, and Xiao Ling who possessed a battle prowess on par with the Origin realm besides him. Guihai Yidao, Yang Lie, and Feng Xiaotian used to part of the Origin realm, but they had fallen to Saint Emperors now. Although they could still erupted with the power of Receival experts due to their saint artifacts, the power would only reach the bottom of Receival. That power would be more than enough to deal with Saint Emperors, but it would be extremely tough to fight against Receival experts.

As for the white tiger, it was still accepting its legacy. Whether it could reach the Origin realm through its legacy was still unknown. Even if it managed to break through, only nine of them would possess the prowess to battle people in the Origin realm. It was impossible for them to achieve victory against the several dozen Origin realm experts from the World of Forsaken Saints.

But now, the power of the Martial Soul Force had given Jian Chen a new hope. According to fairy Hao Yue, if he grasped a method and the techniques that went with it, by pushing the might of Martial Soul Force to its limits, he could heavily injured Returnance experts with the current strength of his soul and kill

Receival experts. At that time, the advantage of numbers favoring the foreign world would cease to exist.

“If I can’t push my Martial Soul Force to its limits the next time the foreign world invades, our only chance at victory lays with the Yinyang Saint Rock. I’ve already reached the fifth layer with my Chaotic Body, so I can absorb the power of the Yinyang Saint Rock. It’s just that I need Shanggyang Mu’er to absorb it with me. This... sigh...” Jian Chen gently sighed when he thought about the Yinyang Saint Rock. He needed to persuade the Heavenly Enchantress, which was probably one of the most difficult things anyone could possibly attempt in the world even though he already shared a child with her.

“Martial Soul Force will take priority first. Unless I completely run out of choices, I don’t want to touch the Yinyang Saint Rock,” thought Jian Chen before bidding farewell to fairy Hao Yue and leaving the Bright Moon Divine Hall.

The divine hall was located in the back courtyard of the city lord’s estate in Flame City. It was the only forbidden region and no guards patrolled it. As he stood outside the divine hall, he could not see a single person at all. The surroundings were quite silent.

Jian Chen sucked in a deep breath while he stood at the entrance and slowly calmed himself down. He did not visit You Yue, Bi Lian, nor any of the others. Instead, he went to his secret room.

Jian Chen did not begin to study Martial Soul Force in his secret room. He used his abilities as a Class 9 Radiant Saint Master to revive the Emperor Armaments as quickly as he could. He knew that finding a method to use Martial Soul Force would not be easy, so he planned to use this valuable time to revive the Emperor Armaments.

After becoming a Class 9 Radiant Saint Master and since his soul had reached Returnance, Jian Chen’s speed at reviving the Emperor Armaments had increased by several fold. He would have

required several days to revive a single Emperor Armament when he was a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master and the task would be extremely exhausting, yet now, he could easily revive two Emperor Armaments in a day. At that speed, he would only need a single year to refine the several hundred Emperor Armaments that had been collected from the four races into battle-ready Saint Emperor puppets.

Time quickly passed. Half a year had already passed, and during that year, Jian Chen had remained in the secret room reviving Emperor Armaments. He did not stop at all, and only half of the several hundred Emperor Armaments remained. Over three hundred dazed Saint Emperor puppets had appeared in the artifact space, radiating with powerful presences.

At the same time, Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, and Feng Xiaotian sat on a mountain within a large mountain range near the north sea of the continent. They all coldly gazed down.

Below the mountain where the three of them sat was an extremely flat and open space. It seemed like someone had split the mountains in half since the surface below was completely smooth.

Over a hundred Saint Emperors from across the four races sat in the open area. They all diligently listened to Feng Xiaotian's teachings.

“My Pure Heart Pavilion may be about gaining a pure heart, not pursuing fame or meddling with mortal affairs, but the invasion of the foreign world directly relates to the survival of the Pure Heart Pavilion, our race as humans, and all the races in this world. As a result, we have to participate in the battle against the foreign world no matter what, but our strength differs from the other world just far too much. We do not have the advantage of numbers for any cultivation level, so we can't take them on forcefully like the last invasion,” Feng Xiaotian said with a serious tone. The light in his eyes flickered as he constantly glanced around. He continued, “Here I have a formation. This formation requires

seven people to cast, and once it is formed, your battle prowess will greatly increase. If forty-nine Saint Emperors take part in a single formation, this formation will have the power to trap Receiving experts and have a tiny sliver of a chance of killing them. I will personally teach you this formation. Allow me to demonstrate.”

Feng Xiaotian gently sighed inside as he taught them the formation. A sliver of bitterness and helplessness appeared on his face. The formation belonged to a sect from the higher world. Even though it was only a low level formation, it should not have appeared in this world. However, he had run out of choices. They needed to fend off the invasion of the foreign world and to ensure that his Pure Heart Pavilion survived.

The tunnel hidden deep underground in the ruins of Mercenary City had been exposed long ago when the ground had collapsed. Even from the sky, the tunnel was clearly visible.

The tunnel was very unstable. The entrance would twist and constantly distort. The surrounding space was a mess, and from time to time, violet spatial streams would rush out of the tunnel, shoot through the sky, and disappear into outer space.

The streams could annihilate Saint Kings instantly and even Saint Emperors needed to avoid them.

A few blurry figures gradually appeared in the depths of the tunnel. The figures slowly advanced through the tunnel carefully. They all looked like ghosts in the distorted space, twisting with the unstable space.

Violet streams of energy spurted in all directions within the tunnel. However, as soon as the streams approached the figures, they immediately mellowed out before dispersing as vast swaths of energy.

Chapter 1468: Battle Among the Origin realm (One)

The people moved carefully and extremely slowly through the tunnel. They moved slowly not because they feared the streams of energy within the tunnel but because they feared that the tunnel would collapse.

Although the tunnel had become much more stable, it could only allow Receival experts to pass through. Once people with strength beyond that stage entered, the unstable tunnel would become even more fragile and risk collapsing.

The people moving through the tunnel were all at Receival. Six Receival experts was the limit the tunnel could currently withstand. As a result, the six of them needed to keep their presences carefully concealed and their energy hidden within their bodies.

“We’re getting closer and closer to that beautiful world. I can even vaguely sense its entrance. I hope the journey henceforth will be very smooth and without any obstacles.”

“This world also possesses Origin realm experts. I believe there must be at least one Origin realm expert guarding the entrance of the tunnel right now. Once we approach the entrance, there will definitely be a battle. It’s impossible to pass through smoothly.”

“You’re right. I refuse to believe that the cultivators in this world would be that stupid. There will definitely be an Origin realm expert at the entrance of the tunnel. Once we get discovered, we have to charge out immediately, as quickly as we can. The tunnel may collapse if we travel at our top speed, but it won’t collapse in an instant. We’ll be able to pass through the exit successfully with our speed before it collapses, and then we’ll follow the Spiritking’s plan and use the secret treasure from the Spiritking to trap that Returnance expert. Anna is responsible for

securing the tunnel while the four other Receival experts and three Saint Emperors with saint weapons will be handled by us,” an old man said among the six of them. Their world knew how many peak experts the Tian Yuan Continent possessed. To the six of them, there was no one they feared among the world with the Tian Yuan Continent aside from the Returnance expert.

This was because the six of them were the most powerful Receival experts among the several dozen present in the World of Forsaken Saints.

“We also have to pay particular attention to that person with two swords. The Spiritking has specifically warned us to be careful of him. He’s comprehended the same laws as the Spiritking, so he won’t be any weaker than us,” the only female among the six of them said with a stern voice.

“Hehe, I heard that this beautiful world lacks origin energy. It sure is surprising that a cultivator can comprehend the same laws as the Spiritking in such conditions. I do feel rather eager at the same time. I don’t have the right to witness the Spiritking’s Way of the Sword, so the person in this world will be just enough to satisfy my curiosity.” An old man, who was just skin and bones, strangely laughed as coldness filled his eyes.

“Old Ku Mu, don’t underestimate the person with the two swords. He’s been singled out by the Spiritking after all. He may only be a Receival expert, but he has comprehended the same laws as our great Spiritking. If you underestimate him, be careful of being felled by his swords,” sneered the woman. Her slender stature was distorted by the extremely unstable space, only revealing a blurry figure. The other five people appeared the same as her.

The skinny old man called Ku Mu sniggered. He said in a dismissive voice, “Anna, aren’t you overestimating that person too much? Even if the Spiritking’s has specifically warned us about him, he’s only at Receival. I may not be able to claim that I am

invincible among the Receival experts, but killing me won't be easy. At least, none of you could snatch victory in a one-on-one battle against me."

The six of them communicated using a technique, so they made no sound at all.

There was no sense of time in the spatial tunnel, but the exit to the Tian Yuan Continent finally appeared before their eyes.

Their faces could not help but light up at the sight. They had finally arrived and had not come across any obstacles. The journey was so smooth that it surprised them.

"Even if we're discovered, we can explode with our full strength and charge out of the tunnel from this range," Anna happily thought to herself.

At the same time, in Flame City, which was a million kilometers away, Jian Chen had just completed the revival of an Emperor Armament in the secret room below ground. Just as he planned to continue on another Emperor Armament, his eyes suddenly narrowed. He raised his head and gazed into the distance. His eyes became extremely sharp and grew brighter. They seemed to project two rays of light, which collided with the walls of the secret room, forming two finger-sized holes in the reinforced wall.

"They've come!" Jian Chen's face immediately sank. It then became filled with cold killing intent. In a flash, he vanished from the secret room.

Almost the moment Jian Chen had vanished, the sky above Flame City turned violet. Coupled with the clear resonance of a sword, a streak of dazzling, violet light suddenly appeared. It shot into the distance at an unbelievable speed, disappearing in a single moment. Even Saint Emperors would have struggled to catch its shadow.

As the violet light disappeared, the violet sky rapidly returned to

how its it's normal hue. The violet light had appeared and disappeared in less than a second. In such a short amount of time, many weaker people in the city failed to sense the changes in the sky. All they heard was the echo of a sword's resonance.

However, many people in the streets still managed to catch the flash of violet light. It immediately threw the entire city into chaos.

Bi Hai, You Yue, Bi Lian, Ming Dong, Dugu Feng, Xiu Tianyu, Yun Zheng, and the other powerful experts all exited the city lord's estate. They stared at the sky in surprise as uncertainty appeared on their faces.

"It's brother. Brother's just left Flame City. Seeing how he left so aggressively, h-has the World of Forsaken Saints come?" Bi Lian softly murmured. She gazed in the direction Jian Chen had disappeared in as worry filled her face.

You Yue also gazed in the direction Jian Chen had flown. She clenched her hands and was nervousness. Worry was starting to fill her heart as well.

In the mountains to the north, Feng Xiaotian was currently explaining a formation in detail to over a hundred Saint Emperors of the four races. Soon after Jian Chen had left, his face suddenly changed and he stopped talking. He gazed in the direction of Mercenary City.

Guihai Yidao and Yang Lie sensed something as well. Guihai Yidao immediately stood up and a blade hovered above his head. He radiated with a tremendous presence as his clothes fluttered in the still air. He gruffly said, "They've come."

"There has been a change in the tunnel. Experts of the foreign world have come. Everyone, immediately follow me to fend off the enemies!" Feng Xiaotian cried out. A jade-white duster appeared in his hand. He ripped open Space Gates with Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao and left.

The Saint Emperors below did not hesitate at all. They all radiated with powerful battle intent. They all created Space Gates as well and rushed to Mercenary City.

Xiao Ling had already appeared at the entrance of the tunnel in the ruins of Mercenary City. She blocked the entrance with her body. Her naive face bore some fear and dread, but her eyes were exceptionally determined. She stared deep into the tunnel and gritted her teeth. She nervously said, “I can’t let them come over. I must not let them come over. I have to stop them.”

Chapter 1469: Battle Among the Origin realm (Two)

Xiao Ling quickly flew into the tunnel. She suddenly pressed down with her hands and an extremely terrifying power erupted from them. The power far exceeded Receival, having reached Returnance.

Boom!

The terrifying power viciously struck the spatial tunnel, causing the entire structure to violently shake. The streams of energy in the tunnel became even more dangerous.

Allowing six Receival experts to pass through the tunnel was already the limit of its current stability. If a Returnance expert entered, even if they kept their presences and energies concealed within them, the tunnel would become unstable and collapse.

Not only had Xiao Ling entered the tunnel, but she had also erupted with all her strength at Returnance and attacked the tunnel, immediately causing thick cracks to appear. The entire tunnel shook violently and began to collapse bit by bit. A few places had even fallen apart, almost causing the tunnel to break in half.

“We’ve been discovered. Quick, immediately charge out as quickly as we can. We can’t get sucked into the void outside the tunnel, or even we, Receival experts, will permanently become lost in the infinite cosmos.” The faces of the six experts sank, and without any hesitation, they immediately erupted with all their speed and charged forward. They wanted to reach the Tian Yuan Continent before the tunnel collapsed.

“Oh no. The person guarding the tunnel really is that Returnance expert. Be careful, everyone. Try as hard as you can to dodge her attacks. Duo Fu, prepare the secret treasure from the Spiritking to

trap the Returnance expert. As long as she can't take part in the battle, this beautiful world will belong to us," Ku Mu said with an icy voice. Coldness flickered in his eyes as he stared at the slender figure at the end of the tunnel.

The six of them had been reduced to blurs within the tunnel. They had already begun to charge out as quickly as they could. Since they had been discovered, the six of them didn't need to hide anymore. They all erupted with their full strength. Terrifying energy was wrapped around every single one of them. They smashed through streams of energy, which were wreaking havoc on the tunnel, and aggressively charged forward.

Even though they would speed up the rate the tunnel was collapsing, they no longer cared, because the tunnel was unable to be completely destroyed. Even if it was riddled with cracks, the laws of the world would continue to hold it together. It would recover again.

"I can't let them come over. I can't let them come over. You baddies aren't allowed over here," Xiao Ling stood in the collapsing tunnel as she gritted her teeth. Her gaze became more and more determined. She seemed to have abandoned all the fear within her. The only thought left in her was to prevent the arrival of the people in the tunnel using all she had.

Unknowingly, her originally weak-looking figure appeared extraordinarily large. She was clearly a childish girl around eleven or twelve years old, but she was giving off a heroic feeling. She used herself to stop the advance of the six Receival experts from the World of Forsaken Saints.

The six Receival experts were not the only things contained in the tunnel by Xiao Ling. There were also the violet streams of energy that constantly spewed forth as well.

The streams of energy originally wanted to rush out of the tunnel, onto the Tian Yuan Continent, and then into outer space,

but since Xiao Ling stood there right now, the streams were unable to get closer than thirty meters to Xiao Ling. They were all forced back into the tunnel by her.

The Receival expert with the name of Duo Fu had pulled out a disc. The Yin Yang eight trigrams had been carved onto it, and it shone with faint, azure light as a mysterious and ancient presence circulated within it.

The moment Xiao Ling discovered the disc, she became extremely stern. She could actually feel the sliver of a threat from the disc.

Xiao Ling had no idea what the disc was, but she understood its power. Without any hesitation, she immediately closed her eyes. Her petite figure hovered in the trembling tunnel. She seemed solemn as the Force of Slaughter gradually arose from her body.

“Oh no, she’s casting a secret technique. God dammit, just any single attack from a Returnance expert is not something we can stop. If she uses a secret technique, the six of us are done for for sure. Duo Fu, what’re you doing? Why don’t you hurry up and use the secret treasure? Our only method of stopping her is that treasure,” Anna said urgently.

Duo Fu did not reply. He was extremely stern as he formed a seal with both hands. He chanted as the azure disc above his head lit up. The diagram on it seemed to have been activated, beginning to revolve slowly. The mysterious and ancient presence that flowed within it became heavier and heavier. In the end, Duo Fu bellowed a sound and the disc shot toward Xiao Ling as a streak of light.

“Nine Godly Arts, Slayer!” At the same time, Xiao Ling used her secret technique. Terrifying, surging energy condensed in her hands. Forming claws, she viciously swept them in front of her.

As she clawed out, the surroundings changed. A region of the tunnel was immediately reduced to a void. Xiao Ling had ripped open the space in the tunnel, causing eternal darkness to descend

in front of her.

But soon afterward, a resplendent streak of light tore through the darkness, radiating with a powerful presence that caused the six experts to pale as it charged toward them.

This attack was condensed from the Force of Slaughter and radiated with the presence of slaughter, enough to annihilate the surroundings and harm the souls of people. Before Xiao Ling's attack had even arrived, the six Receiving experts felt a sharp pain in their souls. Their expressions drastically changed.

Boom!

A loud rumble erupted in the tunnel, and Xiao Ling's attack collided with the azure disc in the air. The azure disc immediately conjured a huge Yin Yang eight trigrams diagram, which was surrounded by countless inscriptions. As the diagram slowly revolved, it actually stopped Xiao Ling's attack. The disc did not slow down at all, continuing toward Xiao Ling.

Xiao Ling's expression drastically changed. She shot back, leaving the tunnel. However, the disc, which had already transformed into a thirty-meter-wide diagram, arrived above Xiao Ling's head. It radiated with a mysterious, ancient presence.

Xiao Ling possessed the mind of a child. She did not possess enough battle experience, especially when the diagram loomed over her head. She showed a sliver of fear and became slightly flustered inside. Despite her fear, she did not forget to counterattack. She immediately struck the diagram above her as hard as possible in an attempt to smash through it.

However, the mysterious power of the diagram was far greater than Xiao Ling had imagined. All her attacks were absorbed by the diagram the moment they collided with it. They did not damage the diagram at all. Instead, the diagram fell as countless inscriptions wrapped around her body, immobilizing her. No matter how much she tried to erupt with her Returnance strength,

she was unable to break free from the diagram.

Xiao Ling's confidence shattered when she encountered a situation she had never experienced before. She became extremely flustered. Her heart filled with fear and dread. She burst into tears and sobbed, "Master, master, where are you? Come save me! I'm going to be taken away by the baddies. Master, quick come. Master, if you don't come, I'll never see you again. Sob sob sob sob..."

"Fantastic. We've trapped the Returnance expert. We can't stay much longer in this tunnel so let's quickly charge out." The six foreign experts were all overjoyed. They immediately tried to finish off the last part of their journey.

Suddenly, a bright, violet streak of light appeared and shot into the tunnel with a shocking sword Qi just when they were about to exit the tunnel.

Chapter 1470: Battle in the Tunnel

The violet light was dazzling and resplendent. It outshone the sun, illuminating the collapsing tunnel. The terrifying sword Qi was filled with destruction. As it pressed against the space in the tunnel, the tunnel almost fell apart. Three meters of space, near the exit to the Tian Yuan Continent, fell apart. The space there had completely collapsed. All that was visible was a pitch-black void. Strands of invisible laws clung to the ends of the uncollapsed space, connecting the two portions together.

The moment the violet light appeared, the six experts, who were hurrying toward the exit, all revealed different expressions. Even though the space around them had severely collapsed, they could not help but stop and sternly stare at the shocking violet light obstructing them.

“I sense it. It’s the Spiritking’s laws. The person that the Spiritking has warned us about has come,” a Receival expert said with a heavy voice. Before now, they had not really attached much importance to the person that the Spiritking had mentioned, because they were the strongest among the experts of the Receival realm, having all reached late Receival. Even if the Spiritking had described the person as powerful, he was still in the Receival realm, the same level of cultivation as them. Even if he was powerful, it was impossible for him to be too powerful. They may not be able to defeat him, but they were confident they could protect themselves.

However, they truly understood just how powerful the person mentioned by the Spiritking was when they sensed the terrifying sword Qi within the violet light.

The sword Qi had surprised the six of them very much.

As soon as the resplendent violet light appeared in the tunnel, it immediately shot toward the six of them with lightning-like speed.

Just the sword Qi was enough to crush the streams of energy.

The streams of energy that even Saint Emperors needed to avoid in the tunnel vanished wherever the violet light passed. It was a strange scene. At the same time, wherever the violet sword light went, a thin layer of cracks would appear in the surrounding tunnel, increasing the rate at which the tunnel was collapsing.

The six Receival experts all narrowed their eyes. They stared at the violet light as it rapidly approached them. They could clearly see a sword encased in the violet glow. Both the dazzling light and shocking sword Qi originated from the sword.

“Let me handle it. Let me witness this person’s Way of the Sword and see just how powerful it is,” sneered Ku Mu. He took a step forward and a terrifying, tremendous presence radiated from him. It pushed the violet streams of energy far away. They were unable to get any closer than three hundred meters from him.

Ku Mu’s skinny figure seemed to become extremely large. His presence was as heavy as a mountain, vaguely dominating. A crescent blade had appeared in his hand. It flickered with a pressing cold light. Mysterious inscriptions carved had been into it.

Suddenly, Ku Mu seemed to have fused with the crescent blade, causing it to shine brighter. It began to radiate with an extremely brutal blade Qi. Afterward, he fused with the sword and sent a terrifying blow toward the violet light.

The strike contained all his power at late Receival. He did not hold back at all.

Ding!

The crescent blade entered the area illuminated by the violet light and collided with the Zi Ying Sword. The clear ringing sound of a collision rang out, immediately causing the tunnel to tremble even more violently. Terrifying cracks filled the entire tunnel.

Many spots were so damaged that the vast, endless darkness outside the tunnel was visible.

The Zi Ying Sword's advance was stopped by that attack. Its dazzling violet light dispersed and the Zi Ying Sword was revealed. It drifted back like a fallen leaf.

Ku Mu was blown back. His silver hair was ruffled and a few slashes even appeared on the clothes near his chest. Some traces of blood could vaguely be seen near the cuts.

"No wonder the Spiritking warned us about him. He really is powerful. The Way of the Sword really is powerful," Ku Mu said in a cold voice. He grew sterner and stared ahead.

A figure had silently appeared at the entrance of the tunnel. The sword that let out a violet light hovered above his head with another sword, which glowed with an azure light. They loudly thrummed together.

Three figures could vaguely be seen standing behind that first figure. It was not difficult to tell from their statures that one was a female, one was a burly man, and one was a young child.

The four of them were Jian Chen, the sea goddess, Tie Ta, and Xiao Jin.

The four of them had all entered the collapsing tunnel. With their strength in the Origin realm, as long as the space in the tunnel had not collapsed completely, they would not face danger as long as they did not end up in a void. The streams of energy in the tunnel were unable to approach them.

Jian Chen stood at the very front of the four of them. The Azulet swords hovered above his head, radiating with a shocking sword Qi. Jian Chen's presence had undergone an overwhelming change. The current him seemed like a divine sword while the space around him seemed to have become his domain. Under his influence, whether it was the air or the rapidly moving streams of

energy, all of it seemed to have become sharp swords.

The five Receival experts behind Ku Mu all stared sternly at Jian Chen. Jian Chen made them feel like they were facing the Spiritking, because the two of them both comprehended the Way of the Sword. The aura of the Way of the Sword that they both radiated was very similar.

At this moment, Jian Chen grabbed the Zi Ying Sword. A bright, white light immediately appeared on the sword, which was surrounded by a violet light, causing the sword Qi from the sword to become even more powerful. He stabbed it toward Ku Mu, who stood at the very front.

The attack seemed simple, but it contained the ways of the world. An energy that belonged to the ways had been fused into the strike, causing it to become extremely powerful, even greater than when a Receival expert used a secret technique.

The Way of the Sword was one of the three thousand ways, which were also known as laws. Jian Chen had used his comprehension of the Way of the Sword in the strike. His attack contained the power of ways, or in other words, the power of laws.

Even though his comprehension of the Way of the Sword was not particularly deep, having just reached an initial understanding, it still contained the power of laws. Its power could not be compared to Receival experts who had not comprehended any ways.

Terrifying sword Qi spread out with the strike, as if the tunnel had become filled by supreme sword Qi. Densely-packed slashes had even appeared around the tunnel.

Ku Mu narrowed his eyes. He had already been locked onto by the sword Qi. Faced with such an attack, he actually felt like he was unable to dodge it. Taking it on forcefully was the only way to go.

“First Transformation of the Blood Sun and Crescent Moon,

Force of Sunfall!”

“Second Transformation, Force of Moonrise!”

“Third Transformation, Force of Fullmoon!”

Ku Mu suddenly bellowed out and used his strongest secret technique. He slashed out three times with the crescent blade in his hand.

As soon as he used the secret technique, a world suddenly appeared behind him. In the blood-red sky, there was a blood-red sun and a blood-red, crescent moon. It was the sky of the World of Forsaken Saints.

With his first slash, the blood-red sun appeared behind him. He fused with the blood sun’s power and used it in the first attack.

With his second slash, the blood-red moon rose slightly and fused its power into his second slash.

With the third slash, the crescent moon became a full moon. It radiated with a demonic red light, as if it had been dyed by blood. His crescent blade fused with the full red radiance of the moon, causing it to become a bright blood-red.

Chapter 1471: Slaying a Receival Expert (One)

Ku Mu delivered the three slashes consecutively. Each attack contained a different level of power, but the might they contained was just shocking. Each slash outshadowed the previous one.

Ku Mu's third slash had fused with the blood-red light of the full moon. It was so powerful that even peak Receival experts would reveal a different expression when receiving it.

Just the power of the third slash surpassed the previous two slashes.

The third slash from Ku Mu even made the five other Returnance experts from the World of Forsaken Saints gasp. The gazes they sent toward him were filled with surprise.

"I never thought that Ku Mu had comprehended the Third Transformation of the Blood Sun and Crescent Moon. Only a few Returnance elders have comprehended it in our world."

"Ku Mu's sure hidden it well. We've all stopped at the Second Transformation. He's actually left us in the dust and comprehended the Third Transformation."

"In our world, Ku Mu's already become the greatest Receival expert. Aside from him, I've never heard of someone else who's managed to comprehend the Third Transformation at Receival."

"The power of the Third Transformation really is shocking. If a Receival expert received that strike, they'd be heavily injured or end up dead. Even Returnance experts would have to face it seriously."

The five Receival experts all sighed emotionally. Ku Mu's status skyrocketed. There were even two of them who looked at Ku Mu with some fear.

Boom!

With a violent rumble, Ku Mu's technique violently collided with the Zi Ying Sword. The two immediately erupted with a terrifying pulse of energy. The energy transformed into a terrifying storm that wreaked havoc on the tunnel, causing it to tremble violently. The tunnel became even more damaged. A three-hundred-meter chasm appeared between Jian Chen and Ku Mu, forcefully severing the tunnel.

Even though the tunnel appeared severed, slivers of invisible laws still remained, holding the entire tunnel together like fibers.

The violently tunnel shook while space was forcefully distorted. Jian Chen and Ku Mu could not see each other. Powerful pulses of energy wreaked havoc in the huge chasm between them, blocking their vision.

The violet glow of the sword had vanished. Ku Mu revealed a sliver of joy when he saw that the light was gone. Although his vision was obstructed and the senses of his soul could not be used in the tunnel, preventing him from understanding Jian Chen's situation, he believed that the Third Transformation could fell any and all Receival experts. Even if he was unable to kill them, it would be enough to deal a fatal blow and incapacitate them.

"The person who's comprehended the Way of the Sword has already been heavily injured by me. Let's charge over immediately," Ku Mu said to the five people behind him through a communication technique. A sliver of joy flickered through his eyes as he charged forward. He planned on crossing the huge chasm and reaching the other side.

"The person singled out by the Spiritking is only so-so. Even if you've comprehended the same Way of the Sword as the Spiritking, you're still a Receival expert in the end. No one in the realm of Receival is my opponent," Ku Mu was proud of himself. Having defeated Jian Chen, he felt extremely glorious.

After all, he had just defeated a Receival expert who practiced the same Way of the Sword as the Spiritking.

Ku Mu immediately charged forward with the five Receival experts behind him. Before him was a chasm, which had been formed by him and Jian Chen. Violet pulses of energy wreaked havoc as storms in the chasm. The energy storms had been caused when his secret technique clashed with Jian Chen's Zi Ying Sword.

However, when Ku Mu was about to step into the huge chasm, which was filled with storms of energy, with the five Receival experts behind him, a powerful streak of violet light suddenly cleaved through the energy and shot toward Ku Mu with lightning-like speed. The surging sword Qi had caused Ku Mu and the five Receival experts behind him to narrow their eyes.

Through the violet light, they could see the white-robed Jian Chen within the storms of energy. He was surrounded by the bright light, having crossed the chasm before them. He was protected by the light. He had arrived before the six of them aggressively and all by himself.

"T-this is impossible." Ku Mu was greatly taken aback. Jian Chen was unscathed, not in a heavily-injured and incapacitated state or dead like he had imagined. Ku Mu found this difficult to accept.

He refused to believe that there was someone at Receival who could receive his Third Transformation and emerge unscathed.

In just a single moment, faster than a flash, the Zi Ying Sword arrived before Ku Mu, radiating with surging sword Qi.

Even though Ku Mu was shocked, he was still a late Receival expert who had experienced countless battles. He reacted instantly. Against the sword that approached him, he had no time to use a secret technique. All he could do was parry with his crescent blade.

Ding!

The sharp sword tip of the Zi Ying Sword came in contact with the crescent blade. The sword flickered with a cold light and produced a clear sound. The strike contained Jian Chen's Way of the Sword. It contained a sliver of the power of laws. Even though the crescent blade in Ku Mu's hands was extraordinary, a deep slash still appeared on it after taking a strike from the Zi Ying Sword, even though it was the same quality as a saint artifact. The hand Ku Mu wielded the blade with shot back as blood began to flow. The sound of bones breaking was barely audible, and the blade soon broke free from Ku Mu's grasp. It had been knocked away by Jian Chen's attack, sent out of the tunnel and into the vast, empty void outside.

Ku Mu's face changed drastically. He was flustered, something that had rarely ever happened in his life. He immediately shot away as quickly as he could, approaching the five people behind him.

Cold killing intent flickered through Jian Chen's eyes. This was the perfect opportunity to kill Ku Mu. If he could end the life of a Reival expert from the World of Forsaken Saints, the pressure his world would face would slightly decrease.

Jian Chen chased after him. The Zi Ying Sword erupted with surging sword Qi as it slashed toward Ku Mu's head with the power of the laws of the world.

The five Reival experts behind saw this attack and all revealed different expressions. They could obviously tell that Ku Mu could no longer face Jian Chen now that he had lost his weapon. They all struck out as hard as they could in an attempt to save him.

Jian Chen's eyes exploded with light. He let his Martial Soul Force radiate out without any restraint. A tremendous pressure that targeted the soul enveloped the six Reival experts from the foreign world.

Chapter 1472: Slaying a Receival Expert (Two)

The moment Jian Chen's Martial Soul Force had appeared, the collapse of the heavily damaged space slowed. Even the streams of energy that wreaked havoc calmed down, becoming much less brutal.

The six Receival experts from the foreign world all jerked violently when they were struck by the Martial Soul Force. Their faces changed abruptly, and soon, the games they sent toward Jian Chen were filled with shock and disbelief.

"A soul attack! He can actually use a soul attack!" Anna cried out. Even the master of their world, the Spiritking did not possess a soul attack. Even with the entire World of Forsaken Saints in perspective, there was barely anyone who could use a soul attacks. However, without any exceptions, the soul attacks of the people from the World of Forsaken Saints were nowhere near as powerful as Jian Chen's soul attack, which could affect Origin realm experts.

Although Jian Chen currently possessed a soul that was equivalent to Returnance, he had only recently gained the power of Martial Soul Force and had not found a corresponding technique to use it, so its force was reduced. It was nowhere as powerful as it was rumored. It could only be used to deal with Saint Emperors. It was unable to harm experts of the Origin realm. As a result, the six of them were left unscathed even after suffering Jian Chen's Martial Soul Force attack.

Even though that was the case, it was still enough to make them pause, losing their best chance to save Ku Mu's life.

Spurt!

The Zi Ying Sword stabbed into Ku Mu's forehead with lightning-like speed, piercing through his head. However, Ku Mu was an

experienced fighter. He had lived through countless life-or-death battles, so his experience was rich. He had already abandoned his body and fled as just a soul when the Zi Ying Sword came into contact with his skin. He flew toward Anna and the others as quickly as he could.

Jian Chen sneered. Killing intent swelled in his sharp eyes. He stabbed out one more time, pursuing Ku Mu's soul.

At this moment, the five other Receival experts returned to their senses as well. Four of them immediately radiated with surging presences to receive Jian Chen, stopping his attack from reaching Ku Mu's soul, while Anna quickly flew toward Ku Mu's soul in an attempt to protect it.

Wild streams of energy were present everywhere in the tunnel. Having lost his body, Ku Mu was extremely weak. Even if he was a Receival expert, he was unable to survive in the tunnel as a soul.

"None of you can save him!" Jian Chen coldly informed them. The Zi Ying Sword immediately grew brighter and transformed into five illusionary swords that would take on the five people. He began an intense battle against the five of them in the tunnel.

Jian Chen was alone, but he had comprehended the Way of the Sword. His battle prowess was so extraordinary that he did not fall into a disadvantageous position while taking on five Receival experts all by himself. Anna felt helpless due to Jian Chen's attacks and could no longer bother protecting Ku Mu's soul.

"Ku Mu, hurry up and return," Anna called out to Ku Mu. They all understood that attacking the Tian Yuan Continent was no longer possible now that everything had gone south. They had underestimated Jian Chen's strength. Even though the Spiritking had given them a secret treasure to trap the Returnance expert, just Jian Chen himself was enough to stop the five of them.

Not to mention, the other three Origin realm experts outside the tunnel who had not taken part in the battle yet.

Ku Mu said nothing. He carefully avoided the streams of energy in the tunnel as he flew in the direction he had come in. He knew that he could die at any moment and would only be safe if he returned to the World of Forsaken Saints.

But an azure light appeared with a flash and crossed the chasm in the tunnel. It shot over with lightning-like speed, toward Ku Mu's soul.

The five Receival experts who were fighting against Jian Chen revealed drastically different expressions. One of them immediately cried out, "It's his other sword. God dammit, we forgot about his azure sword. Go save Ku Mu!"

However, it was already too late. The Qing Suo Sword moved far too quickly, arriving before Ku Mu's soul in a single moment. Ku Mu was helpless against the Qing Suo Sword without his body. The Qing Suo Sword passed through his soul with surging sword Qi under his terrified gaze.

"Argh!"

Ku Mu produced a chilling cry. At the end of it, his soul vanished from the tunnel, having been wiped out.

The other five Receival experts' expression all became extremely ugly after Ku Mu's death. They all felt heavy-hearted. Ku Mu was the strongest among the six of them, and even with the entire World of Forsaken Saints in perspective, there was probably no other Receival expert who could beat him. Yet today, he had been slain so easily, which caused the five of them to jump in fright.

The amount of time from the first clash against Jian Chen to his death was way too short.

"Retreat!" One of the experts said with a heavy voice. He used his full strength to deliver a final attack on Jian Chen before immediately shooting back.

The four other people did not hesitate either. They all lost

interest in the battle and retreated with the Receival expert. The five of them maintained a formation that could be used both defensively and offensively. They were careful about defending themselves against Jian Chen's pursuit as they fled in the direction they had come in as quickly as possible.

Jian Chen hovered where he was as he silently watched the five of them travel away. He did not chase them because the tunnel had already become extremely damaged. Even Origin realm experts would not be able to stay in it for too long, or they would be sucked out of the tunnel after the slightest carelessness and become lost in the endless void.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

At this moment, a few deep sounds rang out. Near Jian Chen, a chasm several dozen meters long formed in the tunnel as the space there collapsed. The violet streams of energy became even more brutal.

Without any hesitation, Jian Chen immediately turned around and flew back toward the Tian Yuan Continent on his Zi Ying Sword. On his way back, the tunnel shook more and more violently. The three-hundred-meter-wide chasm had already expanded to nine hundred meters. Even with Jian Chen's strength, he needed to be very careful while crossing the region to avoid falling into the void.

Jian Chen returned to the Tian Yuan Continent safely. As soon as he emerged from the tunnel, the sea goddess, Tie Ta, Yang Lie, Feng Xiaotian, and Guihai Yidao immediately hurried over to him.

"There were a total of six Receival experts this time. I killed one of them and the five other retreated," Jian Chen said nonchalantly.

However, the shock his nonchalant message brought to the five of them was extreme.

He had faced off against six Receival experts all by himself in the tunnel and not only emerged victorious but had managed to kill one of them as well. They all felt astounded by his battle prowess.

Chapter 1473: Saving Xiao Ling

Yang Lie, Feng Xiaotian, Guihai Yidao, and the sea goddess all sighed in surprise. From today on, they needed to reevaluate Jian Chen's strength.

"Sigh. When I first saw my great-grandson on Three Saint Island, he was only a Saint Ruler." Yang Lie sighed emotionally inside. Not very much time had passed, yet Jian Chen had already gone from a Saint Ruler to someone who could easily kill Receival experts. He was so strong that he could rival Yang Lie's peak strength.

"The tunnel has collapsed completely. It should be quite a long journey from here to the World of Forsaken Saints, so the five Receival experts who fled won't be able to make it back safely easily." The sea goddess stared deep into the chaotic tunnel ahead.

"Let's hope it's like that. The World of Forsaken Saints may have many Origin realm experts, but losing six of them all of a sudden is still an extremely heavy loss. When they attack the Tian Yuan Continent next time, their power will be slightly less than it would have been," Guihai Yidao said with a deep voice.

Jian Chen did not linger. Instead, he arrived before Xiao Ling. The giant eight trigrams diagram from the azure disc glowed with a bright azure light, trapping Xiao Ling. Countless inscriptions would dance through the light, radiating with an ancient and mysterious presence.

Xiao Ling had been immobilized within the eight trigrams diagram. She was unable to do anything even with her strength as a Returnance expert, unable to break free from the restraints of the disc. Her childish face was filled with terror. Tears rolled down her cheeks from her bright eyes.

"Brother, save me, please save me. I'm so scared." Xiao Ling turned to Jian Chen with some difficulty. Tears were pouring from her eyes as she sobbed. She was helpless.

Jian Chen felt oddly pained due to how pitiful Xiao Ling seemed. He comforted her. “Xiao Ling, don’t be scared. I’ll save you very soon.”

“Big brother, I can’t move. Will I be taken away by those baddies? I’m so scared. I’m so scared,” sobbed Xiao Ling in fear. She was panicking.

“Don’t be scared. With me here, no one can take you away. I’ve already chased away those baddies. They won’t come again.” Jian Chen informed her, using a soothing voice. He could not help but think back to the times when Xiao Ling had protected him.

“Xiao Ling, back when I was very weak, it was you who protected me. From today on, let me protect you. Once I possess strength that exceeds Returnance, no one will be able to harm or hurt you at all,” Jian Chen swore inside. He was not even a fraction of Xiao Ling’s age, but he had started to treat Xiao Ling as his own younger sister long ago.

“Do any of you have any methods to save Xiao Ling?” Jian Chen turned to the five people behind him.

The sea goddess and Tie Ta said nothing. This was the first time they had seen such a strange disc.

Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, and Feng Xiaotian gathered around the disc and examined it for a while. Feng Xiaotian said, “If you want to undo the disc, you need the secret technique to control it, but we don’t possess that either. As a result, it’s impossible to save Xiao Ling immediately. However, all formations or treasures require a source of energy to remain operational. Without it, they cease to function. As a result, the only method we can use is to constantly attack the disc and exhaust all its energy.”

Jian Chen’s eyes immediately lit up. He said, “If that’s the case, let’s act immediately and save Xiao Ling as soon as possible, just in case something happens if we tarry.”

Jian Chen, Xiao Jin, Tie Ta, the sea goddess, Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, and Feng Xiaotian all stayed behind. They first moved Xiao Ling into outer space before attacking the azure disc with all they had.

The Saint Emperors that had come with Feng Xiaotian, Yang Lie, and Guihai Yidao were tasked with the heavy responsibility of guarding the tunnel, just in case some other changes occurred.

In the World of Forsaken Saints, the blood-red sun hung in the sky. It radiated with a demonic, red light, dying the entire world a blood-red. The world seemed ghastly.

At very top of the World Mountains in the center of the foreign world, the Spiritking stood with a dark sword on his back. His great figure seemed as steady as a mountain. As he stood there, he seemed like a pillar that was holding up the sky, acting like a spine that held up the world. He gave people a feeling that he was indomitable and immovable.

Eight Returnance experts formed a line behind him. They stood there silently, and behind them were thirty Receiving experts.

Including the eight Returnance experts and the Spiritking, there are over forty Origin realm experts in the World of Forsaken Saints. Six of them had gone to the Tian Yuan Continent, which was why only thirty-nine Origin realm experts were present.

At this moment, all of them stared at the region before the Spiritking. The constantly-distorting tunnel received the eager gazes of quite a few people.

Suddenly, the tunnel violently pulsed and streams of wild energy surged into the blood-red world. At that moment, all the Origin realm experts gathered there could see the tunnel rapidly collapse.

“The tunnel has collapsed. An extremely intense battle must have occurred up ahead. I wonder if Ku Mu and the others have successfully claimed the entrance and made preparations for the

next wave,” a Returnance expert said from behind the Spiritking.

“Ku Mu and the others are the strongest group of Receival experts our world possesses. They’ve even taken a secret treasure passed down through the ages with them, which is strong enough to trap a Returnance expert. Without the threat of the Returnance expert, it would be too easy for the six of them to take the entrance on the other side with their strength,” said another Returnance expert. He did not attach any importance to the strength of the Tian Yuan Continent.

The Spiritking stood with his back to everyone. He stared fixedly at the tunnel before him and said nothing, but a gleam of light suddenly flashed through his eyes. He cried out, “Oh no!” The Spiritking charged into the tunnel with lightning-like speed, vanishing before everyone.

The Origin realm experts behind him all became stunned. Soon after, they seemed to notice something and their faces immediately became extremely ugly.

The Spiritking had left quickly and returned quickly. In just a few seconds, he emerged from the tunnel with two people.

“It’s Anna and Swor!”

They immediately recognized the two people in the Spiritking’s hands and were immediately taken by surprise.

At this moment, the two of them were a mess. They were disheveled and no longer appeared as glorious as before. However, there was joy from surviving in their eyes.

“Thank you for saving us, Spiritking.” Anna and Swor dropped to one knee. They spoke with gratitude evident in their voices.

The Spiritking turned around and revealed his ordinary appearance. He stared at the two of them in interest and asked in a plain voice, “What’s happened? Why have only the two of you returned? Where are the others?”

Chapter 1474: Medium Quality Immortal Artifact

Sorrow filled Anna and Swor's faces. Anna said with a heavy heart, "Spiritking, the six of us were stopped in the tunnel and have failed you. Not only did we fail to enter the other world, but we even failed to bring back the secret treasure that you bestowed on us. Ku Mu's was killed. His soul was wiped out while the three others were swept into the cosmos. If it weren't for the Spiritking's assistance, the two of us would probably not have lived to see this world again."

"How did this happen? We understand the strength of the other world through and through. Other than the Returnance expert, no one is a threat to the six of you. With the Returnance expert trapped by the secret treasure bestowed upon you by the Spiritking, it should have been a piece of cake for the six of you to take over that world. How did such a drastic change happen?"

"Do we still not fully understand that world's strength? Are there other experts hiding about?"

...

A few people among the eight Returnance experts immediately expressed their doubt. Their voices were filled with surprise. This major defeat had clearly taken all of them by surprise, completely exceeding anything they had imagined.

The Spiritking also frowned slightly. He said, "Tell me what happened in detail."

The two Receival experts immediately narrated everything that they had experienced in the tunnel. The other Origin realm experts were not surprised at all when they heard that Duo Fu had trapped the Returnance expert with the secret treasure. However, when they learned that the six of them were all obstructed by Jian Chen

alone, all the Receival and Returnance experts struggled to maintain their composure.

“I never thought his strength would increase again in such a short amount of time. I miscalculated.” The Spiritking gently sighed. He could not help but think about Jian Chen, who he had once fought in the outer space above the Tian Yuan Continent. His deep eyes immediately brightened.

“I never thought that this person would possess the battle prowess to take the six of you on all by himself without falling into a disadvantage. All this while managing to kill Ku Mu. He sure is worthy of being a person who the Spiritking pays attention to. He truly is rather capable,” said a Returnance old man. Battle intent burned vigorously in his eyes, along with killing intent that he did not even try to contain.

This time, Jian Chen had caused the World of Forsaken Saints to lose four Receival experts. Even though they had over forty Origin realm experts, four was still a large loss to them.

The Spiritking stared at the tunnel for a while before saying, “The tunnel has completely collapsed now. It’ll take several years before it fully recovers, but once it does recover, that will be the day when the eight of you enter. Let’s go.”

“The next time will be the time our world completely conquers the other world.”

The other Receival and Returning experts all rejoiced inside. They were filled with great eagerness, tempted to enter the other world right now. Their race had waited just far too long for this day to arrive.

Jian Chen and the others spent several days in outer space before wasting all the energy of the disc, disabling its powers and saving Xiao Ling.

As soon as Xiao Ling broke free, she threw herself at Jian Chen

and broke into tears. She was pitiful. Xiao Ling had never experienced what she had gone through over the past few days, so she had been terrified the entire time since she was still childish.

The sea goddess, Tie Ta, Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, and Feng Xiaotian all silently watched Jian Chen as he carried the sobbing Returnance expert. Mixed feelings filled their eyes as they all sighed inside.

Jian Chen comforted Xiao Ling while examining the azure disc in his hand. The disc was only the size of a hand and made from unknown materials. A miniature diagram of eight trigrams was carved onto it, and a mysterious and ancient presence flowed through it as an extremely weak azure glow gave off light.

“This disc sure is quite the treasure to be able to trap Returnance experts and be able to resist several days’ worth of attack from us before running out of energy. At the very least, I’ve never heard of such a powerful treasure on the Tian Yuan Continent after all these years,” Jian Chen mumbled. Suddenly, he seemed to discover something. His eyes suddenly narrowed before he sighed in surprise. “This disc can actually automatically absorb the energy of the world to replenish its supply after it’s been completely used up. This is...”

Jian Chen’s eyes lit up. He stared at the disc as an odd light filled his eyes.

“If only we could use this disc, then the next time the foreign world attacks, we would be able to return the favor to one of their Returnance experts. It would weaken their strength,” Yang Lie shook his head and sighed. Pity filled his face. He understood this but did not know of a method to use the disc, which he found to be a great pity.

Jian Chen’s eyes rapidly darkened as a result. He also understood that the disc was no different than scrap metal in his hands if he did not know of a method to use it.

At this moment, Jian Chen's Azulet swords trembled. At the same time, the sword spirit's voices rang out in his head, "This is a medium grade immortal artifact and is separated with Yin and Yang. Master, if you give us some time, we might be able to find a method to use it."

Jian Chen was very interested. His eyes lit up once more. He then said to the people around him, "I'll keep this disc to study for a few days to see if I can find a method to use it so that we can use it as a weapon of our own."

Jian Chen's suggestion did not raise any objections, so he held onto the disc.

Afterward, Tie Ta, the sea goddess, Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, and Feng Xiaotian all returned to where they had come from. Jian Chen arrived above the ruins of Mercenary City with Xiao Ling, calming her down after a great deal of effort. He could not return to Flame City since he needed to guard the tunnel, so he carved a cave in a mountain nearby and continued to revive Emperor Armaments.

Jian Chen had already left the azure disc to the sword spirits to study, hoping they could obtain a method to use it.

In the blink of an eye, one and a half years had passed since the six Receival experts had attempted to invade the world. The Tian Yuan Continent had been relatively peaceful. Jian Chen revived all of the Emperor Armaments and King Armaments, so there were over six hundred Saint Emperor puppets and over eight thousand Saint Kings puppets in the artifact space. If he included the number revived by the president and grand elder, then the total amount of Saint King puppets would be approaching ten thousand.

"These puppets will serve as the core force when stopping the World of Forsaken Saints from invading." Jian Chen sighed emotionally as he gazed at the large swathe of Saint King and Saint Emperor puppets. There was hope in his voice.

He was finally somewhat confident that they could stop the foreign world's armies now that he had so many puppets.

“There are still quite a few Origin realm experts in the foreign world. I can only use my own strength to stop them. If I can find a method to use Martial Soul Force and truly demonstrate its might, I'll be able to handle all the Receival and Returnance experts from the world of Forsaken Saints by myself,” Jian Chen thought. Without any hesitation, he entered seclusion once more and began to study Martial Soul Force.

Chapter 1475: Returning to the Sea Realm

Jian Chen devoted himself to the study of Martial Soul Force. He hoped to find a method to use in the shortest amount of time possible so that he could push its power to the limits.

To Jian Chen, Martial Soul Force was a huge treasure box. He possessed the treasure box, but he lacked the key to open it.

If he could find the key and open the treasure box, he would be able to kill Receiving experts easily. Even if he was facing a Returnance expert or several of them, he could heavily injure all of them in a single moment.

This was because his soul had already reached the Returnance realm. According to fairy Hao Yue's description, it was possible for him to demonstrate a similar prowess. At that time, the only person who would be able to threaten him from the foreign world would be the Spiritking.

Martial Soul Force was the most direct way to power up Jian Chen right now. It was easier than strengthening the Way of the Sword or his Chaotic Body. Although he already possessed the Azure swords, every step on the path of the Way of the Sword was extremely difficult to take. Even with the Comprehension Tea, it would be very difficult for him to reach a similar level of comprehension as the Spiritking, even if he made all of the tea.

If he could reach the same level of comprehension as the Spiritking, just the Way of the Sword would not be enough for him to face the Spiritking. Martial Soul Force, which specifically attacked the soul, was his greatest weapon.

With his soul at Returnance, his Martial Soul Force might not have been enough to injure the Spiritking, who was one cultivation level higher, but it could still cause a certain effect. In an intense battle, it was often a slight careless mistake that would turn the situation around.

As Jian Chen busied himself with Martial Soul Force, Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, and Feng Xiaotian did not sit around either. With the three of them in charge, they gathered all the Saint Emperors in the world in waves and taught them formations from the Saints' World, guiding and demonstrating them.

These formations were only part of the lowest level in the Saints' World, but they easily surpassed Saint Tier on the Tian Yuan Continent. When several Saint Emperors created a formation, they were unable to harm Receival experts but could keep them trapped for a few days without a problem at all. The power of the formation would increase when more people took part as well.

As Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, and Feng Xiaotian appeared before the Saint Emperors more often, their true identities were gradually revealed to the experts of the four races. The status of the protector clans immediately increased as a result, becoming peak organizations only second to the Flame Mercenaries, which were personally lead by Jian Chen.

On the Beast God Continent, the white tiger remained on the ninety-ninth floor of the Beast God Hall accepted its legacy. The white tiger had no idea what was happening outside. The current Beast God Continent remained under Cangqiong's control. Even with the appearance of many new Saint Emperors, they were still unable to shake his position.

Tie Ta boldly sat on the throne within the War God Hall on the Wasteland Continent. He shone brightly with light, mixing with the light of the divine hall. He seemed to be undergoing some type of fusion.

The presence from Tie Ta was clearly much more powerful than a few years ago. His strength had rapidly increased over the years.

Even though his strength still remained at Receival, if it was measured using the standard of the Tian Yuan Continent, he had already reached late Receival. His battle prowess was even greater.

He was now able to take on Returnance experts.

“If only I could fully control this War God Hall... The toughness of this divine hall just shocks me. All I need to do is place this divine hall in front of the tunnel and block then entrance. Then the people from the foreign world wouldn’t be able to come over. It’s just a pity that I can only use the power of the divine hall to assist my cultivation due to my current strength.

“Even uncle Aergyns could have avoided death with this divine hall. All he needed to do was hide in here. Even if the Winged Tiger God from ancient times had surpassed the limitations of a lifespan and could live as long as the world remained, he would still not be able to smash through this divine hall in a short period of time. It’s just that pride of the warring gods stopped uncle Aergyns from hiding in here, making him more willing to die in battle instead.”

Tie Ta sat on the throne as he murmured to himself. After becoming the war god of the Hundred Races, Tie Ta seemed to have undergone a baptism, making him even more mature.

Even though he was still the same, his mind had morphed. He was no longer naive and sometimes stupid like before.

The great elder of Mercenary City, Tian Jian, had still not appeared. He continued to refine the supreme divine hall that Mo Tianyun had left behind. The divine hall was extremely special since Tian Jian needed this much time to refine it even with his strength as a Saint Emperor.

The president and the grand elder of the Radiant Saint Master Union remained in seclusion as well. They used their powers as Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters to revive the Ruler and King Armaments Jian Chen had left with them, helping the Tian Yuan Continent become a little more powerful in preparation for when the World of Forsaken Saints attacked.

Regardless of whether an expert was from the Tian Yuan Continent, the Beast God Continent, the Wasteland Continent, or

the sea realm, they were all making preparations for the upcoming battle. Only weaker fighters, who would not be of any use in the battle, continued their easy-going lives.

Very few of these fighters understood the strength of the foreign world. They only knew that their world had managed to stop an invasion from the World of Forsaken Saints and had killed several hundred of their Saint Emperors, attaining a glorious battle record. As a result, they believed that the threat of the foreign world no longer existed. As time went on, their impression of the foreign world gradually faded from the shock, horror, and so on to just a memory. In the end, the foreign world became a simple topic of conversation they would have over a meal.

In the blink of an eye, another five years passed. It had been six and a half years since Jian Chen had fended off the foreign Reival experts. During that period of time, Jian Chen had completely vanished. He had remained in seclusion within the cave near Mercenary City.

Other than spending the first one and a half years reviving Saint Weapons, Jian Chen spent this entire time studying Martial Soul Force.

Unfortunately, he might have overestimated his comprehension abilities or underestimated the wonders of Martial Soul Force. Not only had he failed to find a true method to use Martial Soul Force within those five years, but he had even wasted quite a few fifth grade Comprehension Tea Leaves.

“Martial Soul Force is overly wondrous and mysterious. I require an extremely long amount of time to deduce a method to use it. This is something that cannot be achieved in just a few short years. The collapsed tunnel is reforming right now. It may not have completely stabilized, but within three years at most, Returnance experts will be able to pass through,” Jian Chen opened his eyes in the gloomy cave. They glowed like two glistening gems.

“Three years. Three years at most. I can’t keep wasting this valuable time on Martial Soul Force,” Jian Chen softly murmured before standing up. He gazed in the direction of the distant sea realm.

“Maybe the only method for me to increase my strength is to go to the sea realm,” Jian Chen said with a deep voice before leaving the cave he had stayed in for six years. He headed toward the sea realm.

Chapter 1476: Into the Sea of Despair

The sea realm was located at the bottom of the ocean. It was a world enveloped by an extremely vast barrier. This barrier separated the sea water from the sea realm. The barrier was the sky of the sea realm and created an empty space within the water.

This space was the world of the sea realm as well as the territory of the Sea race.

The Sea race was divided into the outer sea and inner sea. The inner sea was the world within the barrier while the outer sea was the region outside, filled with seawater.

There were also members of the Sea race in the outer sea as well as some deep sea beasts who did not possess intelligence.

However, most of the Sea race outside had not taken a human form yet and were species that possessed huge bodies. It was not that they could not enter the inner sea, but that they were restricted by their huge bodies and found living in the sea realm extremely inconvenient. The outer sea was more convenient for them, so they remained outside and rarely entered the inner sea. This was why very few Sea races appeared in their original form in the inner sea.

At this moment, a resplendent streak of violet light tore through the air within the barrier. It moved extremely quickly, disappearing into the horizon in the blink of an eye.

This streak of violet was Jian Chen. He stood on the Zi Ying Sword with the Qing Suo Sword on his back. He stared at the familiar land below as his face was filled with reminiscence.

He expanded his soul. With his soul at Returnance, he could envelope the entire sea realm without much effort at all. Although the sea realm was not any smaller than the Tian Yuan Continent, Jian Chen could see everything within as he stood on the Zi Ying

Sword, aside from the divine realm and the Sea of Despair.

Through the senses of his soul, Jian Chen saw the Sea Goddess Hall, the Serpent God Hall, the Heaven's Spirit Hall, as well as the heavily-injured hall masters of the latter two halls.

At the same time, he could see the prosperous Turtle clan. The current clan had truly returned to its former glory. Their clansmen had already exceeded a hundred thousand, and besides them, there were several tens of thousand warriors that had joined or been recruited by the Turtle clan. Even without Jian Chen, the current Turtle clan had become one of the most powerful organizations in the sea realm, only second to the three great halls.

In the center of the clan, Jian Chen saw a three-hundred-meter-tall statue. It was a depiction of himself and seemed very life-like.

Many clansmen and people that had joined the Turtle clan knelt in devotion before the statue. All of their gazes were filled with burning faith, as if the statue was their religion, their god.

Behind it was a tower several hundred meters tall. The tower was completely constructed from grand quality crystal, so the tower radiated pure and surging water-attributed energy.

The tower was only a few meters shorter than the statue. When Jian Chen's soul penetrated the tower, he could clearly see a neidan radiating with the presence of the Turtle clan enshrined on the highest floor.

Jian Chen's feelings could not help but become mixed when he saw the neidan. The neidan had caused him to think of the past, involuntarily recalling the moment when he had first come to the sea realm and received it from the sea goddess as well as all the moments after: from meeting the grand elder of the Turtle clan to becoming the Turtle clan's ruler.

Jian Chen had no ties to the Turtle clan, but everything had happened due to the neidan the sea goddess had gifted him. Huge

changes occurred and, in the end, a new age of glory descended upon the Turtle clan. Even the sea goddess had not foreseen this.

“I wonder if Kai Ya is still alive or not. Was the catastrophe of her clan caused by the Octoterra cultivation method I gifted her? If that’s really the case, I’ve brought disaster onto her,” Jian Chen thought about the first member of the Sea race he had met after coming to the sea realm. He could not help but gently sigh inside.

When he had gifted Kai Ya the cultivation method, he had wanted to find a successor for the Octoterra Emperor so that his legacy would never end as well as help out Kai Ya. After all, Jian Chen knew very few people in the sea realm back then. Aside from Xie Wang, there was only Kai Ya.

Jian Chen arrived outside the Sea of Despair with complicated and melancholic feelings. He gazed into the distance and only saw that the Sea of Despair was completely obscured by a wall of mist that connected the ground and the sky.

The Sea of Despair was an extremely special place. It was filled with a mysterious power that stopped all senses of the soul from working. Even Jian Chen’s soul at Returnance was unable to penetrate the mist.

Jian Chen gazed into the mist as he stood outside. He could not help but think of the Immortal Emperor’s flesh that was scattered across the region as well as the Anatta Grand Prime’s Anatta Tower from the Saints’ World. His eyes immediately lit up with determination and anticipation.

This was the determination to enter the Anatta Tower and the anticipation to obtain it.

Jian Chen took a single step. He crossed several hundred meters in that single step, and three steps later, he disappeared into the mist. He had entered the Sea of Despair.

Jian Chen strode through the Sea of Despair. He took each step

firmly and confidently, without any fear. He was no longer as careful as he had been when he had first come in with Yadriam. Instead, he charged forward, full of confidence.

The mist before Jian Chen was nothing ordinary. Not only did it obscure Jian Chen's vision but even his soul was rendered useless.

As he moved through the mist, some specks of light, like the eyes of ghosts, gradually appeared behind Jian Chen. They hid in the mist as they followed Jian Chen, increasing in number.

When the pairs of eyes reached over thirty, they finally ran out of patience. They all surged toward Jian Chen and attack him.

Jian Chen did not seem to discover the eyes behind him. He took each step confidently. The eyes moved extremely fast, arriving behind Jian Chen in the blink of an eye. They wanted to penetrate Jian Chen's body. Mist lingered around them.

However, when the eyes reached three inches away from Jian Chen they suddenly produced a chilling shriek before dissolving into mist.

Soon afterward, the other eyes all collided with Jian Chen. Immediately, many shrieks rang out. All the eyes that had attacked Jian Chen had been reduced to mist in a single moment.

Jian Chen did not look back at all, as if he did not hear the shrieks. He continued through the mist step by step. He seemed nonchalant. At a closer glance, a thin layer of light, created from his Way of the Sword, hung around him.

Chapter 1477: Through the Mist

There were many vicious spirits in the mist. Jian Chen came across over a thousand of them along his journey. The spirits ranged from weak Saint Rulers to Saint Kings, even a few Saint Kings at Great Perfection.

But the spirits were unable to harm Jian Chen at all. They could not even slow him down. A faint glow permeated his surroundings. He used the Way of the Sword to protect him, so even spirits at the Great Perfection of Saint King were unable to touch him. As soon as they came in contact with the glow, they were immediately grinded into a white mist, which merged into the surrounding mist.

At this moment, Jian Chen suddenly came to a stop. The next moment, he suddenly vanished. When he had appeared again, he was a hundred meters away.

The space where he stood trembled before recovering in just a single moment, becoming as calm as before. It was still enveloped by mist, but at a closer glance, the mist was slightly different than before.

The space in the Sea of Despair was extraordinarily unstable and would randomly teleport anything in it from time to time. Any region could suddenly transport a person to another location within the sea realm.

Jian Chen advanced mindlessly through the Sea of Despair. When he had first come here in search of the sea goddess' divine hall, he was able to maintain a straight course because of the Abyssal Crystal's guidance. However, he had not come in search of the divine hall this time but the Anatta Tower. He did not know where it was and in the Sea of Despair where it was almost impossible to find his bearings, Jian Chen could only try his luck.

The Anatta Tower was the famed god artifact of the Anatta

Grand Prime from the Saints' World. Even with the entire Saints' World in perspective, the Anatta Grand Prime ranked among the top three of all Grand Primes. In the past, only the Grand Prime of the warring gods could truly keep the Anatta Grand Prime at bay. Meanwhile, it was extremely likely that the Anatta Tower possessed all the wealth of the Anatta Grand Prime, which really tempted Jian Chen.

Any single item from a Grand Prime would probably be enough to overshadow everything Jian Chen had gained from the Xuanhuan Microcosm. As a result, Jian Chen planned on taking the Anatta Tower to raise his strength as quickly as possible during this crucial period of time.

The Anatta Tower possessed an artifact spirit. If the tower was still in perfect condition, Jian Chen would have never had these thoughts, but not only had the tower been heavily damaged by the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt, but it was also covered by his seals, preventing the tower from recovering after all these years and forcing it to grow weaker.

"The sword spirits said in the past that I could only enter the Anatta Tower after I had reached the seventh layer of the Chaotic Body. The fifth layer of the Chaotic Body is at the Third Heavenly Layer of Saint Emperor. I guess the sixth layer should be around the Sixth or Seventh Heavenly Layer while the seventh layer is at Receival. My Chaotic Body may still only be at the fifth layer, but my true strength is no less than Receival with my comprehension of the Way of the Sword and the Azulet swords. I possess the strength equivalent to the battle prowess of the seventh layer, so I should be able to enter the Anatta Tower now," Jian Chen thought. He was filled with anticipation.

The requirements for entering the Anatta Tower and absorbing the Yinyang Saint Rock were different. The Anatta Tower required battle prowess, which Jian Chen had already attained, while the Yinyang Saint Rock had nothing to do with battle prowess since it

was absorbing the Supreme Yang Qi and Supreme Yin Qi. He needed his Chaotic Force and Body at a corresponding level to withstand it.

Suddenly, the mist before Jian Chen began to violently surge. A pair of eyes appeared before Jian Chen. The eyes were extremely bright, glistening like gemstones. They were particularly eye-catching in the mist.

“A Saint Emperor vicious spirit!” Jian Chen’s eyes lit up as he stared at the eyes in interest. This was the first time he had come across a Saint Emperor vicious spirit after entering the Sea of Despair. Vaguely, he could even see the consolidated body of the vicious spirit.

This spirit was clearly not the same as the one he and Yadriam had met before. It did not hesitate at all when it saw Jian Chen, immediately roaring at him.

Jian Chen’s advance did not slow. He used two of his fingers as a sword and a sword Qi that was just over a meter long immediately condensed. It shone with dazzling light as sword Qi permeated the surroundings. The mist in the surroundings actually thinned.

Jian Chen gently slashed at the vicious spirit charging toward him with his sword Qi. The spirit immediately produced a chilling shriek when it was hit, having been cleaved in half. The sword Qi clearly caused it great damage. Its consolidated body of mist immediately became extremely thin.

When Jian Chen slashed out a second time, the vicious spirit collapsed after emitting another chilling shriek. It dispersed as mist.

Jian Chen advanced through the Sea of Despair aimlessly. He had completely lost his sense of direction. He would encounter teleporting space from time to time and would avoid them most of the time, preventing him from being sent away.

However, Jian Chen was unable to dodge a few instances since the teleported region was relatively larger and would end up in a random area within the Sea of Despair.

There was no day or night in Sea of Despair, so it was impossible to sense the passing of time. Jian Chen did not know how long he had traveled either. He killed countless vicious spirits and had even come across quite a few Saint Emperor spirits, but they were all slain by him.

Jian Chen came across quite a few regions that housed the Immortal Emperor's remains. Even though they had been there for countless years, the blood had not dried and had never ran out of life. Even with Jian Chen's current strength, he felt shocked from the terrifying killing intent hidden within the remains. He was unable to approach them at all.

At this moment, the space before Jian Chen suddenly opened up. The obscuring mist vanished, and he had arrived in a clear world. He seemed to have entered a whole different world all together.

The thinner the mist was in the Sea of Despair, the more dangerous it was. However, the region where Jian Chen stood did not have any mist at all for a radius of several dozen meters.

However, Jian Chen rejoiced when he saw this region. His eyes lit up in a single moment because he had come here before. This was the place where the Anatta Tower stood.

"I've finally found it," Jian Chen murmured. Finding this place in the disorienting Sea of Despair was extremely difficult.

Chapter 1478: Into the Anatta Tower

Jian Chen stepped forward with the Azulet swords on his back, traveling through the flat land. He became cautious after arriving in this huge region without many mist. He was no longer as careless as before.

Within the mist, there were only the vicious spirits that he needed to pay attention to. Some of the more powerful spirits were enough to threaten Saint Emperors or even kill them. However, no matter how powerful those spirits were, they were unable to pose any harm to Origin realm experts because the strongest were only Saint Emperors.

However, this region without mist possessed something terrifying enough to kill Origin realm experts. This was where the Anatta Tower stood.

Jian Chen advanced over thirty meters into the region and finally became stern. He stared ahead as light flickered in his eyes.

Several dozen kilometers away from him, an ancient tower stood silently. The tower was several hundred meters tall and seemed extremely ordinary, nothing really stood out besides the sword slashes that covered the structure.

Each sword slash was extremely deep, engraved into the tower, causing the ordinary-looking tower to appear extremely damaged and ruined. At the same time, each slash seemed to flicker with light and release a powerful sword Qi from time to time.

The sword Qi was so powerful that it was enough to overwhelm the world. Without any doubt, it possessed the power to destroy worlds. Even Jian Chen's heart leaped in fright when he sensed the sword Qi.

Jian Chen stopped where he was. He stood there and stared at the tower for a while before sucking in a deep breath. He slowly

calmed down before walking over confidently.

Suddenly, the damaged tower began to tremble. As the tower trembled, the space around it rippled. It violently shook, obscuring the tower. At the same time, visible waves of destructive power rapidly launched into the surroundings. Wherever the waves passed, the space would wildly distort. If it were not for the fact that the space where the tower stood was extraordinarily tough, far tougher than the space in the sea realm, probably just the ripples would have been enough for the entire region of space to collapse.

Jian Chen's gaze became extremely sharp. When he had come here with Yadriam before, the two of them had been forced away by these ripples. Yet now, faced against the same ripples, he did not flee at all. With a thought, the Zi Ying Sword flew into his hand as a streak of violet light. He stabbed at the ripples with the swords.

The entire region was dyed violet as soon as he struck out. A dazzling glow flickered on the sword as it radiated with surging sword Qi. Jian Chen had fused his comprehension of the Way of the Sword into the attack, so it possessed the power of laws. The strike possessed power no weaker than late Receival, even late Receival experts would pale if they had to receive the attack.

Bang!

The Zi Ying Sword collided against the ripples with a shocking force, immediately erupting with a deep sound. An even more terrifying ripple of energy exploded, surging into the surroundings as a storm of destruction. It caused the earth to sink and crack, but when the energy surged toward the mist in the sky, it dispersed without getting close, as if it was a whole different world here, completely separate from the region of mist.

Jian Chen's body jerked violently, but he remained where he was. He did not stagger back at all. However, his feet had sunk into

the extremely hard earth.

At that moment, the entire ground several dozen kilometers away from Jian Chen sank three meters into the ground. The earth became even tougher than before, akin to stone.

The slashes on the tower suddenly began to glow after the tower emitted that attack. All hundred and eight slashes on the tower glowed with a dazzling light. Thirty-six illusionary swords appeared and slowly revolved around the tower, suppressing it.

The tower shook constantly and deep sounds would ring out from time to time, as if it was resisting the seal. However, it failed to produce a second wave.

A while later, the tower gradually trembled less violently before stopping all together. The tower recovered its deathly silence from before, standing there without moving at all.

Jian Chen stared at the tower. He held the Zi Ying Sword in his hand, which was still enshrouded by a violet glow. When the tower calmed down, Jian Chen began to approach it once more.

The tower was heavily damaged, but its artifact spirit was still present. The tower was still able to display unimaginable might while in the artifact spirit's control. Thus, it was impossible to approach even with the strength of an Origin realm expert. Even Reciprocity experts would find it difficult to stay alive, but the tower was currently sealed by the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt's slashes, limiting the might it could display. Killing Jian Chen had become rather difficult.

The Anatta Tower no longer moved, as if it had completely settled down. Even when Jian Chen arrived at its main entrance, it did not react at all.

Jian Chen gazed up at the damaged tower from the main entrance. The tower was covered in a total of one hundred and eight sword slashes. Each slash was several meters deep and they

continued to shine even now. They emitted surging sword Qi as thirty-six illusionary swords revolved around the structure in the air. They seemed to possess trajectories that conformed to the world, exhibiting the power of laws.

Jian Chen's eyes narrowed slightly. He had secretly raised his vigilance to his limit. The tower was quiet, but the operation of the seals told Jian Chen that the tower was not as calm as it seemed on the surface.

The door to the first layer of the tower had already been damaged. The holes were patched up with a barrier condensed from powerful energy, creating a slightly illusory patchwork. It seemed almost tangible.

At this moment, Jian Chen suddenly slashed out. The Zi Ying Sword collided with the door, which immediately erupted with a deafening boom. The Anatta Tower stood there unmoving while the damaged door did not even shake. However, the glow from the patched up regions darkened slightly.

Chapter 1479: The World Within the Tower

Jian Chen stared at the parts of the door condensed from energy with great interest. His eyes shone extremely brightly as he murmured, “With the toughness of the Anatta Tower, if the main entrance was fine, I would not be able to enter no matter what even if it’s unable to counterattack. Yet now...” As soon as he finished speaking, Jian Chen cleaved at the door with his sword once again. With a boom, the portion condensed from energy darkened once more.

Jian Chen finally got through the damaged door after more than a dozen attacks. Jian Chen carefully passed through a crack in the door and entered the interior of the tower.

Jian Chen felt like he had arrived in a whole different world the moment he stepped into the tower. The ground was barren, without any signs of life, and filled with the presence of death. The sky was gloomy and expanded as far as the eye could see.

“Is this the interior of the Anatta Tower?” Jian Chen gazed at the boundless world and could not help but feel shocked. He soon attempted to expand his soul to observe the place, but he discovered that his soul was suppressed even more within the tower.

Jian Chen looked around diligently for a while. He actually sensed no signs of danger within the world, so he just ended up riding the Qing Suo Sword in the sky while communicating with the sword spirits.

“There are a total of nine floors within the Anatta Tower. Each floor is composed of a vast world. Normally, the tunnel to the floor above should be in the center of the floor, but the artifact spirit is still present and can control everything within the tower. Under its influence, it possesses the power to hide the passage to the next floor or move it to a completely new place,” Zi Ying explained to

Jian Chen. This was the first time they had come inside the Anatta Tower, but they knew quite a lot about it.

The Anatta Grand Prime was an extremely famed figure in the Saints' World as well as one of the three strongest Grand Primes. The Grand Exalts of the Immortals' World would have obviously investigated the Anatta Grand Prime.

“If the artifact spirit really has hidden the way up, wouldn't it be almost impossible to find in this tremendous world? After all, I can't use my soul to search here,” Jian Chen frowned.

“Master, we've already entered the tower, yet the artifact spirit still hasn't appeared. This explains one thing, which is that it is far weaker than us, where even when it's in its own territory, it not confident it could deal with us. In its current state, perfectly hiding the way up within the damaged tower is no longer possible. We will discover it when we approach it,” said Zi Ying.

Jian Chen rode the Qing Suo Sword through the first floor of the tower. The Zi Ying Sword hovered above his head, ready to strike out at any moment. Jian Chen had secretly filled every inch of his body with Chaotic Force as well, pushing his Chaotic Body to the limits. Outside, he was surrounded by the glow of the Way of the Sword.

At this moment, Jian Chen narrowed his eyes. He stared ahead. Only darkness appeared before him, and within the dark world, space was extremely unstable. Huge cracks would appear one after another, and each one was thousands of meters long. They were large enough to swallow huge beasts, and they even emitted a suction force.

However, an illusionary, thirty-thousand-meter-long sword hovered within the dark world. It flickered with light as sword Qi surged from it. Thousand-meter-long spatial cracks would pass through the sword from time to time, but it was unable to damage the illusionary sword at all. The cracks did not even manage to

shake it.

“This is one of the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt’s four swords, the Sword of Mortality. It’s just sword Qi left behind by the Sword of Mortality. The Sword of Mortality boasts being able to sever an immortal’s foundation, thrusting mortality onto them and preventing them from attaining immortality ever again,” explained Qing Suo.

Jian Chen stared at the huge projection of the Sword of Mortality. Even though it was formed from just a single strand of sword Qi, it seemed everlasting, like it would not disperse even if the world ended. It seemed like the illusionary sword was eternal.

Jian Chen was shocked. He admired the terrifying strength of the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt. Just a single sword Qi left behind could still remain so terrifyingly powerful even after so much time. Jian Chen struggled to imagine just how terrifying he actually was in his prime.

“This is the end of a side of the first floor. Originally, the first floor was not so small, but the space ahead has been obliterated by the sword Qi of the Sword of Mortality,” Zi Ying said.

Jian Chen stared at the sword. Even though it was created from a single strand of sword Qi, it possessed a supreme will within the Sword God realm. To his pity, he knew that his comprehension of the Way of the Sword would rapidly increase even if he could just understand a fraction of the will, but his comprehension was just far too low and his foundations were not firm. He did not possess the ability to comprehend the will of a Sword God.

After a moment of silence, Jian Chen suppressed the temptation to attempt to comprehend the will. He left in frustration and pity, flying off in another direction.

Jian Chen soon arrived at another boundary of the floor. A destroyed space of darkness blocked his way again and a huge sword hovered within that space as well. It was thirty thousand

meters long and radiated with a terrifying pressure.

The dark space before him used to be a part of the vast world on the first floor, but it had been obliterated by the shocking sword Qi in the end.

“This is the Sword of Reincarnation, also one of the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt’s swords. It possesses the power of samsara, able to push immortals into an endless cycle of rebirth, never able to break free,” the voices of the sword spirits rang through Jian Chen’s head.

Jian Chen’s interest was immediately piqued. In the world of the first floor, he had already traveled in two directions, and when he reached as far as he could go, he had found the illusory figure of a sword. He wondered if the other two directions possessed swords as well.

Jian Chen did not stay for too long and immediately flew off in the one direction and then the other. His thoughts were confirmed. Just as he had expected, the boundaries of the other two directions possessed the sword Qi of the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt as well. Each strand of sword Qi was extremely terrifying, projecting a sword that was thirty thousand meters long. They seemed eternal even after so much time.

“The Sword of Slaughter is the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt’s main sword for killing as well as the one he used most frequently during his growth. Countless immortals from the Immortals’ World, great demons from the Demons’ World, and experts from the Saints’ World that have been felled by this sword.

“The Sword of Severance is the strongest sword among the four. This sword specializes in attacking the soul and is able to sever the souls of people while leaving their bodies unscathed. Even the apex Immortal Exalts feared the might of this sword.”

“Mortality, Reincarnation, Slaughter, and Soul-severance are the four divine swords of the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt. Each sword has

been fused with a way comprehended by the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt, allowing the four swords to possess their own unique abilities. Coupled with the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt's comprehension at the realm of Sword God, the four swords could erupt with unimaginable might. If the four swords formed a formation, their power would be even more shocking.

“The Anatta Tower is very powerful as well, truly worthy of being the Anatta Grand Prime's famed treasure. Even the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt was unable to destroy it, only managing to suppress and seal it.”

Zi Ying and Qing Suo gave one explanation after another. Their voices were filled with admiration and amazement.

Chapter 1480: Spirit of the Anatta Tower

“Immortal Exalt! Sword God!” Jian Chen clenched his fists as anticipation filled his eyes. The power of the four sword Qis left behind by the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt had completely taken him aback, leaving an unforgettable impression on him.

Jian Chen displayed an emotion he rarely showed, desire. A desire for strength, the desire to become an Immortal Exalt and a Sword God.

“If I possessed enough strength right now, the World of Forsaken Saints wouldn’t be able to pose a threat to the Tian Yuan Continent at all. Not only can great strength be for protection, but it can also be used to protect those close to me as well as my home. In this world, if you do not have enough strength, you are nothing. You won’t even be able to control your own life,” Jian Chen thought. He secretly made up his mind to become powerful like the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt. This was not only his desire as a fighter but also because he wanted to see what the other worlds were like up above.

Jian Chen seemed to think of something and asked, “Zi Ying, Qing Suo, the Azulet swords are like the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt, the strongest god artifacts of the Immortal’s World. Each sword belonging to the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt has been imbued with his comprehension of a way, which is why the four swords possess unique abilities. You stand with the four swords, so what unique abilities do you have?”

“The Zi Ying Sword has reached the limits of Supreme Yang Force in the cosmos, which is also known as Grand Yang Force. He can burn countless worlds and even burn the laws of the worlds themselves. The Qing Suo Sword has reached the limits of Supreme Yin Force, which is also known as Grand Yin Force. In a single instance, it can freeze worlds and everything in it and even stop time. If the swords are fused and the Supreme Yang Force and

Supreme Yin Force is fused, the fusion will create true Chaotic Force, which is even more powerful. It can annihilate everything in the world, but unfortunately, Qing Suo and I were heavily injured in the war back then and still haven't recovered, so we're unable to use Supreme Yang Force and Supreme Yin Force. We only possess the abilities of sword spirits," said Zi Ying.

"Master, even if Zi Ying and I can use Supreme Yin Force and Supreme Yang Force, the quality of the two swords right now is not enough to endure their power. They can only withstand it after they've reached supreme quality as immortal artifacts, and coupled with the fact that the two of us were formed from a strand of Yin Qi and Yang Qi that had separated from chaos and gained intelligence, the Supreme Yin Force and Supreme Yang Force are our vital energies, so overusing them will injure us. As for the sword fusion mentioned, it's best that you never attempt it, master. In order to kill the Grand Prime of the warring gods, former master used the fusion and erupted with devastating power. Although he successfully slew the warring god Grand Prime in the end, he suffered the backlash of the fusion as well. The backlash was extremely terrifying, and even as one of the five great Immortal Exalts, former master could not endure it and died. The Azulet swords that were of the same quality as the Anatta Tower and the four swords of the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt were destroyed as a result. Zi Ying and I suffered unimaginable injuries, only leaving behind spirits. If it were not for the fact that we originated as strands of Yin and Yang Qi, which are impossible to destroy, we would have been vaporized the moment the swords were destroyed back then," Qing Suo said sternly. She still felt lingering fear when she thought back to what had happened back then.

"Supreme quality immortal artifacts," Jian Chen softly murmured and could not help but frown. He had worked tirelessly to collect the materials for forging the Azulet swords, yet the swords he had fused in the end were barely mid quality immortal artifacts. Between mid quality and supreme quality was a high

quality, so it was impossible for him to find such high quality materials even if he scoured this entire world.

The materials required to forge supreme quality immortal artifacts rarely appeared in this world or could never appear at all.

“If I want to forge supreme quality immortal artifacts, I must go to the Saints’ World or the Immortals’ World for materials. At the same time, my Chaotic Flames will definitely have to be extremely pure in order to forge supreme quality immortal artifacts, so forging them right now is still a little too distant for me. However, once I do forge them and Zi Ying and Qing Suo recover some strength, the Supreme Yang Force and Supreme Yin Force will definitely strengthen me,” Jian Chen thought. He stared at the world as the light in his eyes flickered.

“This Anatta Tower was left behind by the Anatta Grand Prime, so it definitely should contain his wealth. I wonder if I can find some materials for forging supreme quality immortal artifacts here. However, I better deal with the matter at hand first and obtain this tower as soon as possible.” When his thoughts had just ran to their conclusion, the Azulet swords suddenly began to revolve around each other before shooting off into the sky. They resonated with a clear thrum, which echoed through the surroundings.

A gleam of light flashed through Jian Chen’s eyes, and he suddenly raised his head. His eyes shone with interest. His gaze was sharp like swords. This time, the two swords had flown off by themselves and not because he wanted them to.

The two swords moved extremely quick, piercing through the clouds in a single moment. Their bright lights illuminated the region, causing the thick clouds to in the sky to rapidly disperse and reveal the scorching sun above.

The two swords shot toward the sun.

However, the sun in the sky suddenly released an unbelievably

blinding light. The light was so powerful that Jian Chen could not help but close his eyes and use his hands to cover them. They throbbed with piercing pain.

But the sun in the sky stopped moving. Instead, it continued to let out a blinding light as it rapidly enlarged, falling at a terrifying rate and giving off a tremendous and terrifying pressure.

This seemed like the end of the world. The sun was falling and the entire sky was covered by it. It was a grand scene. Beneath it, the Azulet swords shot up as long streaks of light, striking the sun with an unstoppable might.

Boom!

The sun and the swords collided in the sky, immediately erupting with a deafening boom. The entire sky appeared like a woven tapestry with violet and azure strings and the radiance of the sun, causing the entire world to appear multicolored.

After the strike, the Azulet swords shot back and returned to Jian Chen's side. The huge falling sun in the sky came to a stop as well, immediately stopping in the air. Its radiance dulled, as if it was a setting sun and no longer complete.

"Spirit of the tower, we would still end up finding you no matter where you hid, and just as we expected, you've become weak." Zi Ying's figure appeared, staring at the sun in the sky. He was speaking to it.

Qing Suo appeared as well, standing beside Zi Ying. She stared at the sky with her beautiful eyes and said, "Spirit of the tower, so not only are you weak, but you're not even complete. How can you be our opponent in your current state? Why don't you yield to our master instead, and we'll spare your life."

Chapter 1481: Nine Fragments of the Artifact Spirit

Jian Chen's gaze landed on the dim sun as well. He could tell that the sun was probably a transformed artifact spirit.

The moment Jian Chen glanced over, the sun immediately began to change, morphing into a red-robed child. The child seemed very young, but his eyes seemed weather-hardened from countless years of life. A shallow slash between his eyes was extremely eye-catching.

The child sternly stared at the Azulet swords. His eyes were filled with sharp killing intent. He then glanced at Jian Chen. He suddenly broke into laughter and sneered, "This must be the new master of you Yin Yang swords. I never thought the famed Yin Yang swords of the Immortals' World would take on such a puny person as their master. What a joke."

The sword spirits were unaffected by the child's scornful comments. Zi Ying rebuked, "Spirit of the tower, we may not have been your opponent while injured and in your domain, but you have been sealed up by the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt. Killing you is nothing difficult now. Yielding is the only way you can survive."

"Hmph, you're dreaming if you want me to yield to an ant. Even a Grand Prime cannot make me yield even if they stood before me, let alone him, a person who hasn't even reached Godhood and who belongs to the Immortals' World," the spirit of the tower coldly replied.

Killing intent flickered through Jian Chen's eyes. He rose up into the air with the Zi Ying Sword and charged toward the child. He swung his sword at him and coldly said, "Then I can only kill you if you don't want to yield!"

The slash seemed to conjure a huge, violet sword Qi that was a

hundred meters long. It whistled through the air with shocking might.

“Just you? Even a mere ant dares to speak to me like this. Even if I’m extremely weak, I can still kill you. Go cultivate for a few hundred thousand more years.” The red-robed child was extremely confident, displaying deep scorn for Jian Chen. He gently swept a finger across the air and the power of the first floor immediately surged over from all directions, crushing inward with a devastating might.

But the four swords that Jian Chen had seen earlier shook gently, immediately letting out a hazy glow. They suppressed the power of the Anatta Tower. The child could only use a tiny sliver of it in the end.

However, even the tiny sliver possessed the power of someone at Receival. It shot toward Jian Chen as a thread.

Jian Chen stabbed the Zi Ying Sword at the thread of energy, and it loudly collapsed, disappearing into the air of the first floor. The power of the thread was slightly weaker than the Receival expert from the World of Forsaken Saints that Jian Chen had killed, so not only had it failed to injure Jian Chen, but it even struggled to stagger him.

Jian Chen’s figure paused slightly before immediately disappearing, only leaving behind an afterimage. He charged toward the red-robed child at an even greater speed.

The boy’s face changed, and he immediately retreated in a hurry. Along the way, he constantly waved his arms, condensing threads of energy from the Anatta Tower’s power, which was being suppressed by the four swords. The threads all possessed the power of a single attack from a Receival expert, and they all shot toward Jian Chen with a wave of the boy’s arm.

Jian Chen’s gaze sharpened as he rapidly approached the boy. Jian Chen cleaved all the threads of energy that were shot his way,

producing violent ripples of energy, which would disperse into the surroundings with deafening booms. The boy was unable to stop Jian Chen's advance at all.

The child's face immediately became distorted when he saw how he could do nothing to Jian Chen. It became extremely vicious as he furiously roared. "That goddamn Nirvanic old bastard. He couldn't destroy the Anatta Tower, so he split me into nine fragments instead, forcing each fragment to protect only one layer of the tower. Not only am I unable to recover my strength, but I have to endure the suppressing sword Qi he left in me. How could I have fallen to such a miserable state otherwise, where I can't even kill an ant?"

The red-robed boy knew he could no longer escape as he watched Jian Chen rapidly approach him. Even in his own territory, he was unable to recover due to the seal within him. The longer the battle was drawn out, the more disadvantageous it was to him, so he immediately went crazy. He stopped and charged forward, charging toward Jian Chen with the last of his power. He furiously roared, "I have nine bodies and each one is more powerful than the last! My body on the first floor is the weakest, and the one on the ninth floor is the strongest! You can kill me on the first floor, but I'd like to see how you will kill me on the ninth floor? As long as I live on that floor, you will never be able to obtain the tower!"

The boy charged toward Jian Chen without fearing death. He did not avoid the Zi Ying Sword at all. He pointed his chest at it while it flickered with a violet light.

Spurt!

The Zi Ying Sword passed through the child's chest, but at the same time, the boy landed a punch on Jian Chen. The fist collided violently with Jian Chen, erupting with a deep thud.

Jian Chen's face changed, and he vomited blood. He was immediately blown back while the boy's body gradually dispersed.

Jian Chen only managed to stabilize himself after traveling several kilometers. His face was pale. Even though the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt had split the spirit of the tower into nine fragments, which were all sealing him, even just the weakest possessed the strength of someone within the Origin realm. It was extremely difficult for Jian Chen to endure a strike from an Origin realm expert, so he was left heavily injured.

As the child vanished, the space where he had been standing before immediately began to tremble, gradually transforming into a dark hole.

Jian Chen knew that the hole was likely the entrance to the next floor. However, he did not rush forward. Instead, he sat down where he was. A strand of extremely dense Radiant Saint Force origin energy swelled forth, covering his body in a gentle, white light. Meanwhile, his injuries began to heal at an unbelievable rate.

In just a few seconds, Jian Chen recovered from a wound that others would take a few months, the very least, or a few years to recover from. He was as good as new now.

Jian Chen stood up only after reaching his peak condition. He confidently walked into the dark hole that lead to the second floor.

The second floor also possessed a huge world. It was desolate and showed no signs of life.

The first thing that Jian Chen did was tear through the clouds after arriving on the second floor. He stared at the sun. The sun was truly just a fragment. It was heavily damaged and less than a tenth of its original size.

Jian Chen stared at the sun for a while before confirming it was not the artifact spirit in the end. After confirming that, he looked at the clouds beneath and looked around, only leaving after confirming that there were no problems.

Jian Chen aimlessly flew about the second floor. He passed by barren mountains after barren mountains. The skeletons of a few beasts lay on them. They were all extremely large and seemed to possess strength far greater than the Origin realm back when they were still alive. The skeletons should have been preserved for long periods of time. Maybe because the tower had been damaged, but they had all eroded away. With just a gentle touch, they would turn into a pile of dust.

Chapter 1482: The Tower Spirit's Shock

The world of the second floor was much more complete. Even though the ends of the floor also possessed the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt's four swords, which were hovering in dark space, the remaining world still possessed a few mountains and rivers. Jian Chen had even found a sea.

Without exception, the mountains were barren and the rivers were dry. Even the sea had been reduced to a relatively small basin.

Jian Chen had even come across cities. Each city was countless times larger than any capital city on the Tian Yuan Continent. The damaged city walls stood thousands of meters high, reaching toward the sky while the city itself was filled with humanoid skeletons. Some of the skeletons even bore a shred of presence from their former lives. Jian Chen immediately leaped in fright when he sensed them, but no matter how powerful their former owners were, the skeletons had been eroded by time, along with everything they had once possessed.

It was not that the items here could not withstand the erosion of time but that the Anatta Tower had been damaged. They suffered from its effects and all passed away during the great battle.

When Jian Chen arrived in another giant city, the Azulet swords immediately perked up. Zi Ying's voice rang out in his head.

"Found him, master. The spirit's hiding in the city ahead."

Just as Zi Ying spoke, the ground suddenly began to shake. The damaged city walls immediately collapsed, kicking dust into the air.

"Swords of Yin and Yang, you are far too wretched. I will suppress you!" An angry roar reverberated from the city ahead. A red-robed boy furiously flew from the city. A vicious glow was present in his eyes. He seemed fierce.

The boy had sensed that the sword spirits had found where he was. Even though he was very weak, Jian Chen would not be able to find him within the Anatta Tower if he hid properly. However, he could not hide from the sword spirits. His position had been revealed by the sword spirits on both the first and second floor, so his hatred for the sword spirits was growing deeper.

As the boy charged over, the power within the Anatta Tower immediately surged. This time, Jian Chen could clearly sense the boy's strength. He was actually quite stronger than he was on the first floor.

However, Jian Chen felt no fear. He slashed out and imbued the attack with his comprehension of the Way of the Sword. A sliver of power from the ways surged toward the boy's head.

"Freeze, world!" The boy yelled out. As soon as he finished speaking, the time in the world where Jian Chen stood seemed to stop. Even the air seemed to stop moving as well. Everything had frozen at that moment.

Jian Chen came to a halt. He had been frozen while swinging his sword, unable to move at all. The Azulet swords were unable to move either. The resplendent glow they gave off completely froze in place as well.

It was also freezing space, but the red-robed boy's abilities were incomparable to Saint Kings or Saint Emperors. Not only did the frozen space trap Jian Chen, but it even managed to trap the sword Qi from the Azulet swords.

The four swords at the boundaries of the second layer gently trembled and the frozen space around Jian Chen returned to how it had been. As soon as he regained his mobility, he saw a streak of red light descend from the sky, forming a cage around him and the Azulet swords.

A mysterious power permeated the cage, limiting the strength that Jian Chen could display, immediately making him feel like

even just eighty percent of his full strength was impossible to achieve. The Chaotic Force within him circulated abnormally slow as well.

“Swords of Yin and Yang, I can’t kill you, but I can suppress you,” the red-robed boy roared out. Mysterious inscriptions hovered in front of his hands. He then sent them toward the Zi Ying Sword and Qing Suo Sword with lightning-like speed in an attempt to force the inscriptions into the swords.

The two swords grew brighter and resisted with their full might, but to Jian Chen’s surprise, he had lost control of the two swords. However, he used a finger to condense some sword Qi and stabbed at the boy.

“Piss off!” The boy was busy with suppressing the Azulet swords, so he did not want to spend too much time dealing with Jian Chen. Faced with Jian Chen’s attack, he did not try to avoid it at all. He just raised his right fist and hurled it at Jian Chen.

Jian Chen’s sword Qi was dispersed by the boy’s punch. Even though the sword Qi was dispersed, the fist did not slow down at all. It landed on Jian Chen’s chest, and with a thud, Jian Chen was blown out of the boundary of the cage of light. The boy’s entire right hand disappeared as well.

The next moment, a new arm grew out of the boy’s body. The boy clearly dimmed when the new arm appeared.

Jian Chen was immediately free of the restrictions the moment he left the boundary of the red light. He condensed a strand of sword Qi with his fingers and attacked the cage of red light from outside. It constantly shook under his attack.

The red-robed child used all he had to suppress the Azulet swords within the cage of the red light. He said with a vicious face, “Swords of Yin and Yang, once I suppress you, I’ll throw you into the space annihilated by those four swords from the Nirvanic bastard. I’d like to see how you return. Without your help, I won’t

have to expend any effort to kill that ant. This is my territory after all. I reign supreme within my territory.”

“Tower spirit, you still can’t kill master with your current strength. This Anatta Tower will be of great help to master, and he’s come with the intention of taking it. The only way for you to survive is to yield to master,” persuaded Zi Ying. She was using everything she had to resist the boy’s suppression.

“Hahaha, swords of Yin and Yang, are you mad? You actually want me to yield to an ant,” the boy laughed aloud. His voice was filled with scorn and sarcasm.

“Tower spirit, Qing Suo and I were born in the cosmos and transformed from a strand of Yin and Yang Qi. You are also born from the cosmos and transformed from a way in the world. We don’t wish to see you die here either. Master may still be weak, but he’s not as simple as you have imagined him to be. Tower spirit, you have to know that no matter how powerful you become, even if you reach the peak of Grand Prime or Immortal Exalt, you still won’t be able to detect it. Only we spirits who are born from the universe can see it. Use that ability and take a look at our master. I believe you will be able to catch a glimpse of the future,” Zi Ying said sincerely.

“Hmph, an ant will be an ant. So what if he’s extraordinary? He’ll become a Grand Exalt of the Immortals’ World at most and look at what happened to the greatest expert of the Immortals’ World, that Nirvanic bastard. Didn’t he die in the end as well,” the boy sneered. He did not care about Jian Chen at all, but he was still tempted to glance at Jian Chen.

This glance was not just a single observation. He was using his unique abilities as a spirit to catch a glimpse of someone’s future.

The boy’s face drastically changed after that glance. His eyes widened drastically while shock and disbelief filled his face.

“No... impossible... this is impossible... this is forbidden. The

world cannot allow this. This cannot happen...”

Chapter 1483: Slaying the Artifact Spirit of the Second Floor

The boy loudly cried out while his face paled in a single moment. The gaze he sent toward Jian Chen underwent a drastic change as well. He no longer looked at Jian Chen like he was an ant but a terrifying existence.

“Impossible, it’s impossible for this to appear. It’s impossible for this to happen. The world will not allow this at all. This is fake. This is fake. I refuse to believe it.” The boy seemed to lose his mind as he violently trembled. The gaze he sent toward Jian Chen was filled with terror, shock, and disbelief.

“Tower spirit, the outcome you just saw is fated to happen. You know whether it’s real or not. Are you willing to yield to our master now?” Zi Ying asked nonchalantly. Even though she and Zi Ying had once stood on opposing sides to the Anatta Tower, they still wished that Jian Chen could subdue the tower spirit even if there was only the shred of a possibility. That way, not only could Jian Chen avoid many difficult battles, but he would obtain the entire tower as well.

After all, the difference of an Anatta Tower with an artifact spirit and without an artifact spirit was extremely great.

“Tower spirit, considering that we’re all spirits born from the world, we don’t wish to see you die here, which is why we’re persuading you to yield to our master. You may be transformed from a strand of the universe’s origins, but you are not eternal. Even the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt would need to take extreme measures to kill you when you were in your prime, but you’ve already been suppressed by the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt for many years now. Not to mention the fact that you’ve been split into nine fragments, which has prevented you from recovering at all after all these years and causing you to weaken to such a state. You no

longer possess the toughness you once had before. Killing you is not difficult,” Zi Ying said in a deep voice.

The red-robed boy did not waver at all. He looked at Jian Chen in terror sometimes, viciously at other times, and even madness. He roared out, “You’re dreaming if you want me to yield. Since I can see the terrifying future of your master, I will destroy him right now and prevent it.”

The fear in the boy’s eyes vanished and was replaced by a vicious madness. He stopped suppressing the sword spirits and charged at Jian Chen without the fear of death. Determination appeared in his eyes. He was willing to sacrifice everything.

The boy was much stronger than when he had been on the first layer. Even though the seals of the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt’s four swords still existed, he could use slightly more power than on the first floor.

As the boy charged over, the power of the tower surged once more, rapidly condensing into a miniature tower before the boy. The tower was only three inches tall, and at a closer glance, it was actually a miniature of the Anatta Tower.

As soon as the tower was condensed, it began to exude a mysterious and powerful force. It was filled with a brutal and destructive intent, causing Jian Chen’s eyes to narrow.

The Azulet swords were still entangled by the boy’s suppression. Without the swords, Jian Chen’s strength had drastically fallen, so he did not choose to take the attack head-on. With a single movement, he left behind an afterimage, reappearing a hundred meters away.

The boy’s miniature tower’s struck the space where Jian Chen had stood before. When the tower hit the space there, it immediately produced a groan as strands of a destructive power saturated the air there, causing the space there to violently tremble. If it were not for the fact that the space within the Anatta

Tower was extremely tough, the boy probably would have caused the space in a radius of over a thousand meters to collapse.

“Where do you think you’re going? I’ll kill you today and completely end you,” the boy yelled. He continued toward Jian Chen, who was a hundred meters away. His mad eyes were fixated on him. They were filled with crazy killing intent.

Jian Chen was stunned. He stared at the boy and could clearly sense that the boy was different, as if the boy was a whole different person. It seemed like he had completely fallen out with the boy. The boy wanted to kill Jian Chen regardless of the price he had to pay.

However, this thought disappeared with a flash in Jian Chen’s head. He stared at the shrunken tower in the boy’s hand. He could clearly sense that the power within the tower had weakened after the strike from before.

Chaotic Force surged within Jian Chen. The chaotic neidan within his dantian spewed out large amounts of Chaotic Force. It moved through his body and filled every inch of it. He condensed a chaotic sword Qi in his right as well.

“Sword Origin!” With a thought, strands of powerful sword Qi began to condense from the surroundings. The sword Qi possessed the power of ways, fusing with the chaotic sword Qi in Jian Chen’s hand. He stabbed toward the boy’s tower with lightning-like speed.

With a boom, Jian Chen’s body violently shook before stumbling back. He only stabilized himself after moving several hundred meters away. The sword Qi in his hand had dulled.

Meanwhile, the boy had only paused in his advance. He continued charging after Jian Chen, still filled with a vicious madness. The miniature tower in his hand had become even more illusory.

The boy had originally been able to use all the power of the tower as he wished as long as he was in it, but the Anatta Tower had been sealed by the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt. Thus, the power he could use was unprecedentedly low. He could not even replenish it after he used it. This was why he was becoming weaker the longer he fought Jian Chen.

Jian Chen was different. The consumption of his Chaotic Force was extremely gradual while the sword Qi condensed from his comprehension of the Way of the Sword only took a slight toll on his soul. The tower spirit was unable to handle a battle that dragged on.

After a single moment, the chaotic sword Qi began to glowing once again in Jian Chen's hand. The Way of the Sword fused with it as he slashed at the boy again.

Boom!

Jian Chen staggered back again after the attack. His face was now pale, but the miniature tower in the boy's hand had completely disappeared. He was also pale, but the vicious madness in his eyes had not weakened at all. Instead, it had grown thicker.

Jian Chen swung his hand and shot a strand of sword Qi between the boy's eyes before the boy could stabilize himself.

Spurt! The sword Qi left behind a wound three inches wide on the boy's forehead. However, he did not die; his body only faded slightly.

At the same time, the Azulet swords finally broke free from their restraints. They flew over as long streams of light, passing through the boy's body and returning to Jian Chen's hands.

The boy's illusory body finally disappeared after receiving the attacks of the swords. His gaze appeared vicious, mad, and regretful.

"Master, even though the tower spirit is weak, it's very difficult

for you to kill him with just your strength. Only Qing Suo and I can deal fatal wounds to him,” Zi Ying’s voice rang through Jian Chen’s head.

Jian Chen gazed at the hole to the third floor, which appeared with the boy’s death. He did not show any happiness at all and frowned instead.

“The body of the artifact spirit has been split into nine fragments by the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt. They guard the nine floors of the tower. The one on the first floor is the weakest, and the one on the ninth floor is the strongest. We’ve only arrived on the second floor and he’s already so difficult to deal with. I wonder just how powerful the artifact spirit will be once I reach the ninth floor. He’ll probably be very hard to deal with with just my strength.” Jian Chen revealed his worries. He needed to advance to the ninth floor to obtain the Anatta Tower, or all of his progress was pointless.

Originally, Jian Chen planned on looking for some things left behind by the Anatta Grand Prime in the Anatta Tower, but after going through the first two floors, he understood that everything that had been stored on the floors, no matter how valuable, had been destroyed when the tower became damaged. They had been reduced to dust. Probably only the items that the Anatta Grand Prime had devoted special effort to store away would still be in perfect condition.

“Master, using the tower spirit’s strength from the first and second floors, the tower spirit on the ninth floor will indeed be much stronger than master. Unless master uses all that he has, it’s impossible for you to be his opponent with your current strength,” Zi Ying said rather sternly.

“It’s just a pity that the tower spirit doesn’t want to yield to master, or it would have been much easier to obtain this tower, but don’t despair, master. Even if you can’t attempt the ninth floor right now, even the ninth floor won’t be able to stop you soon,”

said Qing Suo.

Jian Chen fell silent. The tunnel to the World of Forsaken Saints on the Tian Yuan Continent was stabilizing and there was nothing he could do about it. Eventually the tunnel would be tough enough to withstand the passage of Returnance experts. He wanted to try all the options available to increase his strength, and it was extremely likely that a great fortune was hidden within the Anatta Tower, which was why he did not want to give up on it yet.

At the same time, Jian Chen was not completely confident he could survive the next battle against the foreign world, so this would likely be the final adventure of his life. He wanted to try his best to gain control of the Anatta Tower. He would not feel regretful even if there was no great fortune like he had imagined.

Suddenly, Jian Chen seemed to think of something. His eyes gradually lit up as he said, “Maybe it’s not completely impossible. The sword Qi that the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt’s left around the Anatta Tower still exists even after countless years. This sword Qi has probably already gained spirituality now. Maybe I can ask them for help.”

The sword spirits were stunned. They had never thought that Jian Chen would actually try to seek help from the sword Qi. Zi Ying shook his head. “Master, that’s impossible. The sword Qi may now possess spirituality, but they also possess the will of the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt. The will he left behind for the sword Qi was to suppress and seal. It’s basically impossible to get the sword Qi to abandon the will of the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt and get them to help you.”

Chapter 1484: Intelligent Sword Qi

“Even if it might not work, I still have to try.” Jian Chen made up his mind. He did not rush off to the third floor and instead arrived near a boundary of the second floor. A thirty-thousand-meter-long sword Qi hung in the shattered space and would remain there for all of eternity.

It was the Sword of Mortality, which possessed one of the ways comprehended by the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt. The sword possessed the power to destroy the foundations of immortals and prevent them from becoming an immortal ever again.

“Back then, your master was unable to destroy the Anatta Tower, so he left you, the Sword of Mortality, here to suppress the tower. He also split the artifact spirit into nine fragments and then sealed them on each floor of the tower. The artifact spirit has become extremely weak after so many years of suppression. Junior managed to slay the artifact spirit on the first and second floors, but the artifact spirits will only get stronger the higher I go. With my current strength, it will be very difficult for me to reach the ninth floor, and without killing the artifact spirit on the ninth floor, the spirit will never really die off. I hope you can assist me. Help this junior battle against the artifact spirit of the Anatta Tower and completely eliminate him, thus completing one of your master’s wishes. At the same time, the Anatta Tower of the Saints’ World will become an item of our Immortals’ World.” Jian Chen stared at the huge sword in the air and sincerely pleaded with it.

The sword hung quietly in the dark space. It did not give off any movements or sound. Although it was only a strand of sword Qi, it had gained a certain level of spirituality after so many years.

Jian Chen waited for quite a long time. After not receiving a response from the Sword of Mortality, he used his comprehension of the Way of the Sword in an attempt to resonate with the sword Qi. He did not attempt to comprehend the will of a Sword God that

existed within the sword Qi. All he wanted to do was gain its recognition and treat him as one of its own.

This was because the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt also comprehended the Way of the Sword. Jian Chen walked the same path of cultivation as the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt. There were probably many sword immortals who comprehended the Way of the Sword in the Immortals' World, so the cultivation path he took probably did not matter much at all, but it filled Jian Chen with some hope.

The Sword of Mortality still did not respond. It remained within the darkness, like how it had been before.

Jian Chen attempted many other methods, but they all resulted in failure. In the end, he stayed there for three days and only left after seeing that nothing he did had any effect.

However, Jian Chen did not give up. The sword Qi in the tower had developed intelligence, so he firmly believed that the sword Qi could understand what he was saying.

Jian Chen soon arrived before a second illusory sword on the second floor. It was the Sword of Reincarnation, which also possessed one of the ways comprehended by the Nirvanic Sword Immortal. It could send immortals into an endless cycle of rebirth, which they could never break free from.

Jian Chen repeated what he had said to the first sword and then tried many other methods as well, but the results were the same. He did not receive a response at all.

Three days later, Jian Chen left and arrived before the Sword of Slaughter. The outcome was the same as the two swords from before.

Jian Chen also remained there for three days before advancing to the fourth sword of the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt, the Sword of Severance.

After another three days, Jian Chen left, dejected. He returned to the first floor of the tower with some regret and advanced toward the four boundaries in a similar fashion.

Twelve days later, Jian Chen had visited all the swords on the first floor, but the outcome was still disappointing. Although the four strands of sword Qi possessed intelligence, they paid no attention to Jian Chen at all. They did not respond to him.

“Was I wrong? These strands of sword Qi may possess spirituality, but they don’t seem to be as intelligent as I thought they’d be. They can’t understand my intentions, or maybe they do understand my intentions, but they can only remain in place, suppressing the Anatta Tower because of the Nirvanic Sword Exalt’s will and can’t assist me in fighting the artifact spirit.” Jian Chen murmured as despair flooded his face. He could not help but begin to suspect he was hoping for too much. After all, they were only strands of sword Qi left behind by the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt.

“There’s another one hundred and eight sword slashes outside the tower. Even though each slash is only a few inches long, I can tell that the sword Qi within each slash is even more powerful than the thirty-thousand-meter-long strands of sword Qi in the Anatta Tower. They might possess greater spirituality. It doesn’t matter if I end up failing, but I need to give it a try,” Jian Chen thought. Determination flowed through his eyes. He immediately dismissed his thought and exited the Anatta Tower.

One hundred and eight sword slashes were deeply embedded in the outside walls of the Anatta Tower. Each slash flickered with light and radiated with surging sword Qi. Thirty-six illusory swords were projected from thirty-six sword slashes. They slowly revolved around the tower.

Jian Chen stared at the sword slashes as he stood outside. The glow from the slashes seemed to be playing tricks, as if a figure sat within the light, as if the slashes bore life.

“I can clearly sense that the sword slashes are all much more powerful than the four swords I saw within the tower. At the same time, the spirituality of the sword slashes are far greater than the four illusory swords in the tower,” Jian Chen mumbled as he stared at the thirty-six swords that revolved around the tower.

He could tell that the thirty-six swords were composed of the Sword of Mortality, the Sword of Reincarnation, the Sword of Slaughter and the Sword of Severance. There were nine of each.

Jian Chen slowly shifted his gaze up and discovered that the hundred and eight slashes became brighter the further up he looked. At the same time, they decreased in number as well. When he saw the eight slashes on the seventh floor, the light they let out was extremely blinding. They were radiating with an invisible sword Qi. It shook his mind and caused it to leap in fright.

There were also eight slashes on the eighth floor, but the eight slashes were far more powerful than the ones on the seventh floor. Each slash seemed to contain a miniature sun. Their sword intent was just shocking. Jian Chen dared not to stare at them for too long.

However, when Jian Chen glanced at the ninth floor, he suddenly became stunned. He only saw four sword slashes on the ninth floor, but the slashes were not as radiant nor powerful as he had imagined. Instead, they were dull and did not give off any sense of spirituality at all. Jian Chen only saw four empty sword slashes.

“Have the four strands of sword Qi vanished?” Jian Chen was taken aback. He knew that there had definitely been strands of shocking sword Qi within the slashes. The remnant of the marks on the tower proved his point. However, for some reason, the four strands of sword Qi that were supposed to be the most powerful had suddenly disappeared.

Jian Chen did not think about it too much about. He slowly rose

up and utilized his comprehension of Sword Origin, radiating with his own will in an attempt to communicate with the sword slashes and resonate with them. Jian Chen would have never tried this if the sword slashes did not possess spirituality, but they did. Jian Chen believed the sword slashes could understand him and his intentions. The only difference was whether they wanted to assist him or not.

Jian Chen slowly rose up, passing by the first and second floor before continuing to the third and fourth floor. However, the sword slashes did not respond without any exceptions.

Jian Chen sighed inside. He had guessed that it would turn out like this, but he did not give up. He gritted his teeth and slowly continued up.

Very soon, he reached the seventh and eighth floors. The sword slashes there did not respond either. The slashes glowed with a dazzling light and were teeming with spirituality, but they completely ignored him.

Jian Chen became even more disappointed. He was unwilling to go to the ninth floor because only empty slashes remained. To him, it would be useless even if he went to that level. However, what Jian Chen failed to notice was that weak strands of his presence were drifting away, headed toward the four empty slashes on the ninth floor before being absorbed by them.

Jian Chen slowly descended. Just when he had arrived near the seventh floor, the empty slashes on the ninth floor actually radiated with strand of sword Qi. The sword Qi was not very powerful, nowhere near as great as the slashes on the eighth floor, but they caused Jian Chen to come to a halt. He raised his head and stared at the empty sword slashes in anticipation.

The four slashes grew brighter and brighter, becoming very dazzling. They glowed like miniature suns, dying the entire world a snow white hue. Although most of the sword Qi within the

slashes and their spirituality had vanished for some reason, there was still slivers of weak sword Qi. The sword Qi was insignificant compared to the eighth floor, seventh floor, and the floors beneath. They did not even seem to be able to take part in the suppression of the tower.

However, at that moment, the remnant sword Qi within the empty slashes rapidly condensed together, creating a blinding light.

The light lasted for half a minute. When the white light from the slashes disappeared, the four slashes on the ninth floor completely dulled, having been reduced to four deep marks. Before them were four, small swords that glowed with a faint white light. The swords were only the size of a hand, exquisitely crafted, and crystal clear.

The four sword Qi gradually descended before arriving in front of Jian Chen.

Jian Chen stared at the four small swords and gradually became excited. The swords were small, but Jian Chen could sense a power that cause him to shiver. Any single one of them could erupt with power far greater than his full strength.

Chapter 1485: Reciprocity Sword Qi

“Xiao Ling’s strength is at Returnance, so I’ve personally witness the power at Returnance. However, the vague presence from these four small swords is far more powerful than Xiao Ling. Have the power of these swords reached Reciprocity?” Jian Chen’s eyes grew brighter and brighter as he silently sensed the terrifying sword Qi within the four swords. In the end, his heart even began to beat harder.

“Fantastic! With these four strands of sword Qi, I have a high chance of killing the tower spirit,” Jian Chen murmured excitedly. He then thought about the threat of the foreign world and began to hesitate.

“These four sword Qi exhibit the power at Reciprocity. If I use these four strands of sword Qi to deal with the experts from the World of Forsaken Saints, I’ll be able to kill four Returnance experts at the very least, possibly more, even if they can’t harm the Spiritking,” Jian Chen hesitated. He had come to the Anatta Tower primarily to increase his own strength to deal with the foreign world. However, now that he had obtained these four strands of sword Qi, he was stuck in a dilemma. He was not sure if he should use the sword Qi to deal with the tower spirit and obtain the Anatta Tower or just it to deal with the foreign experts.

However, Jian Chen made up his mind. He said, “I originally only asked these strands of sword Qi to kill the tower spirit, so if I use these four strands of sword Qi to deal with the experts of the World of Forsaken Saints, I would be going back on my word. These four strands of sword Qi might even disperse, no longer assisting me.”

Jian Chen no longer wavered. His eyes became determined as he slowly raised his hand, planning on storing the sword Qi in his Space Ring.

However, to his surprise, the sword Qi immediately disappeared into his hand the moment he touched them. The image of four small swords appeared on his right arm.

Jian Chen silently sensed his arm. He could clearly feel the existence of the four small swords, but the four swords no longer seemed tangible to him. Instead, they were four illusory strands of sword Qi and possessed a faint connection to his conscience. Jian Chen discovered that he could actually use the four strands of sword Qi as he wished through this connection.

“The sword Qi have already gained spirituality and intelligence. They possess their own lives and are no longer just strands of sword Qi,” Jian Chen sighed in surprise. He was not sure whether it was because of the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt’s supreme strength or him comprehending Sword God that allowed his sword Qi to become spirits after many years.

Jian Chen left the area with the four sword Qi and entered the Anatta Tower again. Very soon, he passed through the second floor and arrived on the third.

When he had reached the third floor, before he could gain his bearings, a terrifying killing intent appeared behind him, forcing his muscles to tense up. At the same time, he emitted a bright glow, created from his comprehension of the Way of the Sword, which wrapped around him. Jian Chen then took a step to the side on instinct. He vanished from where he was with that single step, reappearing a hundred meters away as if he had just teleported.

Jian Chen had completed all those actions smoothly and in a single moment. His reaction speed was superhuman.

Right after Jian Chen had dodged, an ear-piercing whistle appeared where he had been standing. A tiny tower had passed by as a blur, radiating with an overwhelming presence of destruction. The space the tower touched twisted slightly. To no surprise, the red-robed boy hovered behind where Jian Chen had appeared

before. The gaze he sent toward Jian Chen was full of anger and seemed be full of fear at times, but that fear would quickly be replaced by wild killing intent.

Killing intent flashed through Jian Chen's eyes. With a thought, the Zi Ying Sword shot toward the red-robed boy as a streak of violet light. The Zi Ying Sword crossed several hundred meters and arrived before the boy in a single moment.

However, the boy did not pay any attention to the sword this time. He only stared at Jian Chen. Suddenly, he vanished, causing the Zi Ying Sword to miss.

Jian Chen became alert the same moment the boy vanished. He extended his finger backward all of a sudden and the Qing Suo Sword immediately flew from his back, in the direction of where Jian Chen had pointed.

With a boom, the boy had appeared behind Jian Chen and used the miniature tower in his hand to strike the Qing Suo Sword. The powerful ripple of energy emitted from the collision caused Jian Chen to stagger back.

"His clone on the third floor is slightly stronger than the second floor, but it's still limited. Killing him here will not be difficult," Jian Chen thought. From the clash before, he had determined the strength of the boy.

"Freeze, world!" Suddenly, the boy yelled and the power of the Anatta Tower on the third floor immediately began to surge. It seemed like a law had been created, attempting to shackle time itself.

Jian Chen's face changed slightly. He had personally experienced this technique before. It was not as simple as freezing space. Not only could it trap him, but even the Azulet swords were not able to avoid it. He would only remain frozen for a short instance, but that was more than enough time to completely change the situation.

“Sky-severing Strike!” Before the boy could complete his technique, Jian Chen formed a seal with his hand and used a sword technique as quickly as he could.

The sword spirits had passed this sword technique onto him. It belonged to the Immortals’ World and even though it was only a basic skill, its power far exceeded any Saint Tier Battle Skill. Jian Chen could erupt with power far greater than his peak when he used it.

The Zi Ying Sword immediately lit up as soon as Jian Chen stopped speaking and became a hundred meters long in a single moment. It radiated with a mysterious power. The region enveloped by the violet light had become a whole different domain. To no surprise, the boy stood in the domain as well.

Jian Chen was completely unaffected in the domain, but to the boy’s surprise, he was completely immobilized.

“Sword Domain! God dammit, you want to trap me with a mere Sword Domain! If I wasn’t so weak, just a breath from me is enough to shatter this Sword Domain.” The boy was furious. He was ashamed to be trapped in such a weak domain.

As soon as the Sword Domain formed, the technique used by the boy descended as well, clashing with the Sword Domain. It immediately caused the area around them to distort, showing signs of shattering.

Jian Chen narrowed his eyes. Without any hesitation, he suddenly extended his finger, taking advantage of the moment the boy was trapped. The hundred-meter-long sword immediately fell toward the boy.

Boom!

The strike was extraordinarily powerful. After passing through the red-robed boy, the Zi Ying Sword did not slow down at all. It continued toward the ground and immediately erupts with a great

boom. The entire ground rumbled and dust was kicked into the air, obscuring the sun.

The boy cried out painfully and immediately began to fade. Describing the strike as devastating was no exaggeration. It had even been imbued with Jian Chen's comprehension of the Way of the Sword. It possessed a sliver of power from laws, the power of ways. Even though the power was extremely puny right now, its strength was evident. The boy had almost dispersed after withstanding such a strike.

"I will never let things be easy for you even if I have to destroy this body!" The boy roared. He became determined as a flame suddenly rose from his illusory body. Within the flames, the boy's body gradually faded while his presence skyrocketed, becoming more and more powerful.

Jian Chen became stern. He knew that the boy was using a secret technique to sacrifice himself to obtain greater power. Just when Jian Chen moved to stop him, the boy's figure completely dissolved in the flames. Only a tiny tower hovered where the boy had been, radiating with terrifying pulses of energy.

Swish!

The tower turned into an afterimage as it shot toward Jian Chen with an ear-piercing whistle. A destructive presence permeated its surroundings, causing even Jian Chen's expression to change.

He knew that this destructive presence was a type of law, the power of a way. Even though the power the child had condensed was not extremely intense, it was still a large threat to Jian Chen. At the same time, the boy had burned his body in exchange for the strike. It was unimaginably powerful.

Jian Chen became extremely stern. The tower had already locked onto him, so it was impossible for him to dodge it. In that dangerous moment, Jian Chen used his finger as a sword and pointed at the Qing Suo Sword. He cried out, "Spiral sword Qi!"

The Qing Suo Sword immediately began to shine, transforming into a streak of azure light and arriving before Jian Chen's chest. The entire sword began to spin like a wheel with the hilt as the center. It spun so fast that it turned into a flurry in just a short moment. It released azure waves, which began to cause the space in front of it to oscillate, as if it had become thick.

At the same time, the Zi Ying Sword flew toward the tiny tower as a violet streak of light, colliding with it violently and emitting a great boom.

The Zi Ying Sword was knocked far away, but the tower did not waver at all. It remained locked onto Jian Chen's presence and surged toward him with an unstoppable motion. When it entered the rings of azure waves from the Qing Suo Sword, it immediately began to slow down. The power in the tower was actually dissipating at an unbelievable speed.

Not only did the waves created by the azure sword slow down the tower, but they rapidly wore the tower down. However, the tower still moved at an unbelievable speed even though it had slowed down, instantly striking the spinning sword.

The Qing Suo Sword was also knocked far away and stopped spinning. The waves immediately vanished. The tower had encountered two obstacles by now and was only half as powerful as it had been initially. Afterward, with its tip at the front, it passed through Jian Chen's chest.

Jian Chen violently trembled as he staggered back. His face instantly paled, and a bowl-sized cavity had appeared in his chest.

Chapter 1486: Through to the Eighth Floor

Jian Chen spat blood from his mouth as his body continued to tremble. The flesh near his wound was dissolving at a visible rate, turning into pools of blood.

The tiny tower had deposited a strand of power that came from a law in his wound when it pierced through his body. The power was filled with destruction, constantly wreaking havoc on Jian Chen's body. If it were not for the fact that Jian Chen's Chaotic Body was extraordinarily tough and had stunted the rate of destruction, probably half of his body would have been eaten away by now.

The last portion of power within the tiny tower had dispersed after piercing Jian Chen. The tower itself then began to disperse, immediately releasing the path to the fourth floor.

However, Jian Chen was currently enduring intense pain. The sliver of destruction deposited into his body by the last attack was constantly gnawing away at his body, causing the flesh near his wound to gradually vanish, as if millions of ants were eating away at it. Even though his Chaotic Force was extraordinary, it was not enough to stop the spreading destruction.

After all, he did not possess true Chaotic Force. Just the Chaotic Force of the fifth layer was not enough to resist the power of laws.

Suddenly, Jian Chen roared out while he endured the pain. The roar shook the surroundings and endless white light immediately condensed. He was currently condensing sword Qi near his chest, using the Way of the Sword to resist the power of a law in his wound.

The power of a law in his wound immediately came to a standstill with the addition of the power from the Way of the Sword. These two laws immediately became locked in an intense battle, and in the end, the destructive presence from the artifact spirit ran out of steam and was destroyed by Jian Chen's Way of the Sword.

Jian Chen finally let out a breath of relief after purging the power of a law from his body. The bowl-sized hole in his chest had doubled in size, taking up most of his chest. The organs and flesh in the hole had disappeared.

Even though he was very heavily injured, Jian Chen still stood there firmly like a mountain. He was still brimming with life after such injuries because of the power of Chaotic Force. Only his face was pale.

“It’s been quite some time since I’ve suffered such a severe wound. The power of laws sure is terrifying. I need to act more careful during future battles against the artifact spirit,” Jian Chen murmured to himself before immediately sitting down. He used the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force to heal his wounds.

Jian Chen made a full recovery in less than a single minute. The missing flesh in his chest had completely regrown, and he had returned to his peak condition.

After changing into a set of fresh clothes, Jian Chen stepped into the fourth floor with the two swords on his back. The fourth floor was an endless expanse of mountains and rivers. Jian Chen discovered many withered heavenly resources and the remnants of extremely valuable medicines. Basically the entire place was covered with them. It was basically a medicinal garden.

But, to his disappointment, the medicines had all been destroyed. Even though the huge expanse had once been covered with invaluable medicinal herbs, none of them remained.

Jian Chen also experienced an intense battle against the artifact spirit on the fourth floor. The artifact spirit here was slightly stronger than the previous floor as well. Jian Chen managed to emerge victorious in the end, but he also suffered from even heavier injuries.

Jian Chen recovered from his wounds and soon advanced to the fifth floor. Clearly, the Anatta Grand Prime raised many valuable

and rare beasts on the fifth floor. Huge skeletons loomed everywhere, and there were quite a few that were over ten thousand meters long. Even though they had been dead for quite some time, Jian Chen could still sense a tremendous pressure emanating from the skeletons. The pressure was still suffocating even after all this time. He found it difficult to imagine just how powerful these beasts once were.

At the same time, the skeletons had not been eroded away. They remained as tough as stone, but all of them were destroyed during the battle that occurred against the artifact spirit.

When Jian Chen finally slew the artifact spirit, he was missing an arm and a portion of his body was destroyed. He emerged victorious only after paying a heavy price. The artifact spirit on the fifth floor possessed a strength no less than late Returnance. Coupled with the power of the destructive laws he could control, his battle prowess approached Reciprocity.

Jian Chen courageously continuing on, making his way through the sixth and seventh floors. The artifact spirits on these two floors possessed strength on par with Reciprocity. If it were not for the suppression of the four swords within the tower, these two fragments probably could have erupted with strength at Godhood, even after having not recovered any strength for years.

Jian Chen was basically left with half a leg when he survived the sixth floor. He was extremely heavily injured and only managed to kill the artifact spirit after several hours of battle.

Jian Chen had used everything he had when he attempted the seventh floor. Not only did he equip the Primordial Godsilk, he even used a strand of the sword Qi from the Sword of Mortality on his arm. Only then did he finally slay the artifact spirit. If he had not used that sword Qi, he probably would have been done in.

But, to his joy, the four strands of sword Qi could be used more than once. However, he estimated that each strand of sword Qi

could only display the might of someone at Reciprocity three times, and after those three times were up, their power would weaken and they would only be able to erupt with the power of someone at Returnance. The sword Qi would weaken with further uses before dispersing completely.

Although the Primordial Godsilk was not strong enough to take on Origin realm attacks for Jian Chen, its toughness was still unprecedented. With the protection of the Godsilk, Jian Chen was able to endure having his body pierced. However, he still had to endure the intense force, which he found rather difficult even though his Chaotic Body was at the fifth layer.

When he moved onto the eighth floor, he took off the Primordial Godsilk without any hesitation. Although it would protect him and prevent his body from being pierced, the strength of the artifact spirit on the eighth floor was probably enough to shake his body to pieces while wearing the silkmail.

The artifact spirit on the eighth floor was even more vicious and insane with hidden fear for Jian Chen. The fear was so deep that it had reached his spirit.

This was already the eighth floor. Along the way, Jian Chen had slain seven other fragments of the artifact spirit. If the artifact spirit on this floor was killed, there was only a single fragment left on the ninth floor. Once the fragment on the ninth floor was destroyed, the artifact spirit would truly disappear. He was unwilling to take the risk of leaving it all up to his fragment on the ninth floor even though he was more powerful there.

At this moment, the artifact spirit felt an unprecedented threat. The danger of dying was so powerful that it was countless times greater than what the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt had made him feel.

When he faced the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt in the past, he was in his peak condition and being described as immortal was no exaggeration at all, but he was not the Immortal Exalt's opponent.

Coupled with the Anatta Grand Prime, the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt was unable to kill him, only managing to suppress and seal him away. However, after so much time, not only had he failed to recover at all, but he was still growing weaker and weaker due to the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt's suppression and seals. He was coming close to running out of power, so if he was slain now, it would mean true death.

After all, he was unable to achieve what the Azulet sword spirits possessed, which was true immortality.

"It is already a great honor for you to be able to arrive on the eighth floor. This is where you will be buried today. You will never get the chance to reach the ninth floor. You will die here today, and I will be the one responsible for your death," the red-robed boy yelled at Jian Chen. He hovered several hundred meters away from Jian Chen.

"Tower spirit, are you still too foolish to recognize the error of your ways? You will only die if you do not yield," Zi Ying appeared and tried to persuade the red-robed boy one last time.

However, the response he received was the soaring killing intent from the red-robed boy as well as a strike formed from destructive a law aimed at Jian Chen. With his arms stretched out, he gathered the power of the tower with great difficulty to use a secret technique. This time, the boy used all he had right from the start and did not hold back at all. He wanted to kill Jian Chen right here, right now.

Jian Chen was stern. The boy on the eighth floor was equivalent to experts at mid or late Reciprocity. Coupled with the power of the laws he could control, rarely anyone could be his match while at a similar cultivation level. It was impossible for Jian Chen to emerge victorious even if he used the Azulet swords. He would not even be able to counterattack.

Jian Chen's right hand immediately began to flicker with light

after he waved it. The Sword of Reincarnation hidden on his arm suddenly flew out, transforming into a streak of white light and shooting toward the boy at a speed that seemed to be able to pierce the fabric of space.

Soon afterward, Jian Chen swung his arm two more times, sending out sword Qi from the Sword of Slaughter and the Sword of Severance. He used three strands of sword Qi to deal with the red-robed boy on the eighth floor. Each strand of sword Qi moved at an indescribable speed. As if they were tearing through the limitations of distance, they arrived before the boy in a single moment.

The boy's expression drastically changed. His fragment on the seventh floor had experienced the sword Qi personally. Although its power was nowhere near the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt's strength, it was enough to deal fatal damage to him. At the same time, the sword Qi just happened to be able to move at an indescribably fast speed, so fast that the boy could not dodge them. All he could do was watch as they approached him.

The first strand of sword Qi collided with the power of destruction that the boy had sent out. Only a third of the initial sword Qi struck the boy, causing him to cry out miserably while his face distorted in agony.

Closely after the first, the second sword Qi passed through the boy's body, causing him to become partially transparent. The secret technique he was about to use was disrupted as well.

When the third sword Qi struck him, his figure immediately dispersed, reduced to a cloud of thin mist.

Chapter 1487: The Ninth Floor

Although the three strands of sword Qi were only equivalent to attacks at Reciprocity, the power of the Way of the Sword originated from the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt. Although the power had dropped below the level of Sword God due to how much time had passed and was no longer as great as it had been before, they strands of sword Qi were still more powerful than Sword Origin, so each strand of sword Qi possessed the power to kill ordinary Reciprocity experts.

Even the artifact spirit on the eighth floor was unable to endure the attack from three strands of sword Qi, so he began to collapse.

However, the red-robed boy did not die. The residual mist in the air began to surge and condense into the boy's figure once again. His figure was so faint that he was almost invisible. Even burning his body would not work this time.

"I never thought you'd have four strands of that Nirvanic bastard's sword Qi, not just one. However, the four strands of sword Qi just happen to match up to the four swords of that old bastard. Now that you've used all of them, I'd like to see how you will deal with me on the ninth floor. The ninth floor will be where you truly fall. I will be waiting for you there," the boy sneered.

Jian Chen said nothing. With a way of the Zi Ying Sword, he immediately shot out a strand of sword Qi and completely dispersed the red-robed boy's figure.

Jian Chen did not hurry to the ninth floor. Instead, he sat down on the eighth floor and recovered to his peak. After all, the most powerful fragment of the artifact spirit was on the ninth floor. It was extremely likely that that fragment had reached Godhood. Even though the four strands of sword Qi still possessed two uses at Reciprocity, Jian Chen was not completely confident they could kill the artifact spirit. It was extremely likely to be a vicious battle.

“If the tower spirit on the ninth floor really does possess strength at Godhood, I’ll probably be slain the first moment we start fighting even with the Azulet swords. With my current strength, I cannot even put up a struggle against a Godhood expert. However, the artifact spirit isn’t without weaknesses either. His greatest flaw is that he is unable to replenish the energy he consumes, so his power will only decrease during battle. At the same time, whenever he’s injured, his strength will fall. Therefore, I’ll use the four strands of sword Qi from the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt to heavily injure him the moment I step onto the ninth floor, causing his strength will fall. Once he becomes injured enough, his strength will fall below Godhood.”

Jian Chen sat on the ground with his eyes closed as he pondered his options. He simulated his next battle against the artifact spirit of the ninth floor time and time again. Jian Chen visualized and then analyzed the battle from all aspects. He even added in all the techniques that he knew the artifact spirit could use. The outcome he reached against the final artifact spirit was not necessarily defeat. It would all depend on how the four sword Qi were used.

“It’s a pity that I’ve used all these sword Qi once already and that they can only be used two more times. If they all could be used three times, my chances of victory could be as high as eighty percent.” Jian Chen sighed inside. He felt very helpless. The artifact spirit on the eighth floor was so powerful that it was almost impossible for him to deal with. If he had not used the sword Qi from the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt, he would not have been able to reach the ninth floor at all. He would have died on the eighth.

“But I still have a final trump card. It’s just that the price of this technique is just far too precious; even I cannot endure it. However, it’s the only thing I can do if I am at my wit’s end.” A gleam of light flashed through Jian Chen’s eyes. The fusion of the two swords was his final card to protect himself as well as the

technique he least wanted to use.

This time, Jian Chen stayed on the eighth floor for half a month. Not only did he make sure he was in top shape, but he even came up with many methods to deal with the final artifact spirit. He made all the preparations he could.

Jian Chen stood up and finally stepped onto the ninth floor.

Before Jian Chen could even make out his surroundings, he immediately moved in a flash, leaving the entry point in a single moment to prevent the possibility of an ambush from the artifact spirit.

Everything was tranquil. The dreary world of the ninth floor was terrifyingly silent. There were no signs of life at all. Jian Chen cautiously hovered in the sky as he vigilantly looked around. He felt rather surprised inside. The artifact spirit was not waiting at the entry to ambush him as he had expected.

“Is the artifact spirit so confident that he can deal with me that he doesn’t need to stoop so low and ambush me?” Jian Chen thought and immediately became rather stern.

At this moment, a smear of golden light appeared near the horizon in the distance. It illuminated a portion of the sky, forming quite a wondrous scene in this dreary world.

Jian Chen stared at the golden light and hesitated before flying over. The Zi Ying Sword and Qing Suo Sword hovered above Jian Chen’s head. Both of them flickered with light, ready to dish out an attack at a moment’s notice.

When Jian Chen arrived at the source of the golden light, he discovered an extremely vast palace. The palace was letting out a blinding light and gave off a terrifying pressure. It was slightly illusory, making whatever was behind it slightly visible. This palace was only a projection and not the real thing.

Jian Chen stared at the grand palace. Even though it was just a

projection, it felt like it was dominating Jian Chen, as if all the laws of the world were beneath it.

“The Heavenly Palace of Bisheng!” Jian Chen’s eyes landed on the huge plate above the main entrance of the palace. There were four words on the plate, and they seemed to possess the variations of the laws of the world. The mysteries of the world were infused into the words. He clearly did not recognize them, but in the moment his eyes landed on the plate, the name somehow appeared in his head.

“I’ll let you die before master’s world. That way, you can die without regret. Hahaha...” Wild laughter rang out and the red-robed boy charged out of the palace, heading toward Jian Chen as a blur. The pressure he gave off was so powerful that Jian Chen felt like he was shouldering a mountain. Jian Chen’s movements had become rather slow while the presence of death spread through his head. He was greatly shocked.

Currently, the strength of the boy made Jian Chen feel like he was facing an apocalypse.

Jian Chen’s eyes lit up, and with a wave of his hand, he used the four strands of sword Qi from the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt. However, he seemed to see an odd smile that was barely visible on the boy’s face at this moment.

Jian Chen’s eyes suddenly narrowed due to the smile. At this crucial moment, Jian Chen seemed to sense something. His hand continued along the same trajectory as before, but he shot out four small swords transformed from regular sword Qi instead of the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt’s sword Qi. He imbued the sword Qi with the presence of the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt’s Way of the Sword so that they seemed just like the sword Qi that the Immortal Exalt had left behind.

As soon as Jian Chen sent out the four strands of sword Qi, he swung his hand again and shot out four more similar strands of

sword Qi. He sent a total of eight strands of sword Qi contaminated with the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt's presence toward the boy at the same time.

However, he did not stop there. After shooting out the eight strands of sword Qi, Jian Chen then began to use his own sword technique. The Zi Ying Sword immediately became a hundred meters long and the Sword Domain emerged, transforming the region enveloped to a whole different domain. It trapped the red-robed boy.

The boy came to a halt. He was frozen, having been immobilized by the power of the Sword Domain.

The eight strands of sword Qi with the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt's presence arrived with unbelievable speed and passed through the boy almost simultaneously. Soon afterward, the hundred-meter-long Zi Ying Sword also cleaved down on the boy, splitting him into two.

The boy rapidly disappeared, but he did not show any signs of pain or regret at all. Instead, he just smiled, oddly.

Jian Chen stared at the disappearing boy in shock. His face immediately became extremely ugly as he exclaimed with a sunken face, "That's fake. It's not the real thing!"

"Hahaha, that's right. That wasn't my true body just then, but a clone I condensed from energy. It's just a pity that you realized too late." A familiar voice rang out from nearby as soon as Jian Chen finished speaking. Another red-robed boy suddenly appeared, walking over from the side of the palace. He had hid himself there, using the pressure of the palace to conceal his own presence and trick the sword spirits.

"Just as I had expected. You actually still have the sword Qi from that old Nirvanic bastard. If it wasn't for the fact that I was cautious and condensed a clone to test you, I would have been heavily injured already. However, now that you've used up all your

sword Qi, I'd like to see what you'll use to take me on. Killing you will only take a single move. So what about how forbidden you'll become in the future. You'll still die in my hands," the boy sneered. He suddenly pushed his right hand toward Jian Chen and an ancient tower immediately condensed over Jian Chen. The tower was several dozen meters tall and appeared exactly the same as the Anatta Tower. It radiated with a presence that made Jian Chen lose his courage to battle. It loudly fell toward Jian Chen.

Suddenly, an extremely terrifying pressure appeared from the tower, completely immobilizing Jian Chen. His feet were pushed into the ground by the pressure while all his bones creaked, as if they were about to break from the load.

The tower above was filled with the destructive power of a law. The power had far exceeded anything Jian Chen had seen on the floors below.

Jian Chen became extremely stern. His presence exploded, and with a flash of light through his eyes, the Zi Ying Sword immediately shot toward the tower in the sky. Jian Chen formed a seal with his right hand and the Qing Suo Sword began to use its spiral sword Qi, producing rings of azure waves in an attempt to weaken the tower's power.

Chapter 1488: Scheme

Boom!

The Zi Ying Sword collided with the tower and a rumble could be, but it struggled to stop the tower. The Zi Ying Sword was knocked to the ground, creating a huge hole. It was deeply buried in the ground.

The tower did not slow down at all. It continued to fall toward Jian Chen with the destructive power of a law. Only when it came in contact with the sword Qi from the Qing Suo Sword did it slow down slightly. The waves gently wrapped around the tower, disappearing into the surroundings with slivers of the tower's power. The tower was rapidly weakening within the waves.

But this process lasted less than a second before the tower passed through the waves. It landed on the Qing Suo Sword.

The Qing Suo Sword thrummed and was sent into the ground just like the Zi Ying Sword. The spiral sword Qi used to weaken the tower immediately collapsed.

By now, the tower was only a few meters above Jian Chen.

Jian Chen seemed to lose his mind. Having lost the Azulet swords, all he could rely on was his own power to stop the tower. He furiously roared out and coated himself with light. He imbued his fists with both Chaotic Force and the power of the Way of the Sword before hurling them at the tower.

Bang!

With a heavy sound, Jian Chen struck the tower as hard as he could with his fists. His body immediately jerked as blood spurted from his mouth. His hands, which had come in contact, with the tower were reduced to a bloody mess. The sound of bones breaking was barely audible.

Jian Chen's hands fell powerlessly to his sides. All his bones in

them had been shattered, no longer able to support raising them. On the other hand, the tower was only three inches away from his head now. However, after the several obstacles, there was not much power left in the tower either.

Jian Chen lay down on the floor and used his entire body to withstand the final strike from the tower. He did it to avoid injuries to his head, allowing his soul to emerge unscathed.

Boom!

The tower viciously struck the ground. A terrifying force caused the entire floor to shake and rumble.

Jian Chen's entire body was a bloody mess, having been distorted by the previous attack. He lay on the ground powerlessly, and within him, the destructive power of a law had infiltrated his body and was constantly wreaking havoc.

Jian Chen was heavily injured. All his bones had been shattered. Not an inch of his body was without wounds. Even standing up became impossible. However, he was still brimming with life after suffering such severe injuries.

Sensing the power of the laws that were wreaking havoc within him, the four strands of sword Qi, from the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt, hidden on his arm all suddenly released with a weak strands of sword Qi the moment Jian Chen wanted to condense the power of the Way of the Sword. The slivers of sword Qi within him did not cause him any harm and instead entered his chest through his arm. They quickly spread through his entire body. Wherever they passed by, the destructive powers in Jian Chen would disperse.

Very soon, all the destructive power in Jian Chen's body had been purged with the assistance of the four strands of sword Qi. In the end, the slivers of sword Qi dispersed by themselves due to being completely expended.

However, Jian Chen's eyes narrowed when the slivers of sword

Qi dispersed. He could clearly sense that they deposited specks of light, like starlight, within him. As soon as he used his conscience to sense what they were, the comprehension of the Way of the Sword appeared in Jian Chen's head.

"The Way of the Sword!" Jian Chen's eyes grew brighter. They were filled with excitement and joy. Even though he was heavily injured, his heart began to beat uncontrollably.

"The dispersion of the four slivers of sword Qi have actually left mysterious specks of light containing the comprehension of the Way of the Sword in my body. If I absorb them, they'll definitely help me a bunch," thought Jian Chen. However, he also understood that now was not the time to comprehend the Way of the Sword. With a thought, gentle, white light immediately enveloped his body. As he bathed in the light, Jian Chen's wounds closed up at a visible rate, which was just astounding.

Meanwhile, strands of Chaotic Force surged around Jian Chen's body. He pushed the regenerative properties of the Chaotic Body to the limit. He was healing as fast as he could using Radiant Saint Force origin energy and Chaotic Force.

The ten-meter-tall tower dispersed after expending all its power during the strike. Along with the tower, the figure of the red-robed boy vanished as well.

"You really don't have that old bastard's sword Qi anymore!" The red-robed boy's voice rang out. From behind the illusionary palace, another red-robed boy emerged. The presence he gave off was even more tremendous than the two from earlier.

The boy was extremely fearful of the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt's sword Qi. In order to waste all the sword Qi in Jian Chen, he had used his first clone, but he was still worried that Jian Chen would conceal some of the sword Qi, so he used another clone. He had used energy to condense both clones and the second clone had consumed a large amount in order to make his second clone appear

exactly the same as his original body both in strength and presence. Although the clone was only able to deal a single strike at late Reciprocity, the boy believed that the second clone was enough to test if Jian Chen still had any sword Qi left from the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt.

The boy finally confirmed that Jian Chen had used up all the sword Qi he had with him. He stared at Jian Chen who currently lay on the ground as mince meat.

“I had to pay a very great price to condense a clone while under that old bastard’s suppression. I won’t be able to recover from it. If it wasn’t for testing whether you still had that old bastard’s sword Qi, I really would have been unwilling to any waste clones on him. However, he no longer has anymore sword Qi, so it’s time to take his life.” The boy smiled victoriously and slowly made his way to Jian Chen. He immediately began to radiate with an indescribably tremendous sword Qi. It was several times more powerful than the presence of his second clone. The figure of a tower had condensed above the boy at the same time.

As soon as the tower appeared, the surroundings changed while the wind and clouds churned. The laws of the world seemed rather disturbed while in the presence of the tower. The tower seemed to contain both Laws of Destruction and Creation, and between those two laws, there seemed to be the scorching and violent Laws of Fire.

The Anatta Tower that the boy had just condensed actually possess the power of three laws.

However, the red-robed boy was only able to use a sliver of power from the Laws of Destruction among the three laws because the tower was damaged and no longer complete.

At that moment, the boy seemed to have witnessed Jian Chen’s death. He could not help but laugh aloud, “So what if you’ll become something impossible in the future? You still haven’t

matured. Today, I'll kill this impossible thing with my own bare hands." With that, the boy extended a finger toward Jian Chen and a dark light immediately condensed from the illusionary tower. It shot toward Jian Chen as a dark streak of light.

"In my prime, just a single strike was enough to obliterate a whole section of the universe. My strength has been greatly reduced now, but it's still an honor for you to die to this attack." The boy chuckled.

However, just as the black streak of light shot toward Jian Chen with the power from the Laws of Destruction, a terrifying sword Qi, enough to cause the boy to shiver, suddenly appeared. On Jian Chen's arm, eight strands of sword Qi shot out in a single moment. Each strand of sword Qi was extremely powerful and also possessed the power of laws, the laws from the Way of the Sword.

"That old bastard's sword Qi! How can you still have it! Bastard, you still have his sword Qi! Were you willing to die instead of using them?" The boy's expression drastically changed. Disbelief flooded his face.

The strands of sword Qi moved extremely quick, as if they could pierce through space. They completely exceeded the speed of the dark light.

The first strand of sword Qi collided with the dark light. It silently dispersed. The power of the dark light was far greater than any of the sword Qi, but after being obstructed, the light paused and slightly slowed down. The seven other strands of sword Qi all shot toward the red-robed boy. Their supreme speed locked the red-robed boy out of all options of dodging or blocking them.

In a single moment, all seven sword Qi passed through the boy, causing him to produce a chilling shriek. His face became extremely vicious and fearful. It was fear for the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt.

Even though the boy was extremely powerful on the ninth floor,

having reached Godhood, the seven strands of sword Qi at the level of Reciprocity possessed the power of laws from the Way of the Sword, enough to deal fatal injuries to him. The boy immediately began to fade and shriek after being hit, having almost been dispersed by the sword Qi all together.

Even though the boy did not disperse, his presence began to leak from him like a deflating balloon after suffering these fatal wounds. It rapidly weakened, dropping below Godhood in the blink of an eye. Slivers of sword Qi seemed to have been deposited in his illusionary body, causing the boy's face to distort in pain. He constantly shrieked as his body trembled.

The entire process happened in a single moment. The sword Qi moved extremely quickly, injuring the boy more. However, the dark streak of light from the tower was moving closer and closer to Jian Chen.

Chapter 1489: Immortal Emperor's Essence Blood

With a flash of violet light in a crucial moment, the Zi Ying Sword tore free from the ground and stopped in front of the dark light.

Ding!

The dark light loudly struck the Zi Ying Sword, and it was blown far away with a clear sound. The dark light still had not dispersed as it continued toward Jian Chen.

With a flash of azure light, the Qing Suo Sword emerged from the ground as well. It stopped in front of the light just like the Zi Ying Sword. It was knocked flying with a clear thrum as well.

The several obstacles that stopped the dark light helped Jian Chen earn some valuable time. Right now, he had mostly recovered due to his Radiant Saint Force origin energy and Chaotic Force. All his bones had been reconnected. He endured the agonizing pain and immediately leaped up. He left behind a blur and reappeared a hundred meters away.

Boom! As soon as Jian Chen had moved away, the dark light struck where he had lay. The ground violently shook and a terrifying pulse of energy erupted, wreaking havoc in the surroundings as a storm. It blew Jian Chen away even though he was a hundred meters away.

This time, Jian Chen was blown several dozen kilometers away by the energy before landing heavily on the ground. Many of his bones had fractured and broken again, forcing him to repeat the healing process from earlier.

Jian Chen basically climbed up as soon as he hit the ground. Without any hesitation, he charged off in the direction of the artifact spirit as quickly as he could. Along the way, he remained

enshrouded by the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force. Coupled with the circulation of his Chaotic Force inside, his wounds recovered at an extremely swift rate.

“The artifact spirit still isn’t dead. While he’s injured, I have to kill him in one fell swoop, just in case something ends up happened,” Jian Chen gritted his teeth. Ignoring the pain from his body, he flew in the direction of the artifact spirit as quickly as he could.

He crossed several dozen kilometers in the blink of an eye. When he returned back to the Heavenly Palace of Bisheng, he had recovered from forty percent of his injuries while the artifact spirit had just managed to purge the sword Qi within him. He stared at Jian Chen with a sunken face.

Although his strength had dropped below Godhood now, he was still enough to pressure Jian Chen.

“Bastard, this is my last body and you’ve injured me so heavily. Even killing you won’t be enough.” The red-robed boy went completely insane. The killing intent in his eyes was thick as it could be.

“I’ll destroy your body before drawing out your soul. I’ll have it undergo the most painful torture in the world for all of eternity and make you wish to be stuck in a cycle of rebirths instead. I’ll use everything I have for you to taste the world’s most agonizing pain,” roared the boy. His hatred had reached a point where it could drown out space and make the world shake.

The illusory tower appeared near the boy once again, present with the power of three different laws. Afterward, the boy opened his arms and did all he could to channel the remaining energy on the ninth floor into the tower, immediately having it erupt with power again.

Four illusory swords, thirty thousand meters long, hung in the dark shattered space around the four boundaries of the ninth floor.

At that moment, the four of them gently trembled and flickered with a faint light, immediately erupting with an even more powerful force. They suppressed the power of the tower on the ninth floor. The artifact spirit could only utilize an extremely limited amount of it after great difficulty.

Even though the tower's power was suppressed, the tower the boy had conjured still much more powerful. At the same time, he poured a sliver of his own essence into the tower regardless of the consequences. He then sent the tower toward Jian Chen.

The tower was illusory, but it was not something Jian Chen could afford to underestimate. He became stern. Although it was not as powerful as the strike from earlier, it made Jian Chen feel like he was facing death.

"This strike is on the level of Reciprocity," Jian Chen guessed the power of the tower and knew that it was not something he could handle with his injuries. At the same time, the Azulet swords were not with him either, so he was unable to block the strike just by himself.

Jian Chen showed no fear. With a flash of light, another eight slivers of sword Qi flew from his right arm toward the tower.

They were also strands of sword Qi left behind by the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt. The ones Jian Chen had obtained from the four sword Qi outside the ninth floor. Each sword Qi could display the might of someone at Reciprocity three times. After those three times were up, their power would decrease. The sword Qi Jian Chen used was the weakened sword Qi, now at Returnance instead of Reciprocity.

The eight strands of sword Qi only possessed the power of Returnance by themselves, but if combined, they were no weaker than a single Reciprocity sword Qi.

Boom!

The eight slivers of sword Qi collided with the tower and produced a rumble. The violent energy forced Jian Chen to retreat while the eight strands of sword Qi and the figure of the tower destroyed each other in the air.

“God dammit, you actually still have that old bastard’s sword Qi. The power might have weakened, but it was still left behind by him when he was still alive,” the boy bellowed in utter fury.

Jian Chen forcefully stabilized himself after moving back a certain distance. He had already recovered from half of his wounds, and seeing the violent storm of energy before him, he charged over with gritted teeth. He passed through the energy as quick as he could and arrived before the boy, sending out four strands of sword Qi with a wave of his arm.

The four slivers of sword Qi were all shrunk versions of the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt’s swords. Each strand was the size of a hand, but they now possessed the power of Returnance, not Reciprocity. However, the Way of the Sword imbued within them was still better than what Jian Chen had comprehended so far.

The sword Qi in Jian Chen’s arm dulled after sending out the four strands. Their energy was almost exhausted.

Spurt! Spurt! Spurt! Spurt!

The four slivers of sword Qi passed through the red-robed boy simultaneously, causing his body to tremble. He faded some more once more.

At the same time, the boy waved his hand and sent a streak of light out composed from the power of the Laws of Destruction, which pierced Jian Chen’s body. The attack caused Jian Chen to vomit blood. The power of the laws wildly wreaked havoc near his injury, causing it to rapidly expand.

Jian Chen clenched his teeth while determination flooded his eyes. He stared fixedly at the boy and covered himself with light

from his understanding of the Way of the Sword and also used sword Qi to fend off the power of laws in his wound. He condensed a sword from sword Qi in his right hand and swung it at the boy.

The boy shook violently as the madness in his eyes grew thicker. His face became extremely warped. He constantly threw his fists at Jian Chen. Each punch contained a sliver of power formed from laws, landing one after another and producing deep thuds.

Jian Chen was sheet-white and constantly vomited blood. He used the sword Qi he had condensed in his hand to constantly slash at the boy. The boy's illusory figure violently trembled due to each attack and grew dimmer. In the end, the Azulet swords flew over from the distance and pierced through the boy with a shocking amount of sword Qi.

Right now, both Jian Chen and the boy were severely injured. They were both extremely weak as well, making it impossible for either one of them to use any techniques.

The Zi Ying Sword had already returned to Jian Chen's hand. He wielded the weapon and, coupled with his Way of the Sword, demonstrated power no less than late Receival. The boy's figure had almost dispersed from the consecutive attacks, but Jian Chen had paid an extremely heavy price as well. Not a single part of his body was complete as he endured the ferocious attacks from the boy. At the same time, the power of laws devastated his body, eating away his flesh.

By now, Jian Chen had lost his right arm, half of his body, and a third of his head, almost injuring his soul. He was completely covered in blood and in a despicable shape.

However, he still did not give up. He used his only remaining arm to continue slashing at the boy with the Zi Ying Sword. The Qing Suo Sword did not just lay around either. Under the sword spirit's control, it constantly pierced the boy.

The battle between the two of them was extremely intense and

had devolved into close combat. The boy was close to dispersing while Jian Chen was close to falling apart as well. He was just far too injured. If he did not have the support of his Chaotic Body, he probably would have died long ago.

The boy wildly roared. Hatred filled his eyes as he bellowed, "I've never thought of this move in the past because it is my only chance at breaking free. However, I've run out of choices now." The boy suddenly raised a finger at the sky and a droplet of golden blood gradually materialized. It immediately radiated with an unbelievably powerful ripple of energy.

Jian Chen's expression drastically changed when he saw the blood. Just the energy radiating from the blood made him feel like the world was ending, as if the droplet of blood possessed the power to destroy the world.

"Is this the Anatta Grand Prime's essence blood?" Jian Chen became ashen. He felt despair due to the blood. Ignoring that fact that he was injured, even if he was in an optimal condition, there was no way he could survive an encounter with the blood.

"The essence blood of an Immortal Emperor!" The sword spirit cried out.

"That's not a Grand Prime's essence blood? Though, it's still not something I can endure even if it's not from a Grand Prime." Jian Chen stopped attacking the artifact spirit and stared at the blood in the sky. Even fleeing was wishful thinking with the blood in play.

"This is from master's traitor of a disciple, Ta Ji. Back when master had been heavily injured by the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt and fled, she faced an ambush from that traitor. She killed him in the end and a droplet of Ta Ji's essence blood was left here, having been kept here since. I originally wanted to use this blood to break through the Nirvanic old bastard's sword formation after his suppression ran out of energy, but I never thought that I'd have to use Ta Ji's essence blood on an ant like you." As the boy said that,

he became calm. It seemed as though death was returning him to where he had come from.

Boom!

At the same time, the droplet of blood loudly exploded. A devastating power swept through the world, devouring space and crushing the ground.

The explosion was indescribably powerful. It filled every corner of the world in a single moment, making it impossible to dodge as long as Jian Chen was on the ninth floor.

Chapter 1490: Refining the Anatta Tower

However, when the destructive power was about to reach Jian Chen, he suddenly removed a damaged piece of armor from his Space Ring and equipped it.

“Ta Ji’s armor!” The red-robed boy immediately cried out when he spotted the armor. His face was filled with disbelief, and soon afterward, he and Jian Chen were drowned by the destructive power.

...

After quite some time, the destructive power from the Immortal Emperor’s essence blood vanished and the entire floor returned to peace once again.

The space on the ninth floor of the Anatta Tower still existed. The eruption of the blood was like a tiny wave in the vast ocean, unable to damage the tower at all. The sky possessed the same color while the projection of the Heavenly Palace of Bisheng continued to radiate a blinding, golden light. Probably only the cracked ground recorded the brutal scene from earlier.

Jian Chen and the red-robed boy had vanished from the world as well. Neither one of their presences lingered on the ninth floor. Only a damaged piece of armor silently lay on the ground. It was covered with dirt while the person who had been wearing it was nowhere to be seen.

At this moment, light suddenly began to flicker from within the dirty, damaged piece of armor. The next moment, a ball of light flew out and hovered in the air.

Only now was the figure of a person visible. He was only as tall as a finger but glowed with a white light. It was the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force. A golden speck of light flickered within the finger-sized person, and at a closer glance, it was actually a tiny,

golden tower.

This was naturally Jian Chen's soul. After the drop of Immortal Emperor's blood had erupted, he was unable to completely protect himself even with the help of the damaged armor. His body was destroyed, but in a crucial moment, he hid his soul in the armor, which was why he was able to escape disaster.

Jian Chen's soul hovered in the air and looked around. He then sat down where he was. In a few seconds, a thrum seeming to ring out. The Zi Ying Sword and Qing Suo Sword erupted from the dirt and emerged from the ground. They arrived beside Jian Chen's soul. They thrummed loudly, guarding him.

Soon, a bloody thing flew out of the soul. It hovered below Jian Chen's soul. To no surprise, it was a piece of Jian Chen's flesh.

The soil near Jian Chen began to surge after the first piece of flesh appeared. More bloody pieces burst forth before gathering below Jian Chen's soul.

As more and more pieces of flesh gathered from the surroundings, a body completely formed from the remains of various sizes gradually gathered. It was covered with blood but powerful energy pulsed in each droplet of blood.

Jian Chen looked down and saw the body formed from mince meat. He sighed as he shook his head. He had already devoted everything he had to gathering his own flesh and blood, but a section of it had been destroyed by the power of laws and was completely gone, making it impossible to gather. Jian Chen gathered all the pieces of his body he could sense right now, but there were only enough to reassemble a major portion of his body. He still needed his own power to regenerate the other parts.

Fortunately, the vitality of the Chaotic Body was extremely great. Coupled with his abilities as a Class 9 Radiant Saint Master, making a full recovery was nothing difficult.

With a thought, Class 9 Radiant Saint Force origin energy immediately flew out of his soul. It turned into an extremely dense, white light, which enveloped his ruined body. Meanwhile, his chaotic neidan spewed out strands of Chaotic Force. The Chaotic Force was circulated everywhere, not only forcing his flesh to quickly regrow, but it also sped up the regeneration process.

Under the dual effects of Chaotic Force and Class 9 Radiant Saint Force origin energy, Jian Chen's missing pieces slowly began to regrow. All the cracks and wounds on the body he had pieced together rapidly disappeared as well. Even all his blood flowed back into his body, returning to his flesh.

At the same time, streams of chaotic blood, still wet and hidden beneath the soil, all burst forth and flew out of the ground. They all returned to Jian Chen's body through his mouth.

The chaotic blood was significant to Jian Chen. Although it was possible for him to replenish the missing blood with his Chaotic Body, it would exhaust a large amount of Chaotic Blood.

Jian Chen would not have needed to care if he had only lost a small portion of his blood, but basically all his blood had been scattered across the land. He needed to get it all back.

Fortunately, he cultivated the Chaotic Body, so every piece of flesh and drop of blood was connected to his consciousness. Finding the droplets was not particularly difficult.

Jian Chen had never been so injured before. He had been reduced to a soul. If his soul had not hidden in the damaged armor, he probably would have died. He had truly been embroiled in a battle of life and death against the artifact spirit. It had been a very long time since Jian Chen had come so close to death.

He used more time than he usually would spend recovering in order to rejuvenate his missing parts. He finally made a full recovery after two whole days and had used three whole strands of Class 9 Radiant Saint Force origin energy.

Jian Chen removed his Space Ring from the artifact space and slowly placed it on his finger. He then took out a new set of clothes from his Space Ring and changed into them. He silently sensed the body that he had just recovered and realized that the comprehensions of the Way of the Sword had not been destroyed, allowing him to let out a breath of relief. At the same time, he discovered that the four strands of sword Qi were still hidden within his right arm, but since they had been overused, it was extremely difficult for them to dish out strong attacks. Even though they could still force out attacks at Receiving, they were nowhere near as powerful as a strike from Jian Chen with the Zi Ying Sword.

“This artifact spirit should have dispersed due to the explosion of the blood as well. After all, he had already been weakened after the battle with me. He wouldn’t have had the power to flee when he was so close to me,” Jian Chen thought. Even though the battle against the artifact spirit was extremely brutal, he was a Class 9 Radiant Saint Master, so as long as his soul remained, he could recover his body very quickly, unlike regular experts who needed a very long period of time and high quality medicine.

Jian Chen possessed a huge advantage with this aspect. He did not have to worry about being injured. He could even recover his wounds during battle.

Jian Chen picked the damaged piece of divine armor that had saved his life off the ground. He gently brushed off the dust on it. He could not help but think back to what the artifact spirit had said when he had pulled out the essence blood and his shocked expression when he saw the armor in his final moments after making the blood explode.

“The master of this armor is called Ta Ji. I never thought that he’d actually be the disciple of the Anatta Grand Prime. Looks like the remains scattered throughout the Sea of Despair were left behind by him,” Jian Chen thought. He pondered, “Looks like the

Anatta Grand Prime engaged in a great battle here with his disciple and probably died during that battle, which is why the Anatta Tower ended up here. If the Anatta Grand Prime didn't fall, he definitely would have recovered some strength after so much time and would have found it difficult to remove the seal from the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt."

After a moment of silent thought, Jian Chen focused his attention. His eyes landed on the projection of the Heavenly Palace of Bisheng nearby. He seemed to see a pure-white stone tablet within it.

The stone tablet was physical and not a projection. It seemed like it had always existed on the ninth floor and had probably been covered up by the projection of the palace. The stone tablet seemed to belong within the palace.

Jian Chen walked toward the palace. There were a total of nine hundred ninety-nine steps outside the palace. They were illusory as well. He could clearly see the ground beneath them.

Jian Chen hesitated as he stood before the steps. He placed his foot on one to test it out, but to his surprise, even though the steps were illusory, they seemed solid when he stood on them.

Jian Chen made his way up the steps step by step. He was heading toward the palace. He entered the structure and made his way to the pure-white tablet.

The stone tablet was white, like jade, and as smooth as a mirror. It was three hundred meters tall. When Jian Chen stood before it, he felt like an ant standing before an elephant.

"Master, this should be the control center for the Anatta Tower. Let out your soul and use your consciousness to sense it," Zi Ying's voice rang out. The two swords were revolving around Jian Chen, watching over him.

Jian Chen closed his eyes and let out his soul. He gradually

approached the tablet with his consciousness, and when he successfully entered the tablet, the tablet immediately spat out a piece of information.

Jian Chen opened his eyes and excitedly stared at the tablet. The tablet just happened to be something crucial for controlling the Anatta Tower. He had obtained the refinement method from it.

“There are nine layers of the Anatta Tower to refine. Refining the first layer will grant you the most basic controls of the tower. The more layers you refine, the more control you will have over the power. At the same time, the power you can use will grow. You can only use all of the tower’s power after you refine all nine layers.”

Chapter 1491: The Anatta Grand Prime

“Senior Tian Jian has spent ten years and is still not done refining the divine hall from Mercenary City with his strength as a Saint Emperor. The Anatta Tower is clearly much greater than that divine hall, so I wonder how much time I’ll need to refine the first layer of the Anatta Tower with my current strength,” Jian Chen wondered inside before hesitating. The World of Forsaken Saints would invade again in two or three years. He did not know if he could refine the first layer of the Anatta Tower within that time frame.

“Don’t worry, master. The Anatta Tower may be a supreme quality god artifact, but there are nine steps to refining it. It is indeed impossible for master to refine the whole tower with your current strength, but you shouldn’t take long to refine the first layer with our help,” said Zi Ying. The Zi Ying Sword arrived above Jian Chen’s head and projected a handsome young man in violet robes.

“Master, we’ll help you out!” The Qing Suo Sword also arrived above Jian Chen’s head, projecting a beauty in an azure dress.

Jian Chen clenched his teeth and said, “If that’s the case, let’s try to take this tower with us before the foreign world invades again.”

Jian Chen immediately sat down. With assistance from the sword spirits, he began to devote himself to refining the stone tablet.

As Jian Chen refined the three-hundred-meter-tall tablet before him, it immediately experienced some changes. From the very bottom, the pure-white tablet gradually darkened and the dark color spread up at an extremely gradual rate.

The dark portion was the part that Jian Chen had successfully refined. When the entire tablet turned black, he would become the second master of the Anatta Tower.

However, the refinement process became more difficult the further he advanced. When the darkness had reached a height of three meters, it visibly slowed down.

Unknowingly, Jian Chen had already spent a year refining the tablet. During that year, he had refined ninety percent of the first layer. However, the final part was far more difficult than he had imagined. Jian Chen poured everything he had into it, but he was still progressing slowly.

However, Jian Chen did not give up. He desperately refined it, and finally, after another half a year, he successfully refined the first layer. A ninth of the giant tablet was now dark.

The darkness represented that Jian Chen had successfully refined the first layer of the Anatta Tower. He could not utilize the basic controls of the structure.

Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes. His forehead was currently covered with sweat. He was exhausted, but there was an uncontrollable excitement in his eyes.

The current him could clearly feel a mental connection with the Anatta Tower. He could vaguely sense everything in the tower, on all nine floors. However, he could only sense the second to the ninth second floor in haze. As for the first floor, he could sense it extremely clearly. He could even vaguely gain an idea as to what was going on in the dark regions that had been annihilated by the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt.

The annihilated regions seemed as vast as the night sky to Jian Chen. They were unimaginably tremendous. Even the Tian Yuan Continent did not seem to be a hundredth of the dark regions.

“The Anatta Grand Prime’s treasury really exists on the ninth floor,” Jian Chen murmured to himself. His eyes shone. He appeared a hundred meters away in the next moment, like he had teleported. He gazed at some empty space before him.

“The treasury’s been hidden in a spatial crack on the ninth floor by the Anatta Grand Prime. Even the artifact spirit can’t open it. Only the master of the tower can. It’s just a pity that I’m too weak right now, so I still can’t open it yet.” Jian Chen gently exhaled in disappointment. In a flash, he returned to the Heavenly Palace of Bisheng.

“I’m actually unable to sense the existence of this palace at all. It must be a projection left behind by the Anatta Grand Prime through an ability in the past,” Jian Chen stared at the palace for a while before entering it with long strides.

A while later, Jian Chen arrived in one of the halls within the palace. He stood at the entrance and stared ahead. There was a structure made from white jade at the end of the hall. It was only the size of a millstone and seemed like a cushion for meditation. Jian Chen’s gaze stopped on the stone structure that was only three inches tall for a while. He then looked behind it. A statue stood there.

The statue depicted a woman in white clothes. Her figure was slender, her beauty: indescribable. She stood there with her head slightly raised, as if she was staring at the void. She did not give off a shocking presence but seemed to have combined and resonated with the world, a transformation of nature itself, having become a law.

“Who’s that? Is that the Anatta Grand Prime?” Jian Chen stood at the entrance and stared at the beauty in a daze. He found it very hard to believe the reality that the Anatta Grand Prime, one of the three strongest experts in the Saints’ World, was female.

Zi Ying and Qing Suo appeared. They also stared at the woman’s statue in a daze and only after quite some time did Zi Ying say, “Former master once clashed with the Anatta Grand Prime several times, but he was surrounded by the ways of the world, causing him to become enshrouded. There’s basically no one in our Immortals’ World who’s seen his true appearance. At the same

time, his voice was always fused with the ways of the world, having changed to contain all the sounds of the world, so it was impossible to tell his gender. In reality, there's many Grand Primes in the Saints' World who've never seen his true appearance either."

"The Heavenly Balance of Bisheng is the Anatta Grand Prime's residence. There's no doubt about that. Yet, there's actually a statue like this in his residence, so is this really the Anatta Grand Prime's true appearance? Or is this woman the most important person to the Anatta Grand Prime," Qing Suo gently furrowed her brows and stared at the statue out of curiosity.

"Sigh."

At this moment, a vague sigh reverberated through the entire illusory palace. It was a female's voice and sounded extremely gentle and pleasant. It was enough to take people aback, but it also seemed to be weathered, having gone through and experienced many things in the past.

Jian Chen immediately became shocked when he heard the voice. He looked around but failed to discover anyone at all. He did not succeed at discovering the origins of the voice either. The voice seemed to echo through the entire palace, possibly the entire floor of the tower.

Zi Ying and Qing Suo narrowed their eyes. They had also heard the sigh and looked around, but they failed to discover anything either.

"This isn't the voice of the tower spirit, nor is it the voice that we're familiar with from the Anatta Grand Prime. It's not the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt's voice either," Zi Ying said with a heavy voice.

"May I ask who you are?" Jian Chen asked. He looked around cautiously. He could vaguely sense everything on the ninth floor, but the palace exceeded his senses. His soul was suppressed in the

palace as well, so it was completely useless.

“I’ve waited here for over three million years for someone to finally come. You are the first after all that time.” The vague voice rang out once again. It echoed through the entire hall, making it difficult to discover its origins.

However, a hazy, white figure gradually emerged from the statue of the woman near the end of the palace.

The figure was very hazy at the start, only a rough silhouette. However, it gradually cleared up and her facial features became visible. She looked just like the statue, not only possessing the same charm but the same bearing as well.

Jian Chen was shocked inside when he saw the illusory figure. He carefully glanced at the Azulet swords and immediately felt rather unsettled. He asked with a heavy voice, “Are you the Anatta Grand Prime?”

“I am indeed Anatta,” the figure said with a gentle voice. She stared off into the distance as complicated emotions and memories clouded her eyes.

Jian Chen’s heart sank and his face became extremely ugly. Never would he have thought that the Anatta Grand Prime would appear here. Even though the illusionary figure he was seeing right now was probably only a clone of her, it was still terrible news to him.

He refused to believe that the Anatta Grand Prime did not recognize the Azulet swords. Since they were with him, it also meant that he had exposed his connection with the Immortals’ World. He might have even gotten the Anatta Grand Prime to believe that he was a part of that world. The Immortals’ World and the Saints’ World stood on opposing sides. The Anatta Grand Prime had fought the the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt in the past. This was a horrible situation for him.

Jian Chen could even imagine the hellish moment he headed to the Saints' World after his connection to the Immortals' World spread through the Saints' World.

Jian Chen's face sank. The light in his eyes flickered uneasily. At that moment, he was tempted to disperse the Anatta Grand Prime's figure, but he was uncertain about the strength of the clone, so he did not act recklessly for the time being.

The Anatta Grand Prime did not seem to notice the changes in Jian Chen's expression. Her gaze remained fixated on the distant sky. She slowly said, "Back then, I fought the greatest expert of the Immortals' World, the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt. I was not his opponent, so I fled with heavy injuries. When I made my way back to the Saints' World, my disciple Ta Ji suddenly ambushed me. Caught off-guard, he succeeded, so I became even more injured. It was also at that moment when I suddenly realized that my disciple had been secretly working with the Grand Prime Yan Zun. He wanted to kill me while I was heavily injured and take my extreme comprehensions of the Laws of Fire.

"I engaged in a battle of life-and-death against the Grand Prime Yan Zun and my traitor of a disciple. I managed to kill my wretched disciple, but I was just too heavily injured from the battle against the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt and the Anatta Tower had been severely damaged as well. It had also been suppressed by the sword formations of the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt, so I was unable to use its power. As a result, I failed to kill Yan Zun, only managing to destroy his body. I watched his soul escape."

Chapter 1492: A Grand Prime's Legacy

Jian Chen sucked in a deep breath. At that moment, his opinion of the Anatta Grand Prime underwent an overwhelming change. The woman before him had fought the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt first. Heavily injured and locked out of the Anatta Tower, she faced the Immortal Emperor Ta Ji's ambush, causing her to become even more injured. Under those situations, she actually still had the power to stand victorious against another Grand Prime of the Saints' World. Just how shocking was her strength?

“My injuries were just far too heavy after that battle. My soul was fading and I was going to die in a crack of space. In my final moments, I sent a fragment of my soul into the Anatta Tower to leave behind a legacy so that my legacy would never end. Meanwhile, you are the first person who has come after three million years of waiting. Since you have made it here, it means that your fate is tied to me. The legacy belongs to you. It is no longer important whether you are a part of the Immortals' World or not.”

“The Anatta Grand Prime's legacy!” Jian Chen was stunned. He was filled with disbelief. After his ties with the Immortals' World had been revealed, not only did the Anatta Grand Prime refuse to delve into that matter, but she was even giving her legacy to him. It had basically fallen into his lap.

“The Anatta Grand Prime's currently in a very horrible condition. This fragment of her soul has existed here for over three million years. It's about to disperse, which is why she chose me as her successor.” Jian Chen came to an understanding. He would never believe that the Anatta Grand Prime would be willing to give her legacy to a person of the Immortals' World otherwise. She had done this probably because she had her own reasons and problems.

“The Anatta Tower possesses the suppression from the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt. The fragment of my soul has been weakening

everyday and has basically reached the end of the road. It's about to disperse into the surroundings, so I don't have much time left. I will formally bestow you my legacy. My only requirement is that you have to go to the Saints' World to kill the Grand Prime Yan Zun once you are powerful enough. Are you willing?" The Anatta Grand Prime was staring at Jian Chen with extremely bright eyes. She placed particular focus on the final sentence she spoke.

Jian Chen clasped his hands at the Anatta Grand Prime. With a stern face, he swore, "Don't worry, senior. If I obtain your legacy, I will definitely kill the Grand Prime Yan Zun and take revenge for you once I am powerful enough."

The Anatta Grand Prime nodded in satisfaction after Jian Chen swore an oath. Her shining eyes gradually calmed down, and she mentioned, "There are two parts to my legacy. The first part is the Fortune Jade Seat. It possesses my cultivation technique as well as much of my understandings toward cultivation. Not everyone can practice the cultivation technique. Only those who are fated to will be able to practice it."

"The second part is my extreme comprehensions of laws. I have comprehended the Laws of Fire, Creation, and Destruction to their extremes. This pearl contains my comprehensions of the Laws of Destruction, and it now belongs to you with the legacy. Once you fuse it with your soul, you will be able to comprehend my Laws of Destruction. Comprehending laws are crucial for reaching Godhood. Once you have reached the peak of Reciprocity, you can only reach Godhood by comprehending laws. Otherwise, you will never be able to advance any further with your cultivation and will be stuck in the Origin realm forever. Comprehending one percent of the laws corresponds to Deity, ten percent to God, twenty percent to Overgod, thirty percent to Godking, forty-five percent to Infinite Prime, and sixty percent to Chaotic Prime. If you comprehend eighty percent of a single law, you will become a Grand Prime, and if you can reach the limits, a hundred percent,

you will become a peak Grand Prime.”

“Even across the entire Saints’ World, there are only a few peak Grand Primes. I have left you the complete comprehension of my Laws of Destruction. How much you can comprehend will depend on your own fortune.”

With that, a black, thumb-sized pearl slowly drifted out, stopping in front of Jian Chen in the end. Immediately, the pearl began to radiate with the power of the Laws of Destruction.

Jian Chen struggled to contain his excitement as he stared at the black pearl. He slowly extended his hand toward it.

The Anatta Grand Prime was no longer fixated on the distant sky. Instead, she stared at Jian Chen. A sliver of anticipation appeared in her eyes as well as excitement that was deeply hidden. However, it vanished in just a moment, having been hidden away.

Finally, Jian Chen gently grasped the pearl that contained the power of the Laws of Destruction. He clearly sensed the familiar power within it, and an odd light immediately flickered through his eyes.

When Jian Chen grabbed the pearl, excitement appeared in the depths of the Anatta Grand Prime’s eyes as well as some hidden viciousness. However, these emotions disappeared in just a single moment and her gaze returned to being as profound as ever.

Jian Chen’s grasp around the black pearl tightened. He did not immediately fuse the pearl into his soul. Instead, he took out a wooden box out of his Space Ring. Under the Anatta Grand Prime’s confused gaze, he slowly placed the pearl inside before throwing the box into his Space Ring.

The Anatta Grand Prime’s eyes narrowed by an indiscernible amount. She blurted out, “You need to fuse the pearl into your soul so that you can comprehend my Laws of Destruction. Why don’t you do that? Are you uninterested in my extreme comprehension

of the Laws of Destruction?”

Reverence filled Jian Chen’s eyes. He clasped his hands at the Grand Prime, “I am afraid you have misunderstood me, senior. It’s not that I don’t want to comprehend senior’s Laws of Destruction, but I believe that comprehending the laws right now will be inconvenient. I plan on finding a quiet place to comprehend them first.”

“What inconvenience? In this Anatta Tower, nobody can disturb you. If you go outside, it’ll be even easier for people to disturb you. At the same time, comprehending laws is extremely important. If you end up disturbed during the process, forcefully wrenched from a state of comprehension, you will suffer severe injuries. They could be so bad that you might suffer a backlash from the laws and your soul might disperse,” the Anatta Grand Prime said sternly.

“I thank senior for warning me. I am filled with gratitude. It’s just that I’ve stayed for far too long in the Anatta Tower already. I still have important matters to attend to outside, so I cannot stay much longer. I fear that comprehending laws will only cause further delays and end up ruining what I have to do,” Jian Chen calmly replied, revealing no arrogance nor humility. He stared at the Anatta Grand Prime in interest. Currently, her body had become extremely faint, as if she was about to disperse.

The Anatta Grand Prime remained silent for quite a while before slowly replying, “I will no longer urge you if that’s the case. However, please do remember to fuse the pearl with your soul as soon as possible and comprehend my laws so that you can take revenge.” With that, the illusory figure gradually dispersed under Jian Chen’s gaze.

Jian Chen slowly arrived before the statue in vigilance after the Anatta Grand Prime had completely vanished. He studied the sculpture for around half a day, silently frowning.

“Zi Ying, Qing Suo, do you think that the Anatta Grand Prime has

really faded away, or has she just continued hiding?” Jian Chen asked the sword spirits. Only the sword spirits and him were able to hear his thought.

The sword spirits did not reply immediately. Qing Suo’s lark-like voice rang through Jian Chen’s head after quite a while, “Master, she doesn’t seem to be the Anatta Grand Prime we remember.”

“Master, I also doubt whether she’s the real Anatta Grand Prime or not. We may not have seen the Grand Prime’s appearance before, but our instincts can’t be wrong,” Zi Ying stated his thoughts as well. The entire conversation was held in Jian Chen’s head, so no sound was emitted at all.

Jian Chen calmly replied, “You really have seen through her. I must agree that I don’t think that this Anatta Grand Prime is the real Anatta Grand Prime either. When she gave me the pearl with the Laws of Destruction, I saw a familiar glint of light in her eyes. Even though she hid it very well, I still managed to catch it. It was extremely similar to the light in the artifact spirit’s eyes.”

“Has she been bewitched by the spirit of the tower? It’s a pity that we can’t sense the presence of that spirit in this Heavenly Palace of Bisheng. Otherwise, we would have been able to recognize him with a single glance no matter what he turned into,” answered Zi Ying.

“It doesn’t matter whether she’s the artifact spirit or the Anatta Grand Prime’s disciple, Ta Ji. Anyway, I can’t use her comprehension of the Laws of Destruction. There are definitely problems with this object,” Jian Chen coldly replied. A sliver of a stern light flashed through his eyes. He would not pay any attention to the story that the fake Anatta Grand Prime had told him either.

Jian Chen glanced at the Fortune Jade Seat before the sculpture. The seat was only the size of a millstone and three inches tall. It was pure-white all over and let out a gentle white glow. Jian Chen

could sense a calming presence from the seat, especially when he approached it. Just breathing near it had cleared up his mind and focused his attention, as if his soul had become even more consolidated at that moment.

“Master, fortune jade is a unique treasure of the world. It’s extremely rare, and if you cultivate with just a piece of it, not only will you cultivate much faster but will also help you comprehend laws. It has the same effects as the Comprehension Tea, but its effects are slightly superior. I never thought that the Anatta Grand Prime owned such a great piece of it. This jade is so rare that even former master, one of the five great Immortal Exalts of the Saints’ World, did not possess a piece. Only the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt of the five possessed a piece, but it was not even a third of the piece of jade before you,” Qing Suo said enviously, gently sighing. Her face was filled with regret because the Fortune Jade Seat before her was illusory. It was just a projection, like the palace, and not the actual thing.

Jian Chen’s interest was immediately piqued. However, he could only helplessly sigh, “The Anatta Grand Prime sure is great. This Fortune Jade Seat is only a mere projection, yet it possesses similar effects to the actual thing. Sigh, if I only had the actual thing... With it, I would be able to comprehend the Way of the Sword far more easily.” Jian Chen paused for a while before continuing his questions, “The fake Anatta Grand Prime said that the Fortune Jade Seat possessed the cultivation method of the Anatta Grand Prime as well as most of his understanding toward cultivation. Do you think that’s true?”

Jian Chen became much more vigilant inside after noticing that the Anatta Grand Prime was a fake. He did not believe anything that she said.

“Even to the Anatta Grand Prime, such a large piece of fortune jade is extremely precious. It would have definitely received a lot of her attention and might even possess a seal from the Anatta

Grand Prime. This piece of jade was projected along with the Heavenly Palace of Bisheng, so the actual thing should still be in the Saints' World. Only the Anatta Grand Prime is able to project the Heavenly Palace of Bisheng, and the Fortune Jade Seat so realistically in the Anatta Tower that this may be in the Anatta Tower, but this palace is the handiwork of the Anatta Grand Prime. The artifact spirit doesn't have the power to meddle with it."

Chapter 1493: The Fortune Jade Seat

“Master, I think the story from the fake Anatta Grand Prime is true. It was extremely likely that the Anatta Grand Prime was ambushed by Ta Ji and Yan Zun after being heavily injured by the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt, which was why he died in the end. Before he died, he used his abilities to project the Heavenly Palace of Bisheng and his Fortune Jade Seat here and also recorded his cultivation method in the seat, hence leaving behind his legacy. This is because rarely anyone can enter the Heavenly Palace of Bisheng in the Saints’ World. If he didn’t do that, it is extremely likely that his lineage would have ended then.”

Jian Chen sank into his thoughts, and only after quite some time did he conclude, “If that’s the case, the legacy of the Anatta Grand Prime should be true and some of what the fake Anatta Grand Prime said was probably what the Anatta Grand Prime left behind. Obtaining the legacy to kill the Grand Prime Yan Zun is true, but the only thing we cannot believe is the comprehension of the Laws of Destruction.”

“Correct. The comprehensions are extremely likely a scheme devised by the artifact spirit. His intentions are likely to possess master. Trying to possess people as an artifact spirit is forbidden. You’ll need to pay an unbelievable tremendous price, and with just the slightest carelessness, you will end up dispersing instead. Has the artifact spirit lost his mind?” Zi Ying mocked. He was laughing at how naive the artifact spirit was.

“The artifact spirit sure has lived a very long time to think of things like that. He’ll never succeed as long as Zi Ying and I are here, and hasn’t the fake Anatta Grand Prime realized that if she is urging master on too much, causing doubt to form instead?” Qing Suo added scornfully.

“We still can’t confirm whether she’s the artifact spirit of the Anatta Tower or a fragment of the Grand Prime’s disciple’s soul.

However, I did happen to catch sight of something in the eyes of the fake that was very similar to the artifact spirit. The artifact spirit uses the Laws of Destruction as well, so I think it's most likely the artifact spirit. I never thought that the artifact spirit would be able to survive after exploding the Immortal Emperor's essence blood." Jian Chen deduced. He then thought about the black pearl he had stored away in a wooden box within his Space Ring and continued, "However, even if the artifact spirit is still alive, he is extremely weak. Otherwise, it'd be impossible for him not to move against me while I was rebuilding my body. It's possible that he's so weak that he can't even deal with my soul, or he can't get through my line of defense."

"If that's true, we don't have to worry about the artifact spirit at all. He's even weaker than Zi Ying and me right now, and under the current suppression of the tower, it's basically impossible for the artifact spirit to recover. And even if he recovers some strength after countless years, master, you will be able to kill him with a flick of your finger by then," Qing Suo snickered. She took joy in the miserable state that the artifact spirit had been reduced to.

Jian Chen did not think about the artifact spirit too much. Even if he knew that the artifact spirit was still alive, he was unable to find where it was hiding. After all, he had only refined the first layer of the Anatta Tower. He only had a vague sense regarding the second to ninth floors, not seeing them as clearly as the first floor. Regarding the pearl, it was extremely likely that it would try to take possession of Jian Chen, but he did not believe it was where the artifact spirit was hiding either.

"My top priority is to gain strength. I don't have to fear anything once I am powerful enough," thought Jian Chen. He looked at the Fortune Jade Seat and slowly made his way to it before sitting down on it.

The seat was only a projection, but Jian Chen felt like he was sitting on the real thing. A cool feeling radiated from the seat and

permeated his body. Not only did he feel at ease, even the circulation of his Chaotic Force seemed to speed up. At the same time, a calming presence gushed into his head. At that moment, he seemed to have entered a wondrous state of mind, where he felt like everything was clearing up. The hazy, mysterious laws of the world were actually presented before him clearly, as if he could see the veins of the world.

“This Fortune Jade Seat really is good. Sitting on it can indeed help people comprehend ways. It has the same effect as Comprehension Tea. If I cultivate here, my comprehension of the Way of the Sword will skyrocket,” Jian Chen thought, but he sighed soon after. It was a pity that the seat was not the real thing, or he could move it out and sit on it everyday.

At this moment, a gentle force suddenly radiated from the seat. Jian Chen felt like he was a tiny boat in the vast ocean before this gentle force, insignificant. He was forcefully pushed off the seat as a vague voice rang through his consciousness.

“You are not fated! You are unable to obtain my legacy!”

The voice seemed masculine and feminine at the same time, both young and old. It also sounded like the cries of insects or birds. It seemed to contain all the sounds within the world, and all of them had fused together to form one voice.

“This is the Anatta Grand Prime’s voice!” Jian Chen’s expression changed slightly as he stood before the seat. Surprise and doubt flooded his face as he closely recalled the voice that had just appeared in his soul.

A while later, a gleam of light flashed across Jian Chen’s eyes. He sat on the seat once again. He was not interested in the Anatta Grand Prime’s legacy at all since he cultivated the Chaotic Body. Even if the Anatta Grand Prime’s cultivation method was heaven-defying, it was unsuitable for him. What he really wanted was to cultivate on the seat and borrow the powers of the fortune jade to

comprehend the Way of the Sword.

However, the same thing happened. In less than ten seconds after sitting down, the gentle force appeared once again and pushed him off.

“You are not fated! You are unable to obtain my legacy!”

The Anatta Grand Prime’s voice rang in Jian Chen’s head once again. It was hard to distinguish whether it was masculine or feminine, but it was impossible to discern the age of the speaker. It possessed all the sounds of the world, having become a type of law itself. It could reach the souls of people.

“Can’t I just cultivate there?” Jian Chen was unsettled. He was left staring at such a great treasure before him, yet he was unable to use it, which filled him with regret. The Fortune Jade Seat was just a projection, but it would still bring extremely great benefits while comprehending the Ways of the Sword, just like Comprehension Tea.

He did not have many Comprehension Tea Leaves left and each leaf only gave him an extremely limited period of time to spend comprehending the mysteries of the laws. On the other hand, the seat before him was not limited by time, allowing him to comprehend for as long as he wished.

Jian Chen clenched his teeth. He did not want to give up. He sat on the seat once again, but this time, he only used it as a cushion. He sealed off all his senses, preventing him from sensing the wonders within the seat, hoping he would not be kicked off. This was because the cool presence from the seat would still enter his body as long as he sat on it.

In the end, he was unable to last more than three seconds, to his disappointment, even when he treated it as a seat. The voice rang in his head a third time, and this time, it was as loud as a great bell. It caused his soul to shake and was aggressive.

Jian Chen did not give up. He thought of all the ideas he had and sat on the seat again. Less than ten seconds later, he was pushed off by the gentle force again, and he immediately paled. The fourth time the voice rang in his head was thunderous. It jolted his soul violently, causing it to ache as if it was been ripped apart. He suffered slight injuries to his soul.

“The more I try, the more powerful the voice becomes. If I want to try cultivating on the seat again, the sound will be even more terrifying. It’ll be enough to heavily injure my soul or even shake it to pieces. Looks like there’s no hope for me to cultivate using this seat.” Jian Chen stood near the Fortune Jade Seat with a pale face as he stared at it. He sighed inside and left in despair.

At the main entrance of the tower, Jian Chen raised his head and stared at the structure. When he had come here this time, he had not planned on taking the tower itself. He just wanted to find some treasures, or some of the wealth accumulated by the Anatta Grand Prime, so that he could strengthen himself. What he had never thought he would obtain was the ability to refine the first layer of the tower after defeating the artifact spirit. Though, he gained nothing more than that.

The Anatta Grand Prime had indeed left his wealth in the Anatta Tower, but it was all stored in a crack in space on the ninth floor. Jian Chen was unable to retrieve them with his current strength.

“The Anatta Tower has a total of nine layers. I’ve only refined the first layer, so I can only use the basic controls of the structure. I can’t even use its power,” Jian Chen murmured. His voice was filled with helplessness. He extended his hand and watched the tower rapidly shrink. It became the height of a finger and flew into his hand.

The sword slashes still remained on the tower, but they had shrunk with the structure. Each slash shone with a bright light. The suppression of the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt still remained.

Chapter 1494: Leaving the Sea of Despair

Jian Chen stared at the sword slashes that were still present on the surface on the Anatta Tower and said with a deep voice, “I have confirmed that the artifact spirit did not pass away from the explosion created by the Immortal Emperor’s essence blood. Since he’s still around, I can’t break the seal on the tower even if I had the ability to. Once the suppression from the seal is gone, the artifact spirit will be able to recover rapidly, surpassing my own growth rate.”

Jian Chen removed the wooden box with the black pearl from his Space Ring after some silence. With a thought, he placed the wooden box inside the Anatta Tower. He felt like leaving it in the Anatta Tower was safer and worried that something might happen someday if he carried it with him.

He still did not understand the use of the pearl. Possession was only one of his and the sword spirits’ guesses. At the same time, he did not want to test the effects of the pearl either. He understood that testing them would only be detrimental. Thus, testing it was pointless.

“I may not be able to use the power of the Anatta Tower right now, but it’s a fated god artifact of the Anatta Grand Prime after all. It’s created from rare items of the world. Even if it can’t display any powers at all, just the weight of the tower is probably enough to flatten a planet.” Jian Chen’s lips gradually curled into a smile as he stared at the finger-sized tower in the center of his hand. He did not obtain what he wanted from this journey, which filled him with some pity, but he felt like it was worth the trip just for the Anatta Tower.

Even if the Anatta Tower had no special abilities, just the weight of it would not be something a Receiving expert could withstand. Jian Chen had refined the first layer, hence gaining access to the basic controls, which was why it was as light as a feather in his

hands. However, once it left his side, it would become extremely heavy. He had no doubt that the tower could crush Receiving experts to death.

With a thought, the tower immediately disappeared from Jian Chen's hand. An imprint that seemed the same as the Anatta Tower appeared in the center of Jian Chen's hand. It was exquisitely designed and seemed like a birthmark.

He originally could have fused it into his soul, but Jian Chen did not plan on doing that before he had completely refined it. The risks were just too great.

Jian Chen reluctantly glanced at the flat region one last time before leaving.

The way back was also extremely difficult. Jian Chen had no idea how long he had been wandering in the endless mist, let alone the number of times he had been teleported away. In the end, he found his way out by luck, leaving the disorienting Sea of Despair.

The endless mist within the Sea of Despair did not vanish with the disappearance of the Anatta Tower. It churned just like before.

Jian Chen did not remain outside the Sea of Despair for long. He immediately shot into the sky, leaving the sea realm in just a single moment. With a huge splash, he emerged from the sea and rushed into the blue sky. He then transformed into a violet streak of light and instantly flew away, moving extremely quickly.

Flame City was bustling. All the streets and alleyways were filled with people and activities. Carriages filled with goods rolled down the wide streets as burly mercenaries accompanied the vehicles in orderly fashions, coming in and out of the city. Even though mercenaries of various places had gathered in the city, causing it to become a mixture of strong and weak, there had never been any cases of violence within the city.

The current Flame City was no longer as simple as the

headquarters of the Flame Mercenaries. From a certain aspect, it had already replaced Mercenary City, becoming a holy land to all mercenaries on the Tian Yuan Continent. Although Flame City could not compare to the past Mercenary City in terms of heritage, that did not affect its supreme status among the mercenaries of the continent.

This was because the city lord of the city was the greatest human expert, Jian Chen! He was a supreme existence on the Tian Yuan Continent, fully deserving the title of sovereign.

The vice city lord, Bi Lian, had become a famed figure on the Tian Yuan Continent long ago as well. Even the magical beasts, the Hundred Races and the Sea race had heard rumors about her.

A violet streak of light tore through the sky above the city. It vanished in the blink of an eye, having arrived in the city lord's estate already. The violet light moved just too quickly and soundlessly. Coupled with how it was daytime, there were very few experts who sensed the arrival of the light in the city.

Bi Hai snapped open his eyes as he cultivated in a secret room. A smear of pride appeared on his face, and he murmured, "After having gone missing for around a dozen years, my grandson's finally returned. Throughout these years, basically everyone in the world has been discussing whether a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master can revive Saint Weapons or not. I'm curious as well, but I can finally find out." Bi Hai stood up and left the room with a smile.

"Brother, brother's returned." Bi Lian and You Yue sensed Jian Chen's return in a moment as they strolled through the gardens. They were immediately pleasantly surprised, and in a flash, they left. They hurried over as quickly as they could.

It had been around a dozen years since Jian Chen had last appeared. Back when he had become a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master, he completely vanished after taking the large pile of Saint Weapons. He faded out of sight. He was only seen by Tie Ta, the

sea goddess, and the other few Origin realm experts during the second invasion from the World of Forsaken Saints.

At the same time, Dugu Feng, Yun Zheng, Senior An, Jiede Tai, and other members of the upper echelon all put down what they were handling at the time and immediately rushed to the main discussion hall to meet Jian Chen.

Jian Chen did not sit on the city lord's throne within the hall and instead stood silently in the center of the room. He did not radiate a presence at all, making him seem like an ordinary person. Two rows of elite soldiers kneeled to his left and right in black armor. Every single one of them was no weaker than a Heaven Saint Master. Two of them were Saint Rulers.

Chapter 1495: Secret of the Saint Weapons

During this past era of peace, Saint Rulers were hermit experts who rarely appeared before people even after centuries. Yet, there were two Saint Rulers, wearing armor forged from tungsten alloy, kneeling respectfully like guards. They did not even dare to breathe too loudly. If this had happened in the past, it would have been enough to shock countless people. Even right now, while the Tian Yuan Continent faced the threat of the foreign world, Saint Rulers still possessed an extraordinary status after both Saint Kings and Saint Emperors had all emerged. To get a Saint Ruler to kneel willingly was virtually impossible. Even Saint Emperors would not be able to achieve such a feat.

However, Jian Chen now possessed enough prestige for Saint Rulers to kneel for him. Let alone Saint Rulers, even a few Saint Kings, who admired him, could not help but bend their prideful legs and yield to Jian Chen.

This was not because they had no pride. Rather, what they felt was admiration for the powerful. Not to mention the fact that Jian Chen was the only human to have surpassed Saint Emperor since Mo Tianyun.

Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, and Feng Xiaotian could not be considered people of the Tian Yuan Continent, and when they had come down from the Saints' World, their cultivation had fallen to Saint Emperor as well, unable to recover even now. As a result, the three of them could only be considered half an Origin realm expert. They were not true Origin realm experts.

"You can all rise," Jian Chen gently said to the two rows of people. His gaze was filled with mixed emotions. He could not help but think of a moment in the past when he had been forced to remain in Mercenary City because of the Saint Rulers who were hunting him down. At that time, Saint Rulers were indomitable existences in his eyes. He did not even have the power to fight back

or flee before them. Yet now, he had become an existence that Saint Rulers would admire. This filled him with amazement.

“Yes, sir!” The two rows of guards courteously replied together. Only then did they slowly rise and step to the side while breathing quietly. The two Saint Rulers would glance at Jian Chen from time to time, mad devotion filling their faces.

The two of them were not originally a part of the Flame Mercenaries, but many people had joined over the past dozen years due to their admiration for Jian Chen. They then become the guards of the discussion hall in the city lord’s estate. To them, being able to hold such a position was a great honor. They viewed the job with pride. This was because this hall was the place where the fate of the entire Flame Mercenaries could be determined, a place that could influence the entire Tian Yuan Continent. This was because the important meetings of the Flame Mercenaries were all held in the discussion hall.

Every guard was overwhelmed by indescribably joy when they saw Jian Chen. Jian Chen’s name had already reached their ears long ago. They had only seen his sculpture and never him in the flesh. Not only did they manage to see him today with their own eyes, but they were able to interact with him at such a close range. Every single one of them was filled with great excitement.

“Hahaha, great-grandson, you went missing for over a dozen years. If you still hadn’t returned, the two girls would have sent people across the entire continent to search for you.” With a clear chuckle, Bi Hai walked in from outside with his two hands behind his back. He seemed to be taking a casual stroll, but he crossed several hundred meters with each step. He arrived inside the hall with just a few steps.

“Brother, you’ve finally returned!”

“Jian Chen!”

As soon as Bi Hai had entered the discussion hall, Bi Lian and You

Yue's joyful voices rang out. The two girls charged in as quickly as they could. They were ecstatic.

Afterward, Yun Zheng, Senior An, Wang Yifeng, Dugu Feng, Jiede Tai, and a few other members of the upper echelon hurried over from everywhere. They all clasped their hands to Jian Chen before quietly standing to a side.

Jian Chen also smiled when he saw these people. His smile was filled with warmth.

"My dear great-grandson, how's the revival of the Saint Weapons been? The entire world's been discussing this for the past decade. There's even quite a few old and powerful people who've come to ask for news, but they've all left disappointed in the end. I'm your great-grandfather after all. Even if you want to hide this from the entire world, you still have to tell me and satisfy my curiosity," Bi Hai chuckled. As Jian Chen's senior, he obviously did not need to behave politely and carefully when speaking to Jian Chen.

"Brother, where have you been for the past decade? You've made me and sister You Yue worry so much," Bi Lian grumbled while clinging to one of Jian Chen's arms. Her voice was filled with blame and satisfaction.

You Yue stood to one side as she silently stared at Jian Chen. She smiled, and in her gentle eyes, tears flashed.

Although it had been over a decade, even the weakest of the people present, Bi Lian, was a Saint Ruler. They all possessed lifespans of several millennia, so such a short amount of time was not enough to leave any marks on them.

Everyone looked the same as before, including Bi Lian and You Yue. Aside from everyone being more mature and steady-minded, there were no significant changes.

Jian Chen greeted everyone and asked how they were doing before telling them about the flaw regarding the revival of Saint

Weapons. He could sense that it would not be long until the third battle against the World of Forsaken Saints, so there was no longer any need to hide the flaw anymore. Telling everyone would instead boost their confidence and morale.

Everyone in the discussion hall fell silent when they learned about the flaw of the revived Saint Weapons. Even Bi Hai silently frowned.

On the Tian Yuan Continent, many people left behind Saint Weapons when they passed away. Aside from helping their clansmen, many people did due to the slightest possibility of being revived. Even though the chances were insignificant, there were still many people who left behind their Saint Weapons without any hesitation just to gamble on a second life. However, what none of them could have known was that they would be turned into mindless puppets after being revived and that they would be controlled by the person who had revived them. If all of them had learned that this would be the outcome of their ‘second life,’ would there have been so many people willing to leave behind their Saint Weapons to be controlled as puppets.

When experts at the Ninth Heavenly Layer did not leave behind their Saint Weapons, they made the choice to destroy them in their final moments of life.

After all, not everyone had clans. There were many independent cultivators as well.

“Sigh, I never thought that the revived Saint Weapons would turn out like this. I can imagine that there will be fewer and fewer Saint Weapons on the Tian Yuan Continent in the future if this matter makes it out to the public,” Bi Hai sighed after quite a long while. His emotions were extremely mixed.

Chapter 1496: A Young Death in Longevity Valley

“If we can’t make it through the invasion of the foreign world, would there even be a future? In my opinion, the fact that revived Saint Weapons have been reduced to puppets is not necessarily a bad thing under these circumstances. Their strength may have decreased, but they also possess advantages that we don’t. They can’t feel pain or fear. They know nothing even before death. These suicide-soldier-like puppets will be of unimaginably great uses in a few special situations, and over the past few years, Yang Lie, Feng Xiaotian, and Guihai Yidao have been passing on formations to all the Saint Emperors of the four races. If Saint Emperors use these formation, they can trap Origin realm experts or gain far more strength than what they originally possessed by paying a certain price. These formations are more than suitable for these Saint Emperor puppets,” said Dugu Feng. He was emotionless and spoke rather coldly, as if his determined face had never smiled before.

Bi Hai’s eyes immediately lit up because of what Dugu Feng said. He added, “You’re right. If Saint Emperors burn their lives to use the powerful formations, they won’t be able to surpass the peak of Saint Emperor, but some powerful existences can reach the peak of Saint Emperor. Since these puppets have no self-awareness, their former lives will be humiliated if they continue like this, but they will be able to shine one last time in the next battle against the foreign world, protecting our home with the current generation.”

Jian Chen silently nodded. He sank into his thoughts. He had known long ago that Yang Lie, Guihai Yidao, and Feng Xiaotian were responsible for passing on a few formations to the Saint Emperors as well as personally guiding them through the usages of the various formations. Jian Chen also knew a few formations from higher worlds. He had learned all these sword formations

from the sword spirits, so even though they were the weakest from the higher realms, they were still much more powerful than the formations that Feng Xiaotian and the others' knew. Casting these formations was extremely difficult, and even Jian Chen might not possess the power to use them.

This was not only due to his lack of strength but also because the sword formations were just far too profound. He needed some time to completely understand them.

“Looks like I should go check on great-grandfather Yang Lie and learn the formations from him so that these puppets can use them,” Jian Chen thought. He then dismissed everyone from the discussion hall. Only Bi Hai, Bi Lian, You Yue, and Dugu Feng remained. He then took out the saint artifact and let out Bi Yuntian, who was cultivating inside.

Bi Yuntian had spent over a decade in the artifact space cultivating. She improved at an otherworldly rate. Although it was nowhere near as fast as Jian Chen's cultivation rate, she would be considered as a rare genius across the entire continent. She had already reached the peak of the 6th Class and was currently making preparations to reach the 7th Class.

Jian Chen failed to see Nubis, Ming Dong, or Little Fatty in the discussion hall. However, he did not ask about them. Instead, he expanded the senses of his soul, enveloping the entire city in a single moment. He extended his senses deep underground to the secret rooms but failed to find them there, so he continued to spread his soul even further without any hesitation, enveloping the entire continent. His soul had even reached into the vast ocean.

The wind whistled and waves roared in the ocean. Huge waves that were several dozen meters tall would be kicked up from time to time. A huge sea beast currently rode through the waves. Its body was extremely stable and would not tremble at all no matter how violent the waves were.

A young man in golden-robos lay on the huge sea beast. He held a jug of alcohol as he constantly took a sip from it in satisfaction. Two burly women, who seemed to be in their twenties, knelt beside him, carefully massaging his legs and back while full of polite fear.

The two woman did not possess striking appearances. Even though they behaved fearfully before the golden-robed young man, their fear was still not enough to conceal their toughness. The powerful presence that belonged to Saint Rulers leaked out from them.

The two women were clearly Class 7 Magical Beasts that had assumed human form.

“Now this is life. I can go wherever I want. It’s no longer like the past where I couldn’t enter the territory of humans and always needed to keep myself hidden, avoiding that old snake on the Beast God Continent with my life hanging on a line all the time. I came close to death so many times after going to the sea realm with Jian Chen, almost making it impossible for me to see the light of day ever again.” The young man sipped his alcohol as he muttered to himself. Reminiscence flooded his face, along with some longing.

He was Nubis.

“But I gotta say that the days I spent with Jian Chen are really much more interesting than anything I ever did before. In just a few short decades, I went from being a Class 7 Magical Beast to being a Class 9. This was all because I made an extremely smart decision in the past. If I had chosen to keep hiding in that cave, I probably wouldn’t have reached the 8th Class yet,” Nubis said proudly before glancing at the two woman beside him. He sniggered, “Do the two of you know who Jian Chen, who I, the great Nubis, mentioned, is?”

“We know, we know. Of course we know. Even we have heard of sovereign Jian Chen’s great name. We’re filled with admiration for

him. It's just that we're filled with regret over how we have never caught a glimpse of him," the two burly women added. Their eyes were filled with deep admiration.

"Since you've become my servants, I'll obviously fulfil that small wish of yours. You will naturally get a chance to catch a glimpse of my brother in the future," Nubis said proudly. However, a vague voice rang in his head as soon as he finished speaking.

"Nubis, come to Flame City immediately!"

Nubis was stunned. The next moment, his eyes shone brightly. Without any hesitation, he immediately stood up and ripped open space, creating a Space Gate.

"You two go back to the island and wait there!" Nubis spoke the moment he passed through the Space Gate.

...

Not only had Jian Chen found Nubis with his soul, but he had also found Ming Dong and Little Fatty. However, his emotions became sorrowful.

Currently, the two of them were in Longevity Valley. The entire place was filled with sorrow, and all the villagers there were wearing white. Their faces were filled with anguish.

Chapter 1497: A Heavy Tower

Jian Chen could 'see' everything happening in Longevity Valley with his soul. Filled with sorrow, the place made Jian Chen fall silent. At that moment, Jian Chen could not help but feel sad as anguish filled his face.

Jian Chen stood quietly in the discussion hall. Although he was in Flame City, his mind was in Longevity Valley, which was over a million kilometers away. He sighed in the end.

Outside Flame City, a patch of space suddenly began to violently distort. Soon afterward, it ripped open and a multi-colored Space Gate appeared. Nubis emerged leisurely from the gate, and with a flash, he disappeared as if he had teleported away.

In five seconds, Nubis appeared within the city lord's estate. He swaggered toward the central discussion hall while the guards that passed him all bowed politely to him.

"Jian Chen, you've finally returned after vanishing for over a decade. Sigh, I'm more used to spending time with you. It really has been hard to get accustomed to life without you." Nubis chuckled aloud as soon as he entered the discussion hall. He felt happy from the bottom of his heart that Jian Chen had returned, because it was just like what he had said. The days he spent with Jian Chen were the most interesting times of his life. They had always been filled with hair-raising moments. Now that everything had slowed down, Nubis found it rather hard to adapt to his new life since he loved his lifestyle from before.

Jian Chen also suppressed his sorrow due to Nubis' return. His emotions were back to their usual calm very soon. He glanced over the remaining people in the discussion hall and said, "I've called you all here today to see whether you are fated to obtain a huge fortune or not. Don't resist, I will send you into another world." With that, a finger-sized tower appeared in the center of Jian

Chen's palm. It rapidly expanded under Jian Chen's control, becoming over ten meters tall in the blink of an eye. Fortunately, the hall was over twenty meters tall, so it was able to hold the tower without it hitting the ceiling.

Since Jian Chen had not completely refined the Anatta Tower, he could not use many of the tower's abilities. He was obviously unable to get the tower to hover in the air, so he could only place it on the ground.

Bang!

As soon as the damaged Anatta Tower touched the ground, it produced a heavy sound while the ground began to violently shake. Not only did the shaking spread across the entire city, but it even expanded beyond the city at a rapid rate. In the end, it reached several hundred thousand kilometers away, causing a rare earthquake across a small portion of the continent.

The discussion hall became filled with cracks at that moment. Even though the entire hall had been imbued with a shred of Xiao Jin's force, making it extremely tough where not even Saint Kings could damage it, it seemed extremely fragile when touched by the Anatta Tower.

When the Anatta Tower touched the ground, it was not as simple as a tremble and an earthquake. The ground underneath the tower rapidly sank, causing the tower to sink into the ground as well.

The Anatta Tower had crushed the ground with just its weight, sinking at an extremely rapid pace. In just a second, basically the entire tower had been buried. Only a third of it was still present.

Jian Chen immediately smacked his head at this sight. He had forgotten that the Anatta Tower could not leave his hand. The tower was as light as a feather when he carried it, but if it left his hand, nothing could hold back its weight. Even without using any power from the tower, he could probably pierce half a planet just by using its weight.

Without any hesitation, Jian Chen arrived above the tower that was about to disappear in a flash. He gently placed his hand on its tip.

The moment Jian Chen's hand touched the tower, it immediately came to a stop before rapidly shrinking. In just a few seconds, the tower shrank back to the size of a finger. It stood in Jian Chen's hand, leaving behind a pit over ten meters deep.

“Brother, look at you. You've destroyed the discussion hall. Just what is this treasure?” Bi Lian grumbled, but her eyes were fixated on the tower in Jian Chen's hand. Curiosity poured out of her eyes.

Jian Chen bitterly smiled as he looked at the destroyed discussion hall, “This treasure's too heavy. I can't place it down here. Looks like we need to find another place.”

Jian Chen left Flame City with them, searching for a place tough enough to set down the tower. There would naturally be people in the city who would fix the damaged discussion hall. Jian Chen did not pay any attention to the powerful earthquake either.

There was a mountain range close to Flame City. The mountain range was originally a mine for tungsten alloy and had once received attention from people across the continent. However, since the metallic spirit in the mine had matured and left as Xiao Jin, the place had completely lost its value. It had been reduced to an ordinary mountain range without any tungsten alloy left.

There was a deep valley in the depths of the mountain range. Very few people knew about its existence. Even after being reduced to a mountain range, the bottom of the valley was not soft. It was extremely tough.

At this moment, Jian Chen, Bi Yuntian, Bi Hai, Bi Lian, You Yue, Dugu Feng, and Nubis stood at the bottom of the valley. Before them stood a tower that was three thousand meters tall. It was covered with sword slashes, and each slash flickered brightly, giving off a suffocating sword Qi.

A huge barrier stood above the tower, enveloping the entire mountain range and suppressing the tower's existence.

“It sure is problematic when I have to carry this tower with me. Sigh, if only the artifact spirit was here,” Jian Chen felt rather helpless as he stared at the tower. Although he had found a place to set down the tower, he needed to make the tower huge so that its large surface area could disperse its weight. That was the only way to ensure that the tower would not sink into the ground.

Chapter 1498: Fortune's Selection

Nubis, Bi Hai, Dugu Feng, You Yue, and Bi Lian all stood sternly before the Anatta Tower. The tower was currently damaged. Its main entrance had essentially caved in. It seemed like a ruined tower, but they could feel an invisible pressure from it as they stood there. They experienced intense emotions due to the feeling. They felt like tiny ants facing the vast heavens.

They were the tiny ants while the damaged tower was the vast heavens.

“Jian Chen, where’d you find this treasure? It’s clearly ruined, yet I still feel insignificant from the depths of my soul as I stand before it, and those slashes on the tower. Just a single glance makes me, the great Nubis, frightened. I’m a powerful Class 9 Magical Beast, equivalent to human Saint Emperors. I stand on the very apex in this world, yet just a glance frightens me. I can’t imagine just how extraordinary this tower is,” said Nubis. He glanced at the sword slashes on the tower from time to time with a stern expression.

Jian Chen raised his head and looked at the tower. He smiled, “This tower really is extraordinary. C’mon, let’s go inside. There’s a fortuitous encounter waiting inside Whether you can obtain it or not will be up to fate.” Jian Chen did not give an in-depth explanation regarding the tower. He did not even mention the name. It was not because he did not trust them but because the Anatta Tower was connected to the Anatta Grand Prime’s legacy. If this piece of news was exposed to the Saints’ World, they would suffer a disaster.

Even though the legacy of the Anatta Grand Prime could not be given to everyone, just the tower itself was enough to kick up a storm of blood in the Saints’ World.

After all, the tower was the famed treasure of the Anatta Grand

Prime. Jian Chen believed that it was no weaker than the Azulet swords when they were in their prime. Even peak Grand Primes would emerge to fight over such a powerful god artifact.

Jian Chen took everyone to the ninth floor. When they saw the grand, mountainous projection of the Heavenly Palace of Bisheng, they were all stunned. Not only was the palace far greater than any divine hall they had ever seen in their lives, but they sensed an indescribable feeling rolling off the palace as well.

This was a feeling created by the power of laws. The projection of the palace had also been imbued with laws.

“Hmm? This divine hall’s clearly illusory, but when I step on it, it’s no different than solid land. It’s the exact same feeling. This is not something that Saint Emperors can do. Only those who have surpassed Saint Emperor can achieve this.” Bi Hai sighed in surprise. He closely examined the palace and immediately felt shocked. He realized through his observations that even if he used his full strength, he might not even be able to destroy the projection. That was not all that he noticed either. Even the space in the damaged tower was countless times tougher than any space on the Tian Yuan Continent. Even if peak Saint Emperors struck out as hard as they could, they would not even be able to make the space around the palace ripple at all.

“This tower is very extraordinary. It’s crafted by a peak Origin realm expert at the very least, and looking at how realistic the projection of the palace is, not even peak Origin realm experts may necessarily possess the power to create something like this. It’s extremely likely to be the treasure of an expert beyond the Origin realm.” Bi Hai sighed in shock. However, he was also very curious as to where Jian Chen had found such a powerful tower.

The group of people passed through the illusory palace. Along the way, everyone aside from Jian Chen kept looking around, observing the landscape around the hall. The palace was illusory, meaning it was possible to see outside the palace, but that was only

a tiny portion of what they were looking at. Most of the palace was hazy, as if it had been enshrouded by mist. It was not completely transparent, but it was not enough to stop everyone's curiosity.

Finally, Jian Chen brought everyone before the Fortune Jade Seat. He pointed at the round piece of jade and said, "The fortuitous encounter I mentioned is this seat. Try sitting on it one after another to see if any of you are fated to obtain it."

Everyone examined the round piece of jade and all felt doubtful. Finally, Bi Lian voiced her doubts, "Just what kind of fortuitous encounter is this, brother? Why are you making it seem so mysterious?"

Jian Chen immediately became stern. He said in a serious voice, "Don't ask. It's best if you don't learn too much about this place. I know you would never purposefully mention it to others, but I'm afraid that there will be experts in the future who will be able to use various abilities to learn about this place from you. That will turn out to be a disaster for us all."

Every single one of them were shocked by Jian Chen's response. They all stared at Jian Chen in disbelief. They were stunned by what he said, but they also learned that this was quite a significant place.

After some discussion, they finally decided that Bi Yuntian would sit on the seat first. This was because only Bi Yuntian had that right out of all of them.

Bi Yuntian attempted to push this idea away, but she ended up agreeing due to no other choice. She was the first person to sit on the seat.

The moment Bi Yuntian sat on the jade seat, Jian Chen stared at her fixedly. He felt rather nervous and conflicted inside. He wished that she could obtain the Anatta Grand Prime's legacy and also wished the exact opposite at the same time.

He knew that once Bi Yuntian received the legacy, she would embark on a completely different path. She would definitely experience a lot of danger and slaughter. In other words, she would never be able to pass her days peacefully ever again. He wished that his mother could become powerful, able to live forever and have the ability to keep herself safe when she came across dangers, but he also wished that she could live her life easily, unwilling for her to go through a lot of killing.

Obtaining the legacy would mean that she would lose these peaceful days.

Chapter 1499: Fated to be with Nobody

A few seconds finally past while Jian Chen nervously watched. He sensed the familiar and powerful force surge out of the Fortune Jade Seat and push Bi Yuntian off.

Jian Chen obviously knew that Bi Yuntian was not fated to learn the Anatta Grand Prime's legacy after he was unable to accept it after his own attempts. As he sighed in relief, he also felt slightly depressed.

Bi Yuntian opened her eyes and immediately looked around after having been pushed off the Fortune Jade Seat. Her gaze was filled with caution, but when she discovered that there was no one else present apart from Jian Chen's group, she became surprised and was filled with doubt.

"Xiang'er, I think I just heard someone talk," Bi Yuntian said to Jian Chen.

Jian Chen smiled, "Mother, that was the voice of a peerless senior and was left behind several years ago. In reality, this senior has already been dead for many years, but before he passed away, he left behind his legacy in the Fortune Jade Seat. Those who are not fated to obtain it cannot gain it."

Bi Yuntian nodded. She then turned to Bi Hai, "Great-grandfather, you should try too to see if you can obtain this senior's legacy."

Bi Hai laughed and glanced at Bi Yuntian, Jian Chen, and Bi Lian tenderly. His gaze was filled with the affection of a senior to his juniors. He said, "How can I use up a chance at a peerless senior's legacy before you juniors? Great-grandson Jian Chen's talent is supreme, and he cultivates at a shocking speed. You've already become the greatest expert among the humans, so I think this legacy doesn't catch your eye. Lian'er, come. You try first to see if you're fated with this peerless senior."

“Great-grandfather, sister You Yue is brother’s fiancée. She should go first. If she doesn’t go, how can I go?” Bi Lian pouted and replied in dissatisfaction.

You Yue wore a white dress as she stood there with a straight back. She gently smiled, making her seem noble and graceful. She said with a gentle voice, “Sister Bi Lian, I practice the cultivation method of fairy Hao Yue. It may not necessarily be as great as this senior, but it’s still extraordinary. Only your cultivation method is rather ordinary, so why don’t you go first?”

“This...” Bi Lian hesitated. Inside, she hoped that You Yue could obtain the senior’s cultivation method instead. This was not only because of how close they were, but more importantly, You Yue was her brother’s fiancée and a chance at this legacy came from her brother. You Yue was obviously supposed to attempt to obtain the legacy before her.

When Jian Chen saw Bi Lian hesitate, he said “Lian’er, you go try. This senior’s legacy isn’t that easy to obtain. It doesn’t matter who goes first because it’s likely that no one here will obtain it.”

“Alright, I’ll go sit there since you’ve said so yourself.” Bi Lian smiled sweetly and sat on the Fortune Jade Seat.

A few seconds later, the powerful and gentle force appeared once again, pushing Bi Lian off.

Bi Lian opened her eyes and said with some helplessness, “Brother, I’m also not fated with that senior, but I just wonder whether this senior is a human or a beast, or feminine or masculine. Why does this senior’s voice sound so odd? It sounds like everything.”

“This is a voice that contains all the sounds of the world, so you’ll you’ll hear whatever you think it is,” Jian Chen explained with a smile. His gaze possessed some adoration.

Afterward, Bi Hai, Dugu Feng, and Nubis all sat on the Fortune

Jade Seat, but they suffered the same outcome as everyone else. None of them possessed the right to obtain the Anatta Grand Prime's legacy. In the end, Jian Chen got You Yue to try as well, but she failed to obtain the Anatta Grand Prime's recognition.

Even though Jian Chen had expected this long ago, he still found it difficult to not sigh when reality was placed before him.

“An eighty percent comprehension of laws is enough for you to become a Grand Prime, yet the Anatta Grand Prime has comprehended the Laws of Fire, Creation, and Destruction to a hundred percent. The sword spirits once said that the Anatta Grand Prime was so powerful that he ranked within the top three in the Saints' World. Only the greatest expert of the Saints' World, the Grand Prime of the warring gods, who even stood above the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt, could overpower the Anatta Grand Prime. The legacy of such an impressive expert obviously will not be easy to obtain. Perhaps only people fulfilling certain aspects can obtain it,” Jian Chen thought before bringing everyone outside the tower.

Jian Chen pressed his hand against the tower outside and used his mind to shrink it back into the size of a thumb, which then disappeared into his palm. He then turned to everyone and said, “You leave first. I have to go to Longevity Valley immediately. Little Fatty's father has passed away.”

“Jian Chen, let me come with you.” You Yue gently glanced at Jian Chen.

Jian Chen nodded. Inside, he always felt indebted to You Yue. There were many princesses of the Gesun Kingdom who had married and given birth long ago. Some of the princesses even had grandchildren. Only she was still engaged.

Nubis opened his mouth. He originally planned on going with Jian Chen, but after hearing what You Yue said, he immediately dismissed the thought. He sniggered, “Jian Chen, I'll go play

around with the two female servants I just accepted, so I'll be leaving first." With that, Nubis left.

Bi Lian, Dugu Feng, and Bi Hai all returned to Flame City after bidding farewell to Jian Chen. Bi Yuntian returned to the artifact space to cultivate. In the blink of an eye, only Jian Chen and You Yue were left at the bottom of the valley.

"Yue'er, let's go."

"Yes!"

A streak of violet light rushed into the sky from the bottom of the valley. It shot through the air like a bolt of lightning, disappearing into the horizon. It moved extremely quick.

Within the dazzling light was a twenty-meter-long sword. Jian Chen currently held You Yue by her thin waist, to stabilize her and prevent her from falling off.

The Zi Ying Sword flew very fast, causing the surrounding landscape to be reduced to a blur, impossible to see with the naked eye. However, even if the landscape was visible, You Yue would not have been interested in appreciating it. She currently stood with her eyes closed and a happy smile on her face, gently resting her head against Jian Chen's chest.

This was a time when only the two of them were present. These were the best and sweetest moments to You Yue. After over a decade of painful waiting, she had finally obtained a chance to be with Jian Chen.

Chapter 1500: Xiu Mi's Funeral

Jian Chen gently placed his arm around You Yue as he sniffed her faint body fragrance. He smoothly said, "It's been tough for you over the past few years, Yue'er. Do you blame me for making you wait so long?"

You Yue raised her head. Her limpid eyes looked at Jian Chen full of love and gentleness. She softly said, "Jian Chen, I've never blamed you because I know it's been very difficult for you too. You can even describe every single day after leaving Kargath Academy like that. You must have sacrificed a lot throughout all those years to attain what you have right now, which might have even come close to costing your life. I'm your fiancée, yet I can only watch you fight for your life without providing any assistance at all. Is there still anything for me to complain about?"

"Jian Chen, did you know that I've always taken pride in being able to become your wife since I'm your fiancée. You're extremely impressive and powerful. You possess unprecedented cultivation talent. Who knows how many beauties in the world would offer their hearts to you. I'm extremely glad that father proposed this marriage between the two of us."

You Yue looked at Jian Chen in a daze. Not only was her voice emotional, but it was extremely gentle as well. She then gently wrapped around Jian Chen with both her arms. She pressed her entire body against Jian Chen and said, "Jian Chen, do you still remember how you promised that you'd marry me? Have you ever forgotten about it?"

"Of course I remember. How could I forget that? It's just that I have other women aside from you, Yue'er," Jian Chen gently replied. He seemed to think of something and his feelings became mixed.

You Yue smiled gently, "Jian Chen, your father has four wives.

Do you know how many my father has?”

Jian Chen shook his head. Although he belonged to the Gesun Kingdom and was an Imperial Protector there, he did not know anything about the imperial family. He had no idea how many princesses or princes the kingdom had.

Seeing how unsure Jian Chen was, You Yue broke into a giggle. She made fun of him, “So much for being an Imperial Protector. You don’t even know this. Then let me tell you, my father has a total of twenty-eight consorts with my mother being one of them.” You Yue became gloomy as soon as she mentioned her own mother. She had passed away soon after You Yue was born. If not for pictures of her, You Yue would not have known what she looked like.

“Are there any authoritative men who don’t have many wives? You’re father’s like that and so is mine. On the other hand, you are more outstanding than both your own father and mine. Who knows how many women are willing to offer themselves to you. I came to an understanding long ago that you’re not someone a single woman can claim to herself, so I don’t mind how many women you take,” You Yue continued. She spoke very gently and with great consideration.

“What if I told you I already have a child?” Jian Chen said shamefully.

Even his parents did not know about Shangguan Aojian. You Yue was the first person he had told.

You Yue gently trembled. She stared at Jian Chen in shock and only responded with a rather trembling voice after a momentary pause, “Jian Chen, is that true?”

“It’s true. It’s been over a decade since I’ve seen him now. He should be all grown up.” Jian Chen gently sighed. He could not help but think of Shangguan Aojian on Three Saint Island and felt some more shame as well. This was because he knew he had not been a

good father. He rarely spent any time by Shangguang Aojian's side. He could probably count the number of days he had been with him on his fingers.

"I'll go to Three Saint Island after this and stay there until the World of Forsaken Saints decides to invade," Jian Chen thought. However, he planned on visiting the Huang family as well since Huang Luan was there.

"I may not know who she is, but I believe she's someone extraordinary. Jian Chen, if the chance arises, you have to go take me to see your child, okay?" You Yue said. Even though her gentle voice was very calm and composed, Jian Chen could still sense some sadness in it.

Jian Chen nodded. The two of them remained silent for the rest of the journey. Even though Longevity Valley was a million kilometers away from Flame City, he crossed this huge distance very quickly on the Zi Ying Sword.

Longevity Valley was located on the outskirts of the Cross Mountains. Jian Chen stopped close to the valley before making his way over with You Yue on foot.

Longevity Valley still seemed the same even after so many years without any changes whatsoever. Any weeds that grew were immediately removed by the villagers. The valley was usually filled with a calm peace calm, as if it was an otherworldly haven. However, the entire valley was covered by white cloth now. Every household had hung a piece of snow-white cloth on their house according to the local traditions. The bitter fragrance of white flowers was present as well. The entire valley had sunk deep into sorrow.

Jian Chen and You Yue entered the village. They found Little Fatty mourning his father in the center of the village. He knelt before a coffin and did not move at all, appearing like a statue. His mother sat on the ground with red, swollen eyes. Her face was

filled with sadness, and she was dejected, as if she had lost her soul all together.

Jian Chen stared at the coffin in grief. His feelings had also grown heavy when he entered the valley. He knew that the person lying in the coffin was uncle Xiu Mi, the person who had once saved his life. Since Xiu Mi had an incomplete soul, he could never break through to Saint Ruler and only possessed a lifespan of a thousand years. A thousand years had passed for him now, and he had reached the end of his life. He would still pass away even if he consumed many ten-thousand-year-old, hundred-thousand-year-old, or million-year-old heavenly resources.

These heavenly resources could completely change someone's constitution, allowing a cripple to become a genius in an extremely short amount of time. They could even revive people near death. As long as there was a heartbeat, then they could recover extremely quickly. However, no matter how amazing heavenly resources were, they could not give someone another soul.

Jian Chen had not come across a heavenly resource that could give a person a second soul in the Xuanhuang Microcosm.

Quite a few villagers in the surroundings recognized Jian Chen and all greeted him. Since Xiu Mi passed away recently, all the villagers were in horrible spirits. None of them wanted to talk much, so they all just looked at him and nodded to acknowledge his presence.

Jian Chen passed through the crowd and directly appeared before Xiu Mi's coffin. He stared at it silently for quite a while before giving it a deep bow.

He was filled with an indescribable bitterness. He was a Class 9 Radiant Saint Master. Not only could he revive Saint Weapons, but he could revive dead people as well, as long as their souls remained. Jian Chen could even revive fallen Saint Emperors, but he was unable to do anything about Xiu Mi's death.

Even with Jian Chen's abilities as a Class 9 Radiant Saint Master, he could not make up for the lacking aspects of Xiu Mi's soul. Jian Chen could not complete it for him.

Table of Contents

[Chaotic Sword God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1401: Another Saint Emperor](#)

[Chapter 1402: Founding Ancestor of the Pure Heart Pavilion \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1403: Founding Ancestor of the Pure Heart Pavilion \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1404: Meeting Qing Xiao Again](#)

[Chapter 1405: Returning to the Qinhuang Kingdom](#)

[Chapter 1406: The Fourth Class 9 Magical Beast](#)

[Chapter 1407: Shangguan Aojian's Transformation \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1408: Shangguan Aojian's Transformation \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1409: Shangguan Aojian's Transformation \(Three\)](#)

[Chapter 1410: Shangguan Aojian's Transformation \(Four\)](#)

[Chapter 1411: Nubis' Scheme](#)

[Chapter 1412: Cloud-scattering City](#)

[Chapter 1413: The Fall of a City](#)

[Chapter 1414: Luring the Snake out of its Hole](#)

[Chapter 1415: The Old Snake Appears](#)

[Chapter 1416: You're Actually Class 9!](#)

[Chapter 1417: Devastation](#)

[Chapter 1418: The Submission of Class 8 Magical Beasts](#)

[Chapter 1419: A Confident Nubis](#)

[Chapter 1420: The Heavenly Enchantress' Strength](#)

[Chapter 1421: Visiting the Beast God Hall](#)

[Chapter 1422: Legacy of the Beast God \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1423: Legacy of the Beast God \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1424: Legacy of the Beast God \(Three\)](#)

[Chapter 1425: Legacy of the Beast God \(Four\)](#)

[Chapter 1426: Sacredfeathered Tiger Emperors](#)

[Chapter 1427: Done For](#)

[Chapter 1428: Visiting the Arctic Again](#)

[Chapter 1429: Ten-thousand-year Icesouls \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1430: Ten-thousand-year Icesouls \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1431: Ten-thousand-year Icesouls \(Three\)](#)

[Chapter 1432: The Fifth Layer of the Chaotic Body \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1433: The Fifth Layer of the Chaotic Body \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1434: The Truth Behind the Seal](#)
[Chapter 1435: Acquaintances of the Past](#)
[Chapter 1436: Powering Up Together \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1437: Powering Up Together \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1438: Severance of Emotions and Desires](#)
[Chapter 1439: Paving a Path with Hatred](#)
[Chapter 1440: A Severed Path](#)
[Chapter 1441: End of a Grand Gathering](#)
[Chapter 1442: The Heavenly Enchantress' Father](#)
[Chapter 1443: Visiting the Hundred Races](#)
[Chapter 1444: Soul-offering Ceremony](#)
[Chapter 1445: The Elven Godtree](#)
[Chapter 1446: The Elven Godking](#)
[Chapter 1447: Experts of the Godking's Throne](#)
[Chapter 1448: Changes to the Saint Artifact](#)
[Chapter 1449: Collecting the Beast Furs](#)
[Chapter 1450: Settling Down Magical Beasts](#)
[Chapter 1451: The Seal Breaks \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1452: The Seal Breaks \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1453: Class 8 Radiant Saint Master \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1454: Class 8 Radiant Saint Master \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1455: Fortuitous Encounter to Class 9](#)
[Chapter 1456: Seven Colors of the Soulcore \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1457: Seven Colors of the Soulcore \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1458: Seven Colors of the Soulcore \(Three\)](#)
[Chapter 1459: Revival through Saint Weapons \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1460: Revival through the Saint Weapons \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1461: Class 9 Radiant Saint Master \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1462: Class 9 Radiant Saint Master \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1463: Class 9 Radiant Saint Master \(Three\)](#)
[Chapter 1464: Martial Soul Force \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1465: Martial Soul Force \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1466: Sparring with Fairy Hao Yue](#)
[Chapter 1467: Changes to the Tunnel](#)
[Chapter 1468: Battle Among the Origin realm \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1469: Battle Among the Origin realm \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1470: Battle in the Tunnel](#)
[Chapter 1471: Slaying a Reival Expert \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1472: Slaying a Receival Expert \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1473: Saving Xiao Ling](#)
[Chapter 1474: Medium Quality Immortal Artifact](#)
[Chapter 1475: Returning to the Sea Realm](#)
[Chapter 1476: Into the Sea of Despair](#)
[Chapter 1477: Through the Mist](#)
[Chapter 1478: Into the Anatta Tower](#)
[Chapter 1479: The World Within the Tower](#)
[Chapter 1480: Spirit of the Anatta Tower](#)
[Chapter 1481: Nine Fragments of the Artifact Spirit](#)
[Chapter 1482: The Tower Spirit's Shock](#)
[Chapter 1483: Slaying the Artifact Spirit of the Second Floor](#)
[Chapter 1484: Intelligent Sword Qi](#)
[Chapter 1485: Reciprocity Sword Qi](#)
[Chapter 1486: Through to the Eighth Floor](#)
[Chapter 1487: The Ninth Floor](#)
[Chapter 1488: Scheme](#)
[Chapter 1489: Immortal Emperor's Essence Blood](#)
[Chapter 1490: Refining the Anatta Tower](#)
[Chapter 1491: The Anatta Grand Prime](#)
[Chapter 1492: A Grand Prime's Legacy](#)
[Chapter 1493: The Fortune Jade Seat](#)
[Chapter 1494: Leaving the Sea of Despair](#)
[Chapter 1495: Secret of the Saint Weapons](#)
[Chapter 1496: A Young Death in Longevity Valley](#)
[Chapter 1497: A Heavy Tower](#)
[Chapter 1498: Fortune's Selection](#)
[Chapter 1499: Fated to be with Nobody](#)
[Chapter 1500: Xiu Mi's Funeral](#)